



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

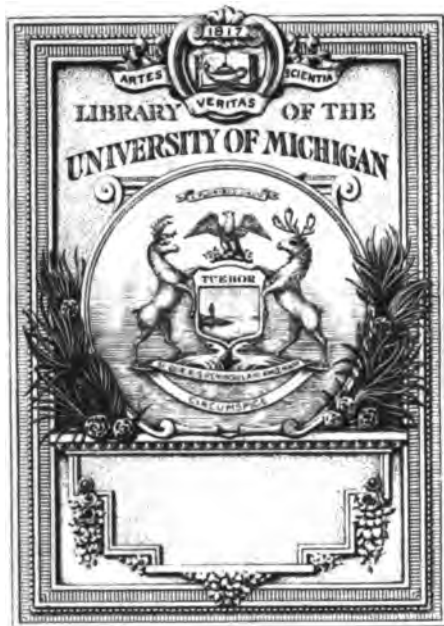
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

B 1,199,471



DA  
670  
.E7  
A1  
E7



THE  
ESSEX REVIEW:

AN ILLUSTRATED QUARTERLY RECORD  
OF EVERYTHING OF PERMANENT INTEREST  
IN THE COUNTY.

EDITED BY  
EDWARD A. FITCH, F.L.S.,  
AND  
MISS C. FELL SMITH.

VOLUME XVI.



*"He who recalls into existence that which has vanished enjoys a bliss like  
that of creating."—NIEBUHR.*

COLCHESTER:  
BENHAM & CO.

LONDON:  
SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, HAMILTON, KENT & Co., LTD.

1907.

100

Camp 105  
Chen  
1-20-48  
51723

# INDEX TO VOLUME XVI.

\* \* *Entries in Italics refer to Notices of Books.*

Alchemy in Essex, by R. C. Fowler, 158  
Banes, Major G. E., death, 200  
Banking in Essex, 48  
Bernard, Arthur T., *Camping-out in Epping Forest*, 62  
Barrett Lennard, T., note by, 96  
Basildon Church, 197  
Beeleigh Abbey, Buried Treasure at, by Rev. A. Clark, 68  
Benham, W. G., *Book of Quotations*, by, 106  
Bocking, 140  
Books, etc. Received—*From Midshipman to Field Marshal*, by Sir Evelyn Wood, 41; *The Great Revolt of 1381*, by Charles Oman, M. A., 44; *Braintree and Hocking*, by May Cunnington and S. A. Warner, 51; *Straw Plaiting, a lost Essex Industry*, by I. Chalkley Gould, 55; *Rodleian Guide*, by Rev. A. Clark, LL.D., 56; *Victoria History of Essex*, vol. ii., 101; *Book of Quotations*, by W. Gurney Benham, 106; *Modern Side Saddle Riding*, by Eva Christy, 162; *Harlow Fire Brigade*, 210; *Tritton, the Place and the Family*, by J. H. Tritton, 212  
Bradwell-on-Sea, 197  
*Braintree and Hocking*, by May Cunnington and Stephen A. Warner, 51; Grocers' Company at, 76; New Secondary School, 151  
Branfill, Major-Gen. B. R., 36  
Broomfield, Charles the First's Bible at, by Miss R. Christy, 89  
Browne, R. H., notes by, 204  
Brunwin Memorial Chapel, 94  
Buckhurst Hill, Church, 196  
Bury St. Edmund's Folk Play, 142  
By-gone Essex, More Recollections of, by Henry Laver, 1  
By the Riverside, by A. W. Dell, 31  
Chelmsford, St. Mary's Church, 35; Chelmsford Races, 1810, 96; New Girls' School, 150  
Christy, Eva, *Modern Side-Saddle Riding*, by, 162  
Christy, Miller, Ship-building in Essex, by, 23; On Banking in Essex, 48; Great Vine of Valentines, 133; Founding of an Essex Windmill, 179; Notes by, 37, 207  
Christy, Miss Richenda, Charles the First's Bible at Broomfield, by, 89  
Clacton, new church, 197  
Clark, Rev. Andrew, LL.D., *Rodleian Guide*, by 56. Buried Treasure at Beeleigh Abbey, 68; Early Essex Wykehamists by, 173; Maldon Civil Courts, by, 126; Witchcraft in Essex, 161; *Shirburn Ballads*, ed. by, 164; Shipbuilding in Essex, 203; Notes by, 98, 99, 204  
Colchester, Bishop of, 153  
Colchester, Claims to be the Cathedral City, 56

Collar of SS., 159  
Cook, Robert, Essex County Cricket in 1907, by, 182  
Corn Milling in Essex, History of, by Wilson Marriage, and Miss C. Fell Smith, 184  
Cox, Rev. J. C., death, 93  
Cricket in 1907, Essex County, by Robert Cook, 182  
Crickett, Menish and Crickitt, banking firm of, 49  
Cripps, A. S., 'The Nine Villages,' by, 5; 'The Voice from the Night,' 121  
Cunnington, May, *Braintree and Hocking*, illustrated, by, 51  
Danbury Church, 35  
Deards, S., *Harlow Fire Brigade*, by, 210  
Dedham Church, 94  
Dell, Anthony W., *By the Riverside*, 31  
Emigration to New England, 98  
Epping Forest, Camping-out in, 62; Earl Path, 38  
Essex, History of Shipbuilding in, by Miller Christy, 23  
Essex, Mayors, 34, High Sheriff, 34  
Essex Dialect Words, 40; Grocers' Company, in connection with, 71; Gt. Storm in, 96; Legends of, 142; Sea Walls, 146; Agricultural Show, 152; County Cricket, 1907, 182; Shipbuilding in, 23, 203; *Victoria History of*, vol. II., 101; Legends of, 139; Witchcraft in, 161; Windmill, 179; Corn-milling in, 184  
Essex, Water Supply of, by Dr. J. C. Thresh, 57  
Essex Wykehamists, Early, by Rev. A. Clark, 73  
Falkner, Rev. R. H., death, 93  
Flatford Bridge, 93  
Forster, Rev. Benjamin, and his account of Roman Roads in N. Essex; by Joseph J. Green, 165  
Founding of an Essex Windmill, by Miller Christy, 179  
Fowler, R. C., notes by, 158, 159  
Franklin, Thomas, death, 157  
Gepp, Rev. Edward, note by, 40  
Gosfield Hall, Louis XVIII. at, 19; Codham Hall, 162  
Gould, I. Chalkley, on Straw-plaiting in Essex, 55  
Gower, Rev. Dr. Foote, 172  
Great Thunderstorm and Rainfall of Oct. 22nd, 1859, 96  
Great Waltham Mills, 189  
Green, Joseph J., Rev. Benjamin Forster and his account of Roman Roads in North Essex and Saffron Walden, 165  
Green, Lieut.-Colonel R. S., death, 156  
Grocers' Company in connection with Essex, The, by Stephen A. Warner, 71  
Harlow Church, 196; Fire Brigade, 210  
Hempe Rhyme, the, 99



- Inventories of Goods, 205  
 Ilford, The Great Vine of Valentines, 133
- Kelvedon Parish Room, 34  
 Kelway, A Clifton, Kynochtown, a Great Explosives Factory on the Essex Marshes, by, 112  
 Kynochtown, a Great Explosives Factory on the Essex Marshes, by A. Clifton Kelway, 112
- Laver, Doctor Henry, More Recollections of Bygone Essex, by, 1; Great Thunderstorm and Rainfall of October, 1859, 97; Nesting of the Raven in Essex, by, 109  
 Legends of Essex, Sir Richard de Bovingdon and Fair Eva, by, A. R. Vaizey, 139  
 Leyton, new church, 197  
 Little Bardfield Church, 95  
 Loughton Church, 35  
 Louis XVIII, at Gosfield Hall, 19
- Maldon Civil Courts, 1402, by Andrew Clark, LL.D., 126; Borough Records, 164  
 Marriage, Lawrence, death, 157  
 Marriage, Wilson, and Miss C. Fell Smith, History of Corn Milling in Essex, 184  
 Mersea Island, 204  
 Moore, Rev. J. J. S., LL.D., death, 36  
 Musselwhite, Rev. E., death, 36
- Nesting of the Raven in Essex, by Dr. H. Laver, 109  
 Nevendon, Church, 36  
 Nine Villages, The, by A. S. Cripps, 5  
 North Ockendon, 95
- Otes as a Place-name, 37  
 Oatmeal Making, 204
- Pattens, 159  
 Poor Clares at Gosfield, 20
- Rayne, Brunwin Memorial Chapel, 94  
 Red Hills Exploration, 36  
 Rodings (Roothings), The, see Nine Villages  
 Royal Gunpowder Factory, Waltham Abbey, 207  
 Saffron Walden, 165  
 St. Albans, Bishop of, visitation, 153  
 Schools in Essex, History of, 105; Erection of new, 150, 151  
 Sea-Walls of Essex 146  
 Shenstone, J. C., A Yeoman's Commonplace Book at the commencement of the Nineteenth Century, by, 78,  
 Ship-building in Essex, by Miller Christy, 83; Note on, 203  
 Smith, Miss C. Fell, Notes by, 100, 204; History of Corn Milling in Essex, by, 184  
 Sperling, C. F. D., 160  
 Straw plaiting, A Lost Essex Industry, by I. Chalkley Gould, 55
- Tasker, George E., Sea-Walls of Essex, by, 146  
 Thresh, Dr. J. C., Water Supply of Essex, by, 57  
 Tritton, J. Herbert, *Tritton, the Place and the Family*, by, 212  
 Tritton, *the Place and the Family*, by J. Herbert Tritton, 212  
 Twinstead, 33
- Upminster Church, 36
- Vaizey, Arthur R., Legends of Essex, by, 142  
 Valentines, Ilford, The Great Vine of, by Miller Christy, 133  
 Voice from the Night, The, by A. S. Cripps, 121
- Wanstead, Lake House, by A. P. Wire, 176, New Lake at, 196  
 Waltham Abbey, Royal Gunpowder Factory, 207; Church, 208  
 Walthamstow Church, 95  
 Ward, Alexander, death, 156  
 Warner, Stephen A., *Braintree and Bocking*, by, 51; The Grocers' Company in connection with Essex, 71  
 Water Supply of the County of Essex, by Dr. J. C. Thresh, 57  
 Westerns of Rivenhall, 103  
 Wethersfield Congregational Church, bi-centenary, 198  
 White Notley Mill, 187  
 White Roothing, Old School at, 77  
 Willow Trees in Essex, 207  
 Winstone, Dr. Benjamin, death, 155  
 Wire, A. P., Lake House, Wanstead Flats, by, 176; Autobiographical Notes, 212  
 Witchcraft in Essex, 161  
 Witham Station, 38  
 Wood, Sir Evelyn, V.C., G.C.B., etc., *From Midshipman to Field Marshal*, by, 41  
 Writtle Church, 198
- Yeoman's Commonplace-book in the 19th Century, by J. C. Shenstone, 78; Note on, 202





GOSFIELD CHURCH.

THE  
ESSEX REVIEW:

A Quarterly Journal for the County.

---

---

No. 61.]

JANUARY, 1907.

VOL. XVI.

---

---

MORE RECOLLECTIONS OF  
BY-GONE ESSEX.

BY HENRY LAVER.

IN a former number of the *Essex Review* (vol. xi., p. 163) I was allowed to include some rambling stories from my Note-books; the same friends who then pleaded for their publication are again to be held responsible for another instalment, which I hope may prove no less palatable to readers of the magazine. If anyone sees no interest in such scraps of old country lore, it is easy to pass them over.

We are all tea-drinkers now-a-days, and the custom of having an afternoon cup of the refreshing beverage has become so universal that even the busy farmers from the outlying villages spare a few minutes from their bargaining on market days to seek this simple and stimulating refreshment in a friendly shop or café. But 130 years ago and more the fragrant leaf was an unknown thing in ordinary life.

My grandfather, John Laver, who lived at Latchingdon, in the house afterwards occupied by Mr. Charles Pulley, had married somewhere about the year 1770, or earlier, a Miss Rush, of Tile Hall, in the same parish. From one of his visits to London during his early married life, he returned with a surprise present for his wife in the shape of a pound of tea, for which I have always understood he paid more than a guinea. His gift also included the necessary equipment for brewing and consuming the tea, namely, a set of cups and saucers, a teapot, and tea kettle; nor did he forget to add a tea-caddy in which to store the costly herb. These, I am told, were the first tea-things that my grandparents possessed. The kettle I have often seen; it

was very similar to those still in use in China, and possessed a handle jointed in every part to fall over sideways. Near the gate to his house was the groom's cottage. On one occasion, when his wife was about to give birth to a child, my grandmother, as in duty bound, went over to see if she could be of any assistance. When all was safely over she told the women she would like to treat them each to a cup of tea—the new cordial of which they had heard, but had never seen or tasted. Sending the man to the house to bring her tea-things and the kettle, the gossips began to arrange the table for their unlooked-for treat. The groom was ordered to fill the kettle from the water butt, there being no well upon the farm, which was situated almost entirely upon a belt of London clay. He was gone so long in search of the water that one of the women was despatched to look for him. She found him slowly trying to fill the kettle by the spout from a jug. Never had he beheld such 'a queer pot' before, nor had he the slightest notion that the lid was removable. This was certainly the first time that tea was used in Latchingdon parish, or indeed anywhere near it, as I have often heard my uncles say. But it became generally, if sparingly, used within a few decades, and thereafter 'the tea-pond' became an institution at many of the houses. Artesian wells were of later construction, but one pond, carefully protected from pollution, was held sacred to domestic purposes, and at my grandfather's, and at Steeple Gate Farm in the same parish, was always known as the 'tea-pond.'

On the south side of Dedham churchyard, and near the church, is a boulder stone, such as is frequently found in the Essex boulder clay, which has been set up as a tombstone in memory of 'Edw'rd Ward and Martha his wife,' but without any date. Upon enquiring, many years ago, of Mr. Gosling, then master of the Stanway Union House, who is a native of Dedham, and well acquainted with the traditional history of his birth-place, whether he could give me any information about it, I received the following explanation: Edward Ward was a ploughman, employed upon one of the farms in the parish, who one day, while following at the tail of his plough across a fallow field, heard the sharp ring of the share against a mighty stone. His curiosity was excited, and bringing his horses to a standstill, he uncovered the big boulder and, I suppose, removed it to

the side of the field. Subsequently he obtained possession of it, the fancy having seized him to have it for his tombstone when he should have 'gone the way of all flesh.' Injunctions were left with his relatives to set it up, and they must be blamed for having no date inscribed upon it. To what prehistoric period it belongs I can only conjecture, and, after all, what does a few years count with such a hoary monument? It will long outlast most of the others in the churchyard, and even the name of Edward Ward himself.

It is a frequent complaint now that people do not keep on the land, but will crowd into towns. The cry of 'back to the land' is one that we hear re-echoed *ad nauseam*. It is right and true enough, but the reason is to be found in the decadence of country industries. In years gone by much of the manufacturing work now carried on in towns was spread over the country parishes, and resulted in a manifest advantage to the populace, looked at from whatever side you will. Economically, there may be advantages in concentration; goods may be produced more cheaply, but cheapness is not everything, and physically the advantages on the other side entirely counterbalance whatever may be gained by cheapness. Unquestionably the removal of all work, and with it the population, into large centres is having a most disastrous effect upon the race, as may be expected from the removal of people from the fresh air and healthy surroundings enjoyed in the country to the crowded streets and courts and the vitiated air of cities, with all the physical and moral abominations there generated.

The tanner's trade is a striking instance of this. At one time almost every large village in the county had its tanyard. At Stisted, near Braintree, I am told, the name still attaches to a building and a field, and 'Robert Hensman, tanner of this parish, died 1782,' lies buried under a headstone in the churchyard. At Layer-de-la-Haye, a field lying between Mr. Baker's old thatched houses and a small brook to the west is still known as 'the tanyard.' In digging into several parts of it bricks and other remains of buildings have been found, which are indications of the tan office, sheds and outhouses.

I can call others to mind, but nearly all have now disappeared. The only tannery left in the neighbourhood is at Halstead, and a woodman told a friend of mine lately that on the large estate

where he is employed, no more bark was to be stripped from the young oaks felled in the spring, it no longer paid to carry it so far, to dispose of it for a mere song. It seems that its use is now largely superseded by some modern chemical product more advantageous and speedy in its effect upon the hides. Spread about as they were, the country tanyards were no nuisance to the neighbourhood, the abundance of fresh air to which they were exposed, diluted and made innocuous any effluvia the skins might give off, and the physical health of the workers did not suffer. Can the same be said of the dwellers in Bermondsey, where raw hides render the air of the whole district almost unfit for healthy folk to dwell in ?

I may wind up these lucubrations with some glimpses of the old Lexden Road, Colchester, as it was in 1857. There were very few houses on the south side after passing Maldon Road. The first was situated just at the corner and was then inhabited by Mr. Hobbs. Nearly adjoining it was an old house where lived Mr. Fox, the sole relieving officer then employed by Colchester Union. Next to this was a garden wall, built of small bricks and wearing an appearance of great antiquity. It was the north wall of a large garden which occupied the triangle formed by Lexden Road, Maldon Road, and the present Hospital Road (then a footpath), except that before you came to the footpath there was a coach-builder's house and shop occupied by Mr. Lee, and three small cottages and a farm-yard, still standing. The next house was the Hospital, beyond this a field, and then the Royal Grammar School in its new buildings. Beverley Lodge, a school carried on by Mr. Abbot, a Quaker, for dissenters' sons, with grounds extending to the road, was situated next to the Grammar School. On the other side was a large garden, surrounded by a belt of trees, which had formed part of the Beverley Lodge Estate ; through this the Beverley Road was cut a few years later. West Lodge, the residence of Mr. John Tayler, adjoined, a part having been already sold, and West Terrace and The Avenue being then in construction. The existing house in Mr. Bunting's garden stood next, and beyond was St. Mary's Lodge, the last house. On the north side there has been no alteration until the most westerly house in St. Mary's Terrace is passed. Here stood the last gas lamp. The building of houses on

Lord's Land, the formation of a road, a street leading to Sussex Mews, and of Morant Terrace on the site of an old malting formerly held by Bartholomew Brown, as well as other building, has greatly changed the character of these outskirts of Colchester. Where the suburban villas now stand it used to be no uncommon event to put up hares and other game in the open land on this side of the town, which was all carefully preserved. Hares were as common as could be, and at night time I often followed one loping down Lexden Road, saw her twist through St. John Street or Head Street and make for North Hill. One night I was talking to a policeman just at the corner of Maldon Road, when, in the bright moonlight, we both espied a brace of hares coming along, very leisurely, close together. He hid behind a gate-post ; I drew round the corner. As they trotted past the end of the road he made a skilful throw with his staff at the near-side one, and, behold, poor pussy lay motionless in the road. His comrade ran with her best speed down Head Street, sped down the hill and was seen going over North Bridge in a terrible scare. Needless to say, I was only too glad to carry the prize home with me to await the impromptu sportsman's coming for it when off duty next morning. I was then living in the house nearly opposite Hospital Road, where I kept a greyhound or two, and very frequently we caught a hare early in the morning in the large garden adjoining the Hospital. My brother-in-law and I often used to kill rabbits, too, in these gardens. Once I put up six from among the shrubs in the Grammar School garden.

Such a thing would make the scholars stare now-a-days.

---

## THE NINE VILLAGES.

BY A. S. CRIPPS.

**I**N front of him lay the miry Essex lanes and the dull Essex villages, in the raw half-fledged spring that had so few leaves as yet. Behind him lay a winter of years spent with the Dominicans in Flanders and Italy ; the black of his Order was its prevailing colour, yet there had been relief ever and again, in snowy woods, under purple hills, by hearths and at shrines. Behind that again lay his summer-time of Oxford, when his friend



was by, his friend with King Edmund's own beautiful face, but a better heart. Then the sun had seemed to shine most days, and the bells to ring most mornings. To how ripe a harvest had youth come in the year that he went to the wars, and his hero and friend went with him.

It was now in the year 1470 that Leonard set forth with his fellow Robert out of the Black Friars' house in London on a mission into Essex.

They came over the bridge at Stratford, where the Lea bounds the forest lands, on a rough forenoon in March. That night they lay at Greenstead, near Ongar. Before the sunset the wind dropped, and the night came very mild and peaceful. At morn there was a mass said in the chapel whose timbers men hewed with axes long ago to roof the body of Saint Edmund. He was to be the especial saint of their Essex Mission, being Eastland born and in Eastland martyred. They were neither of them men of the East Country, nor indeed had they ever travelled far in it, so they were fain to trust themselves to a native saint. The chapel burned that morning with many candles, for there were half a score of pilgrims going down the road to Saint Edmund's Bury, while a dozen merchants were passing north from Chipping Ongar to East Cheap, with intent to brave the manifold wiles of London.

Both parties had recourse to the same sooth-fast saint, whose head the wolf of old days feared to make free with, and loved to guard. He had been a wonder-worker assuredly more than a hundred years already, when he had rested on his journey in this torch-lighted shrine. Now, hundreds of years had swelled his honour and his clients; his fame, that had been a brook, had become a river, and now, like Roothing River in Barking Creek, was become itself a sea.

When our black friars came through Ongar the sun was up quite high, and the air very warm and zealous in the cause of spring. They were come to the verge of that country whereto their mission lay. The river valley stretched before them, much dull water therein, and many leafless willows. On one bank or other were the nine villages they sought to befriend.

Was the river called from Holy Rood, and was every village on those upper reaches a pilgrim's stage in some time-worn Way of the Cross? I cannot say very exactly. At the time I

tell of the river carried its name that hinted at benedictions, and nine villages carried each a share of that name.

Said Leonard, 'The roads to these people are worse than they told us; therefore the manners of the people should be so much the better than they were reputed.'

They had come to Birds' Green by then, and noted a few ewes and lambs and goslings and geese there. 'After all, Lent will not last for ever,' he went on, 'we may come in for a share of lambs at Easter, and we shall scarce miss a stubble-geese ere we go hence, and meanwhile there's a river to fish in not so far away.'

Robert did not answer for a time, for he was busy at thought. Both of them had pleasant faces, but Robert had the better of their colours of hair, since his was a barley-yellow.

'Twill be well enough preaching in this country-side,' he said, but he was not thinking of flesh or fowl. The nine villages were to him nine Angel-warded Churches of Essex, and he was puzzling over possible Apocalyptic messages to each of them.

He was delighted with this quaint fashion of a name common to all alike, adorned by each sister with her own superscription. Leonard, too, was thinking in his heart of other things than goose-flesh or mutton. He was back again in those wild three weeks of fighting on the Hereford march with his Oxford friend and hero. How he had looked up to him, who was so adroit, while he was so clumsy; whose hair was red-bronze, while his own was mud-colour; who never seemed to despise but only to excel, who seemed as a friend to befriend, yet living all the while to be befriended. He was rumoured dead, ten years this month, at Towton. Bad news had said so, and no good news had ever gainsaid. He had hunted, and hawked, and fought, and heard Mass long ago in the Roothings. His name was George Easter, and his home had been at Good Easter, not seven miles away. How many tales he had told Leonard of all nine Roothings in that low-roofed Oxford cottage, or by those roaring road-side camp-fires. This brown, plain country then, of the head-waters of Roothing River, was to one of the strangers a land of marvel long before he came to it.

It was after they had stayed about two weeks at Beauchamp Roothing, preaching and shriving, that the first of many strange adventures befell.

The people of these parts had been feared by them too often as dull and barbarous, heavy drinkers and churlish to a priest. Yet how little should they have feared! The folk seemed in some sort to rouse with spring that year, and to be glad and sorry indeed with the messages God had sent them. The little bull-neck of a church held many worshippers every morning, and on the green, of fine evenings, a concourse would gather from the few poor houses. But the priest, who was a grim-faced man, had a complaint to cherish.

‘The best of my herd is gone with your coming,’ he said.

‘And who is he?’ asked Robert.

‘It is George Parris, who farms three fields under the Church. Whether he bought them out of the manor these eight years gone, or was given them in requital for service, I know not. He farms them well and yet heareth Mass every morning, but now that ye are come he has gone away.’

They went down to his byre that morning and found the cowman that served him at work. His master, he said, had gone to London and he knew not when he would return. He had an orchard and a water-meadow by Roothing, and a wide tilth full of green barley. The red tiles on his house were newly set, and the lintels newly carved; the rose trees told of prosperous years, being so well stablished and trained.

In the morning starlight that came before the next day, the cowman came and knocked at the chamber over the malt-house where the Dominicans slept. He besought Leonard to come without fail to a chapel on the outskirts of Hatfield Forest, three good miles away. So he went, and had not returned when the church bell rang at the dawn’s coming. Amid the dripping boughs and grass he had followed his guide on and on a good half-hour from the high road. He came to a little church very deep in the wood. This was Morrell Roothing, though he did not know it till afterwards. In the lyke-way that was shaggy with yews and little cypresses, there was one to greet him. His face was hooded blankly, and he spoke in strange even tones as if he were repeating a lesson recollectedly in fear to betray himself. ‘On this Lady Day,’ he said, ‘we would have our Mass of the Red Rose, and there are that will pay you well to say it. Only be speedy and silent, as well as devout, for we must be out of the church and not a trace left ere the dawn nigheth.’

‘Wherefore did ye call for me?’

‘We lack a priest this long time while that the White Rose is in blossom.’

‘But is it treason?’ asked the black friar doubtfully. ‘Ye yourself have worn the red rose in old days. Will ye risk nought for them that wear it to-day?’ ‘I must remember Saint Dominic, my master.’ ‘If Franciscans died for the White Rose in its winter, may not Dominicans pity the Red Rose a little in like evil case?’

Leonard would do their will, he said, but he marvelled not a little how they knew that he had once worn Red Roses.

In an hour the Mass was over. There had been at least thirty kneeling in the church. It was too dark to see much of them, a hood screened every face, but on each doublet a brodered rose of deep colour looked defiance. As the priest was vesting himself in the candle-light with the crimson wear from the Altar, the same even-toned voice called for prayer ‘for our natural lord Harry the Sixt, to whom might all his liegemen in nine Roothings be faithful. Nine Orders to serve Our Lord of Heaven, nine parishes to contend for our lord of English earth!’ The Virgin’s Introit was sung very softly; when the great Offering came the bell sounded very low, the whole rite went as it were on hushed wings. It was, indeed, a gentle and gracious Mass for Our Lady’s Day.

As the bell began to ring in Beauchamp’s dwarfish tower, but few minutes before sunrise, Leonard was coming out of the wood on to the high road. There were few men gathered, he noted, when he stole into Robert’s Mass. His old loyalty had brooded over him on his way home. He remembered those days at Oxford before he went to the Wars, he remembered the first Red Rose he ever wore, he remembered also who had taught him to wear it. His blood stirred with high tide of spring. He marvelled, not without devotion or resignation, as to what was coming.

He wondered often that night, as he preached on the green, which of those eager faces had been under hoods at his Mass that morning. When he met the priest of Morrell two days after he was more than a little sheep-faced. Did that other guess how he had used his church by stealth? He said nothing by way of rebuke, anyway. It was not past believing that, if he

knew, he was well content to let a church for the Mass he wanted heart to say.

## II.

George Parris did not come back to his copyhold until the Dominicans had gone on to Abbess Roothing. Where he had been all those two weeks I cannot say. He had certainly been in London, for he had sent a message to one to come up to him thither, and he brought letters and other gear thence when he came. It was when he was back that the affair of the King's carts happened. Edward was travelling on the road to Bedford, and some of his purveyors swooped down upon the Roothings for men's and beasts' provender. Only last year the same gentry had seized some carts for transport, that they had never paid for to this day. So there was cause, if no excuse, for evil feeling. It grew to a fight in White Roothing, and one of the King's men was left for dead, while in the church he that had broken his head, being hard pressed, sought sanctuary. Three fellows with the King's badges installed themselves in the church porch. They would wait and see that this felon did not escape them.

Leonard walked up from Abbess that same afternoon to see the hurt man. At the cottage where he lay the people were surly, they seemed to care nought whether the stranger lived or died. Leonard preached Christian works to them, with little avail, yet he saw the wounds washed before he left for his sunset preaching. When he came back there was a hooded figure, his hood eyeletted, that sat beside the pillow. The stranger was applying some herbs. He was very busy for an hour or more with strong and soft hands. Leonard was curious to be told who he was, but he would say little or nothing that night. Then he went off in the dark.

Leonard went his own way when he had ended the night-prayers by the bed.

It was very black as he went, and he was by no means sure of his road.

Suddenly the church tower loomed up before him. There was a fire within the porch, and he remembered the story of the man in sanctuary. He drew near and looked over the wall. One man was sitting alert, another was nodding by the fire, another was fast asleep. Of a sudden a dark figure came from the east of the church, stealing velvet-footed in the firelight.

Leonard stared aghast, for the figure crouched as for a spring. With a shout, he has sprung. Both of the wakeful men were pinned one by each hand of this hooded hero. There was a scramble and answering shout within the church, a fugitive came through the porch and tore down the lyke-way. He was in such panic fear that he never stopped to help his deliverer.

Yet he, as it proved, could help himself. He broke away from those three that grappled with him in the firelight, and raced round the church with all three behind. He was leading by a good six yards as he came round it into sight once more, and down the lyke-way. All four came rushing through the gate, almost knocking the breath out of the Dominican's body. One caught hold of Leonard, then another. He protested his peacefulness. In the black confusion the rescuer was gone. After a few words, hard and soft, the matter was settled for that night. In the morning there was little more to settle. Healing simples had been at work on the sufferer's head and a soft tongue on the villagers. They were tractable, and the King got his own for this year, on payment of their own for last. The whole quarrel burnt itself out like a rick-fire on a pouring night.

Leonard asked the anchoress, at her window under the shingled spire of Abbess, who had worked such sudden peace. 'Our Lord,' she said. 'But by whom?' he questioned. She was rather mysterious as to who it was. 'There is a man that lives by the river,' she said; 'he is simple and not gentle, but a man of power notwithstanding.' 'What is his name?' Leonard asked. 'He has two or three names, if not four,' she said, but she laughed, and would not tell him any of them. 'I will tell you one thing of him,' she said. 'Many men come to my anchorage window, and a few are cruel with harsh words, and many flatter and so are crueller still, surely, if our way of life means aught. This man cometh here often, and is right courteous, but he doth not flatter me. Ah, no! He doth not flatter me,' and she laughed to herself, thinking of something he had said that she remembered.

### III.

The weeks flew fast at Abbess Roothing and at Leaden Roothing after that. May came in at Leaden with mature glory after a week of grey and cold. All of a sudden they were under

clear skies, and you could tell time quite easily by sun-up and sundown, while cuckoo-chime came in random haste anyhow in the long sunshine hours. The breadths of wheat-fields and barley-fields were of a lovely green now, and the harvest seemed well on its way. Leonard was full in the heat and ardour of Mary's spring, while even his comrade's visions, that were always bright, took more tender colours.

In the woods above the church the primroses and bluebells showed what earth could remember of gold sun and rich sky, where the branches would let her see so little. It was in one of these woods that Robert noted Agnes Aylett gathering hawthorn one May morning. It was no business of his, as he came home from Mass, but he noted what great branches were piled around her, as if a woodman's hatchet had been to her aid. Then he saw the track of feet that looked fresh under the hedge. He did not think that she had come, or was going home alone. The girl was as good a girl as any in those villages. He was curious to note who had her favour on this tell-tale holiday. While he lingered by the river he saw her coming far away with a very tall fellow, and asked Leonard who it might be. 'There are many in the Roothings that, when you come by, will draw their hoods down,' Leonard said. He guessed who it was when he saw the mighty bower that was built about the girl's mother's cottage, and her pretty red head close to a grey hood within it. That very morning he had said Mass of the Red Rose all unbeknown to his Dominican brother. This time it had been in the wood itself, one of those great woods towards High Easter, with an old slab cut with crosses for Altar, and there had been women as well as men to worship. Chestnut hair was uncommon in the Roothings, and he had thought of Agnes, when he had caught a glint of it under a white hood. He had guessed, too, at those even tones of him that convoked to prayer. It came to him that this was the self-same man who had healed the broken head and raised the siege of sanctuary, and that this man was George Parris, of Beauchamp Roothing; he made sure of it from tales that he had heard. In June there came another Mass by stealth, but this time he was allowed to share the secret with Robert, who was rapt with pleasure. The hope of Henry reigning once more in holy simplicity kindled that very simple man. He begged that he might preach to the fellowship of the Red Rose at their Guild Service.

It was in the gloom before the dawn at Aythorp Roothing Church, and there were many maids and wives to pray as well as men, and these all wore June's crimson roses from their garths and cottage walls. Robert had a sparkle of Apocalyptic fire as he spoke of the City of God. He said no evil word of King Edward, rather he praised Henry that followed the Lamb and loved the poor. Then he told how the Grey Friars had died for the White Rose long ago. How one was brought before the first Henry of Lancaster, and said of Richard that was uncrowned by him—'If he is dead, he is dead by your means—if he was killed by you, you can have no title to the throne.'

'Then by my head,' said that Fourth Henry, 'I will have thine cut off.' The brothers would not put themselves on the king's mercy, but stood their trial, and were drawn to Tyburn, and hung and headed, and their heads set on London Bridge. 'Ah,' said the simple preacher, 'if the Grey Friars died so well for Richard, shall not we that wear black frocks dare unto like death for Henry, who hath been despised and rejected of evil men. Wear then the Red Rose patiently, albeit it hath stains and thorns. Hold fast that ye have, that no man take your crowns.'

Now it was, that the Mission knitted the hearts of these Roothing villages together. There was fire in the air, men's hearts were at high summer. Yet I will say this for both of these two meddling friars, that if they loved too well at heart an earthly quarrel, they spoke stedfastly every day of the Love of Heaven. Was it so very ill if the Saviour with the brow-band of thorns called him at whiles to mind that lay in London's Tower? He was very meek surely, and the red roses he wore had many thorns.

#### IV.

They were sojourning in High Roothing when a vile pox or fever quickened those country folk with new zeal and fear as to death and God.

Leonard lay all but dead on Midsummer Night. When nine fires, one for each of her name-children, dotted the ridges above the river, fire was burning up in his body, and his head was light with midsummer madness. The sickness had fallen so suddenly that little had as yet been done to stay it. They spoke, though, of someone coming from Beauchamp, someone



with faith and a reliquary and skill to heal. There was certainly no one that knew much of healing in the cottage where he lay.

Alas ! that strong hooded figure from Beauchamp did not come after all ; he was again away on his London business with the great, no one knew for how long. Robert was begloomed when he came back from his sunset preaching. But as the darkness fell, Agnes came. She was very hardy, and never seemed to want sleep for hours and hours, nay, days and days. She cared for him well and prayed for him, and by St. Peter's Day his head grew clear from his weakness. Then it was that she began to talk at whiles to him of what she cared for. She told him the tale of poverty and hardship and hard rule for folk that grow the great crops of wheat and barley that bring the Roothings fame. He had begun to think for ploughmen and shepherds these last months, he that had been burgher-bred and priory-nursed before. Now, his Lord with the Wounds again and again would come to his sight in country guise, and commit to his care some rustic sorrow. Leonard had heard Cade's cries what time he was a boy at school, when the White Rose budded in hope.

Now the Red Rose had withered long ago, and the White was fading, while there was hope that the withered flower might shoot again. Thorns, thorns, thorns seemed to be country-folks' share of either Rose. Yet were these Brothers so wicked to welcome war between them ? At least the Red Rose covered a Saint that cared for the poor, the White Rose a glutton that cared for burghers' wives ! How often he would hear Agnes singing her peasants' dirge of the days of King Richard :—

When the red sun drops a-bed,  
Up the lyke-way bring the dead.  
So shall all the poor folk come,  
Day's work done, to sing them home.

Give them all the poor man's best,  
Sunday being for their rest ;  
Beeswax lights in burial glow,  
All such pomp as poor men know.

Under greensward, under stone,  
Poorest folk can hold their own,  
Not the shrewdest lawyer knave,  
Drags one ascript from his grave.

Then he would gravely silence her and bid her join him in a Paternoster for all poor lawyers.

Kind Lucy, show them light,  
 Agnes, lend them fleeces white,  
 All Saint Dolly's flowers adore,  
 These our fair, fine ladies adorn.

She would smile, but she would obey, as he checked her to say Ave Maria for all great ladies.

Those that high lords held so mean,  
 God shall choose as pure and clean,  
 Great Saint George, upon them smile,  
 Those our masters held so vile!

Time is come their rest to take,  
 Times be cruel for those that wake.  
 When God heals us poor men's pain,  
 Haply they shall wake again.

Be they lovers, plant them new.  
 Poor folks' garden roots a few,  
 That the May morn when they rise  
 True-love flow'rs may greet their eyes.

Then he would sing 'Gloria' for poverty, and 'De profundis' for riches, 'Ad Requiem æternam' for dead folk great and small.

There was one snatch of a song that haunted him hour in and hour out on his white nights:—

God made the oak tree,  
 The red thorn and white thorn;  
 And He made the plowman  
 They hang there in scorn.

She would sing it sadly, for her father had gone the way it told of, and she would sing it often.

#### V.

The Mass of the cottage lilies, whereat the Fellowship honoured Our Lady's Visitation, was the first Leonard said when he could stand once more.

Both Brotherhood and Sisterhood were growing white now to harvest.

High Roothing is one of the two greatest of the Roothing churches, but it could hardly hold all those worshippers. The air in that fiery July month seemed alight with the torches of some coming pageant.

"Down with London tower  
 Built in London town;  
 Up and come with roses red,  
 All a King to crown!"

On Saint Swithin's Day, that was burning and rainless, many came to Berners Church in the woodland, and asked Leonard to pray that the harvest might be fine and speedily done with.

By Saint Margaret's Day the oat-cutting had begun. 'Let us only be till we have gathered in our lords' harvest,' men said, 'then will we hear of the wars that are coming.' So far, things seemed to go only too smoothly and too lightly for their cause, to Leonard's eyes, at least. The Lancaster cry found so few gainsayers. It was such an old cry in that countryside. Was not High Easter, whose great church bulked over the uplands to north-east, a heritage of the olden royal line—had not the first king of its blood himself planned that massy tower? 'The Kingdom of Heaven comes not on earth so peacefully,' he groaned to Robert on Lammas Eve.

They were just walking from Berners into Margaret Roothing then; that was to be the last parish of their Mission, and they had been bidden to the Reapers' Mass that was to be said in a cornland of Garnish Manor House to-morrow. This was no secret matter now. When they came to the priest's house he was full of talk about it. 'There is hearsay of trouble ere the week be over,' he muttered. 'Folk seem all one way,' said Leonard. 'I doubt if ours be a Christian war with so little gloom of death about it.' 'Nay, they are not all for you,' their host said. 'A moiety of all our great folk are ready to bear arms for Lancaster. It is true that Sir Thomas Gates and Sir Richard Rookwood are of these. The Abbess of Barking and the Monks of Ely also, that own Roothing Manors, bear us no ill-will. But these red roses show too far and too often. They are worn openly before dawn and after dusk these months past. There are not a few that mean our folk mischief. There is Lord Maynard marshalling his powers at Canfield this week. He would fain strike ere the matter go further.' 'Will there be many here to-morrow?' Robert asked. 'Are they not all this way busy with harvest?' The priest laughed like the hearty fellow he was, save when he talked of wars and dismal happenings. 'There will be no sickles in the corn betwixt here and Beauchamp,' he said. 'And where have ye been that ye heard not of the wedding no further than Leaden Church?'

'I heard that Agnes Aylett's banns were cried these three Sundays past,' said Leonard, gravely. He had heard that

the girl was to be married to George Parris, and he was sorry for her. Her groom was by no means a quiet man in these unquiet times, and she was a girl on whom joy never seemed to be wasted.

Of the still dawn in the corn-land with the altar-slab set among the barley-stooks, I would I could tell. But the hot gold and cool grey of that dew-dabbled scene, when the Host went up and the bedesmen and bedeswomen bowed to the stubble earth, is beyond me. After the sacrifice came disquiet. 'The priest of Leaden has fled. No man knows whither.' So Leonard came through the cornfields to marry those twain and learned at last the secret of the hooded face. It nearly struck him down to see the groom before him. He might have thought it out long ago, but his brain had been dull. George Parris was George Easter, of Good Easter, that went in arms with him from Oxford ten years ago. His voice now had thrown off its hood, as well as his face. It was the same trolling voice that had sung 'O quanta qualia' and 'Alma Redemptoris' of old. How good it was to grip hands as he drew their hands together! The Blessing was hardly given when the battle of Lammas Day began. Their long peace was at last over.

## VI.

The alarm came with the blowing of horns in the village; bridegroom and bride loosed hands, and he was gone. A medley of billmen and archers was marching on the church, that was filled with simple harvest folk. When Leonard looked round he saw that they were mostly women and old men and children; there were many binders and gleaners at that bridal, but reapers, how few! To the porch came a herald with Lord Maynard's colours and a white rose at his breast. The church was filled with mute or whispering folk that needed a spokesman. It was Leonard who came forward to treat. He asked right of Sanctuary for all that were there, but the Maynards refused it. 'Drag them out,' they cried. Leonard noted one dark comely man that sat a white horse as their most obstinate enemy. He defied him in the name of God. He felt a little sorry for him and his following, for he guessed that a stroke was coming. George Easter had not seemed to him unready or taken at a vantage. When he struck he would assuredly strike hard.

If only the Fellowship had given battle two minutes earlier ! The Dominicans were grappling in the porch-way to save the unarmed crowd within from violence. They stemmed the full tide for a little, then it was that the tide turned.

The hedges of the churchyard were lined with archers, and the hail of arrows began and ever thickened on the masses of men at the church door. All had been planned last night, and all was ready. There were but two weak rushes of the trapped men at the yew hedge, where the steel met them. They broke, they fled down the lyke-way, and up the road for the woods and High Easter. There was mercy for them in the hour of their flight, not an arrow was loosed at them, not a bill struck home.

The bridegroom came back to his bride, his bow slung over his bleeding shoulder, and roses stuck in the curls about his cheeks, that were smooth as a young boy's still. He was none too soon in coming. Leonard was hurt, and though Agnes had staunched the lance's thrust, he was in sore pain, and must be carried tenderly. But Robert lay dead with his head cloven. Perchance the butchering of a priest cured Lord Maynard of all stomach for further fighting that harvest. At any rate, both barley and wheat were gathered in safely, such fat crops that boys could remember them as old men, and folk are used to much corn on the Roothing clays.

How shall I tell how Leonard grew to his work as priest of those three forlorn villages, whence their priest had fled when the White Rose showed its thorns ?

It is strange how much better good things seem should they come true after much sorrowful dreaming about them. Those Oxford days had seemed gone as dust to the winds of heaven. His boyish reverence at least was saved from the wrack, and old strength and tenderness were once more about him. And about him, too, was that country of the old tales, with a time-honoured cause to light its nine dull villages, holding to each its torch of fire. Surely Saint Botolph of Beauchamp, and Saint Edmund of Abbess, and Scottish Saint Margaret of Margaret Roothing, an you could have seen them, were wearing red roses, and Saint Dorothy, that ruled the rose gardens, was busy plucking their favours.

Then there was Robert, dead and at rest, for a new patron to

the cause, and Agnes, whose eyes were as blue flowers by Roothing River, for earthly patroness.

The next months were anxious, and they had two great fights not so lightly won as that by Leaden Church. At last, in October, Warwick landed, and Henry came out of prison, and the Red Rose reigned.

Then there followed brave times, right up to that bravest time of all when, on Easter Sunday, the Roothings died almost to a man for King Henry, in a meadow near Barnet.

There died George Easter, the yeoman, and Leonard, the Dominican priest, and Agnes in her archer-lad's dress, carrying the banner of the Nine Orders.

On it were painted the Nine Orders of Angels, an Archangel, an angel ministrant, a cherub, a seraph, and many another, and also nine red roses, with the names of the nine Roothing villages, Margaret and Aythorp, and Berners and Leaden and High and White, and Beauchamp and Abbess, and dwarfish Morrell. On the scroll of it you might have read:—

‘ADVENIAT REGNUM TUUM; FIAT VOLUNTAS TUA SICUT IN  
CÆLO ET IN TERRA.’

## LOUIS XVIII. AT GOSFIELD HALL.

‘NOVEMBER 3rd, 1807, Louis the 18th came to Gosfield, travelling as Comte de Lille.’ So says an extract from an old diary kept by a resident in Bocking.

‘Monsieur,’ by which title the grandson of Louis XV. was always known, had been obliged to leave Poland and Russia, where he had lived for some years, owing to the Treaty of Tilsit (8th July 1807). England was the only refuge remaining, and he landed at Yarmouth, 30th October 1807. The English Government offered him Holyrood as a residence, but this was declined, and the Marquis of Buckingham invited him to take up his abode at Gosfield Hall. His Queen, Louise, daughter of the King of Sardinia, arrived in the following July. She died at Hartwell, Bucks, one of the Marquis of Buckingham's seats in that county, on November 15, 1810, having in the meantime resided for a short while at Wanstead House, so it is evident that

the residence of the Royal Family at Gosfield must have fallen considerably short of three years' duration. At some time between the dates given, the King and Queen removed to Hartwell, where Louis remained till his Restoration in 1814.

The village of Gosfield has always maintained the memory of having once had the honour of a king (exiled, it is true) domiciled in its ancient Hall.

It had an even earlier connection with France, and had



HOUSE INHABITED BY THE POOR CLARES.

already, twelve years earlier, afforded an asylum to some unfortunate English Catholic ladies driven from their convent at Gravelines, in Flanders, in 1795, by the terrors of the French Revolution. The order of Clarissines or Poor Clares, to which they belonged, was established by Saint Clara, that noble lady of Assisi who in 1212 left her life of luxury to follow Francis, the lover of the poor, and devote herself to the same rules drawn up by Francis himself in 1224. There were soon as many as 2,000 convents, and even after the Reformation 900 remained in Europe.

The Poor Clares devote themselves largely to the education of girls, and have done noble work of colonisation in every part of the world. After the conquest of Mexico by Cortez, Queen Isabella sent thither some nuns of this order, who founded settlements among the Indians and taught them religion and works of mercy.

Their large Tuscan hats and brown cloaks are a familiar sight in the streets of every town in Italy, and sometimes may be seen in England. The house that sheltered them in Gosfield is also shown in an illustration; it stands in the village street.

The names of the ladies who sought refuge in the village of Gosfield, and of one of their priests, are recorded on a square monument in the north-west corner of Gosfield Churchyard. An illustration of it is given. It is just visible in the photograph of the church which forms the Frontispiece of this number, and it bears the following inscriptions:—

*North Face.*

Here lye the bodies of the Religious Community established at Gravelines in Flanders under the name of the English Poor Clares in the year 1609, driven from thence by the persecutions of the French Revolution in the year 1795, and settled in this village July the 27<sup>th</sup> of the same year.

*East Face.*

FRANCIS TODD. Died Jan. 1, 1797. Aged 35.  
 ANN WORSICK. Died April 4, 1797. Aged 33.  
 EMELIA KEITH. Died Jan. 4, 1799. Aged 61.  
 MARY BULSTRODE. Died April 17, 1799. Aged 72.  
 MARY FALKNER. Died Nov. 27, 1808. Aged 77.

*South Face.*

ANN JUMPE. Died April 30, 1810. Aged 61.  
 ANN CLIFTON. Died Nov. 11, 1811. Aged 70.  
 ELIZABETH CHANIRELI. Died Nov. 11, 1812. Aged 93.  
 ANN PRNSWICK. Died July 28, 1813. Aged 68.  
 JANE FAIRBROTHER. Died Nov. 28, 1813. Aged 58.

*West Face.*

JAMES JOHN BAPTIST NICHOLAS BOULANGER, French Priest. Originally came from the Parish of St. Philibert des Champs. Rector of Ecorcheville, Departement du Calvados. Died 17<sup>th</sup> Decr. in the year of Our Lord 1801, about 73 years of age.

Another refugee at Gosfield was Mistress Dorothea Silburn, widow of Thomas Silburn, a Yorkshireman living in London, who had been implicated in the Lord George Gordon riots in 1780. She lived for a time at a house in the Park, known as 'Pimlico.'



another of the Catholic ladies befriended by the Marquis. An old man in the village tells me he well remembers her coming to the Poor Clares' house on Sunday, probably to hear Mass, in a chaise drawn by a white donkey. She had offered the shelter of her house in St. James', Westminster, to the exiled Bishop of



MONUMENT TO ENGLISH POOR CLARES IN  
GOSFIELD CHURCHYARD.

St. Pol de Léon, and when the monarchy was restored in 1814 she returned to France and took up her abode at the little town of Roscoff, in Brittany, four miles from St. Pol de Léon. There she died, and is buried under a similar monument, bearing the following inscription, which a member of my family some years since copied.

On a square monument in the Cemetery at Roscoff, Brittany.

*1<sup>re</sup> face.*



Le Clergé français reconnaissant.

Ci gît

Dorothée Silburne

morte à Roscoff

Le 2 Oct. 1820

à l'âge de 67 ans.

*2<sup>e</sup> face*



Dorothée Silburne, mère

du Clergé français

réfugié en Angleterre

1792--93.

*3<sup>e</sup> face.*



Dorothée Silburne

mère des pauvres

de Roscoff

“ Sa mémoire est en

bénédiction ”

Eze. XLV. I.

Requiescat in pace.

## A HISTORY OF SHIP-BUILDING IN ESSEX.

BY MILLER CHRISTY.

**T**HERE is every reason to believe that the building of ships became an important industry on the Essex coast in very early days. The amount of excellent oak timber which the county produces and the number of small havens, suitable for ship-building, which exist upon our coast offered exceptional facilities which cannot have been overlooked and were certainly taken advantage of.

Nevertheless, there exist extremely few records enabling us to trace the history of the industry in early days. Most of the

records we have relate to comparatively recent times—the last two or three centuries—during which ship-building has been carried on more or less extensively at Harwich, Brightlingsea, Thorrington, Wyvenhoe, Maldon, Leigh, and probably elsewhere. Moreover, most of the information we have relates to the building of ships for the Royal Navy—a subject which requires no notice here, as it has been treated very fully by Mr. M. Oppenheim in the *Victoria History of the County*.\* The building of pleasure yachts (once carried on extensively at Wyvenhoe and Rowhedge) has also been discussed fully in the same pages,† to which the reader may be referred for information. On the other hand, the building of ordinary sea-going trading-ships (an industry now all but extinct in the county) and the building of fishing-boats (which still flourishes with us) are scarcely touched upon in the great work in question. These may, therefore, very fitly receive some attention here.

Ship-building of all kinds appears to have attained greater importance at Harwich than elsewhere on our coast. Thus, in 1565 (as Mr. Oppenheim has shown‡), Harwich possessed seventeen vessels of all sorts; while, in 1572, sixteen vessels (including one of one hundred tons) belonged to the port. On the 1st December 1600, there were thirty-two "Shippes and Hoyes appertayning to the Towne of Harwich"§:—

The Mariegould .. .. 140 tons	The Toby .. .. 100 tons
The Jonas .. .. 140 ..	The Thomas (of Mr. Tevett) 80 ..
The William .. .. 140 ..	The Desire .. .. 80 ..
The Globe .. .. 140 ..	The An .. .. 80 ..
The Christian .. .. 130 ..	The Thomasin .. .. 80 ..
The Apollo .. .. 120 ..	The Conacon .. .. 80 ..
The Phenex .. .. 120 ..	Walter Maynore his Barke 80 ..
The White Post .. .. 120 ..	The An .. .. 60 ..
The Garlonde .. .. 120 ..	The Pilgrim .. .. 60 ..
The Delite .. .. 120 ..	The Solomon .. .. 60 ..
The Henry .. .. 110 ..	The Pheonix .. .. 60 ..
The Marmaide .. .. 100 ..	The Swanne .. .. 40 ..
The Thomas (of Mr. Thompson) 100 ..	The Content .. .. 30 ..
The Susan .. .. 100 ..	The Prospercus .. .. 20 ..
The Annfrance .. .. 100 ..	The Burton .. .. 10 ..
The Noye .. .. 100 ..	The Grace .. .. 10 ..

Most of these had been built, doubtless, at Harwich; for, in

\* *V. C. H., Essex*, "Maritime History," vol. ii.

† *Op. cit.*, "Industries," vol. ii., pp. 488-492.

‡ See Mr. Oppenheim's "Maritime History of Essex."

§ See The Corporation Records, quoted by Lindsay: *Season at Harwich* (1851), App. p. 165.

1602, ships of considerably larger size (namely, of 170, 200, and 260 tons) were built there by one John Barker for two London merchants.\*

Soon after the middle of the Seventeenth Century, the building of ships for the navy overshadowed the building of trading-ships at Harwich ; and it is not till about the beginning of the Nineteenth Century, when the naval yard was let to private shipbuilders, that we are able to gather further information.†

From 1785 to 1840, the Royal ship-yard was in the occupation of Joseph Graham, who built under contract both ships for the Navy and trading-ships. In 1811, he built the *Surrey*, a West Indiaman of 400 tons, the first large merchantman we hear of as having been built in the yard. In 1817, he built the *Eagle*, a schooner of 120 tons : in 1820, a cutter of forty tons and a life-boat for use on the Essex coast, the latter costing upwards of £500. Between 1824 and 1826, Graham built for the Post Office Service eleven steamships, as follows:—The *Spitfire*, the *Fury*, and the *Crusader*, each of 120 tons ; the *Watersprite*, of 180 tons ; the *Escape*, the *Wizard*, the *Salamander*, the *Dragon*, and the *Crocodile*, each of 237 tons ; the *Thetis*, of 290 tons ; and the *Dolphin*, of 320 tons. About the same time, he built for the Danish Government the *Mercurius*, a small vessel, probably a packet-boat, of 57 tons. In 1835, he built for "Private Service" two packets, the *Ramsgate* and the *Waterwitch*, of 140 tons each ; and, in 1840, a schooner, the *Whim*, of 100 tons.

After this date, the yard was occupied for a few years by Mr. John Bagshaw, M.P., who built for the Ordnance Service, in 1842, a sloop, the *Lord Vivian*, and a schooner, the *Lady Vivian*. In the two following years, he built for the merchant service the *Admiral Dundas*, a bark, and the *John Bagshaw*, a brig of 260 tons, as well as the *John Williams*, a brig of 296 tons, for the London Missionary Society.

Up to this time and later, there remained in use in the yard a large ancient crane for hoisting goods out of a vessel's hold and depositing them on the quay alongside. It was said‡ to have been in existence "since the time of Queen Elizabeth" and was "worked by men in two large drums, with steps therein,

\* See "Maritime History of Essex."

† See Lindsay : *Op. cit.*, App. p. 164.

‡ Lindsay : *Season at Harwich* (1851), p. 113.

after the manner of a tread-wheel," as in the case of the well-known wheel at Carisbrooke Castle. As the wheel was made to revolve by the weight of the men inside it, the rope of the crane wound itself round the outer barrel of the wheel and thus raised whatever heavy objects were attached to it. At the same time, there was also in use a patent slip-away for hauling up vessels. This had been installed in the spring of 1826. Vessels were placed on three small carriages, which were then hauled up parallel tramways by means of a chain attached to the drum of a windlass, turned by bars inserted in a capstan-head; by which means, thirty men could haul up a vessel of 500 tons at the rate of two or three feet per minute.

About the year 1850, the late Mr. John H. Vaux, of Harwich (formerly of Southampton), became tenant of the yard; and, in 1851, he built there a ship of about 700 tons. He continued to occupy the yard till the last few years, when he was succeeded by Mr. W. B. McLearn, who still builds small ships.

Further south, in the estuary of the Colne, trading-ships of small size have been built, since early times, at Brightlingsea (just within the mouth), at Thorrington, and at Wyvenhoe and Rowhedge (both about three miles below Colchester).

As far back as the year 1300, a ship known as the *Welfare*, belonging to Brightlingsea (and, of course, a trader) was serving in the navy of Edward I.\* At the end of the Fifteenth Century and beginning of the Sixteenth, the Beriffes, of "Moverons" and of "Jacobs," both in Brightlingsea, were prominent as ship-owners and merchants. Thus, in 1478, John Beriffe owned and commanded the *Mary*, of Brightlingsea; † in the same year, the '*George* of Bredylsay' was commanded by one John Pypar; while, later, another John Beriffe, who died in 1521, owned the *Trinity*, the *Barbara*, and the *Mayflower*, all of the same port. ‡

The Rev. Wm. Harrison, writing in 1587, speaks§ of Thorrington (or, as he calls it, Thorlington), on the creek now known as Alresford Creek, "where [he says] good ships of a hundred tun or more be made."

In the end of 1372 or the beginning of 1373, the Bailiffs of

\**The Wardrobe Accounts of 28 Edward I.* (Soc. of Antiq., 1787), p. lv.

†See *The Cely Papers*, ed. by Rev. H. E. Malden, p. 196 (Roy. Hist. Soc. 1900). Two years later, she was commanded by one William Recharlday (*ibid.*, p. 43).

‡See *Essex Review*, vol. xiii., p. 221.

§"Descrip. of England," in *Holinshed's Chronicles*, i, p. 108 (1587). The passage does not appear in the earlier (1577) edition.

Colchester and Ipswich received jointly a Royal Command to build a barge for service against the king's enemies and for safeguarding the seas. The two towns at once made representation in the King's Courts at Westminster that they had been much impoverished since the war began; and, by the King's favour, the town of Hadleigh, in Suffolk, was joined with them; whereupon the barge was completed—probably on the Colne.\*

Between 1625 and 1638, as Mr. Oppenheim has shown, John Page and Richard Allen, of Colchester, launched eight vessels and Timothy Alleston one. These were built, probably, at Wyvenhoe or Rowhedge, where ship-building has been carried on ever since.

Messrs. Forrest and Co. Ltd. have occupied since 1888 the shipyard at Wyvenhoe occupied formerly by Philip Sainty and the Harveys, both long famous as yacht-builders. The yard extends to four acres and a half and lies between the bank of the Colne and the station. It has its own railway-siding, a dry-dock 235ft. in length, and extensive ranges of building-sheds, slipways, and fitters' shops. In it, they have built many ships—generally of special and uncommon kinds. Among them have been a certain number of yachts and small traders; but the firm's speciality is light-draft steamers (stern-wheel or paddle), of which many have been built for use on the shallow rivers of Africa, Russia, and Mexico. It has built also many life-boats for use on coast or ship; pinnaces, torpedo-boats, destroyers, submarines, and man-of-war's boats for the British and various foreign navies; fire-floats for the London County Council; steam launches, motor boats, dredgers, and other craft for all kinds of special purposes. Messrs. Forrest built also, for the Melanesian Mission, the auxiliary screw yacht *Southern Cross* (the fourth of that name).

Coming to the estuary of the Blackwater: we find that, in the Fifteenth Century, a certain amount of export trade was carried on from Bradwell Quay, close to the mouth of the river; for, in 1478, a cargo of wool was sent thence to Calais in a ship known as the *Christopher*, belonging to (and probably built at) that little port.† At Maldon, at the head of the estuary, a certain amount of ship-building was carried on formerly. In

\*See the Colchester "Red Paper Book," fo. 1 (also Benham's *Red Paper Book*, 1902 pp. 4-5).

†*The Cely Papers* (1900), p. 195.

1572, the port possessed eighteen trading-ships,\* most of them built, no doubt, on the spot. Now the industry has almost entirely ceased at this port.

At Leigh, there was a considerable ship-building industry during the latter part of the Sixteenth Century, when (as Mr. Oppenheim has shown†) ships of large size for the time (up to 340 tons, that is) were built there, doubtless for London merchants. In 1572, Leigh, with Milton, owned thirty trading-vessels of from fifty to one hundred tons, beside eighteen of smaller size. In recent times, the town has lost the industry.

At Rainham, further up the Thames, there was a certain amount of export trade (and probably of ship-building) in the Fifteenth Century; for, in 1481, three ships, the *Mary* (John Danyell, master), the *Christower* (Harry Wylkyns, master), and the *Thomas* (Hemonde Danyell, master), were described as belonging to the place.‡

Of ship-building on the rest of our coast, there seems nothing to record, except at West Ham, at the extreme south-western corner of the county from Harwich, where the industry has been carried on since the middle of the last century.

In 1846, Mr. Charles John Mare, a partner in the ship-building firm of Ditchburn and Mare, whose works were on the Blackwall (or Middlesex) side of Bow Creek, at its junction with the Thames, suggested to his partner that, in view of the high cost of bringing rolled iron plates from the north of England by rail, they should buy land on the opposite (or Essex) side of the Creek and lay down plant for rolling their own plates. Mr. Ditchburn did not favour this idea and the partnership was dissolved. The firm of C. J. Mare and Co. was then formed, and at once acquired four acres of the land in question, which was then mere waste marsh, covered with reeds, and submerged at high tides. It was immediately drained and piled; offices and buildings were erected; two slips were laid down; and, within four years, it had been converted, according to White,¶ into

the largest establishment in the world for building iron and wooden ships. . . . The arrangement of the various buildings for the different branches of trade employed in iron and wood ship-building (for the former of which Messrs. Mare and Co. stand pre-eminent) is admirable; whilst the inter-

\*See Mr. Oppenheim's "Maritime History of Essex."

†*Op. et loc. cit.*

‡*The Cely Papers* (1900), pp. 41, 70, 71, 72, 75, 76, and 80.

¶*Hist. & Gaz. of Essex* (1848), pp. 232 & 240.

secting of the spacious yard in various directions by railways, communicating with the several wharf-cranes on a quay of 1,050 feet, offers every facility for the landing and delivery of iron, timber, coals, stores, etc., or for loading vessels and barges with the products of the works. At the present time (April 1848), there is upon the stocks a splendid Iron Steam Frigate of 1800 tons burthen, building for the Admiralty. It will be fitted up with a screw propeller. In the open yard are various building-slips, capable of receiving the largest vessels, and among the buildings is an iron foundry, with four blast furnaces, capable of producing the larger description of castings. Here are also puddling and scrap-iron furnaces, tilt and forging hammers, bar-iron rollers, powerful bending and straightening rollers, punching presses, shearing machines, rivet presses, rivetting machines, &c., of the greatest power, worked by various steam engines. . . . . The average number of hands employed by them is about 1,200, but they have sometimes as many as 2,000 at work. During the last eight years, they have built about 300 vessels, nearly all of iron.

Later, C. J. Mare and Co. undertook extensive contracts for general engineering work in various parts of Britain; but, in 1856, the firm became insolvent, owing to the low price at which it had contracted to build some fifteen gunboats and dispatch-vessels for use by the Government during the war in the Crimea. Their works were then taken over by the Thames Ironworks, Shipbuilding, and Engineering Company Limited, which still exists and trades on a very large scale.

In 1858, the Company received from the Admiralty an order for H.M.S. *Warrior*, the first sea-going armour-clad warship ever built. All the details of construction of this novel departure in ship-building were worked out in the Company's yard. The vessel was launched in 1861, and quickly attracted the attention of the chief Governments throughout the world.

From the beginning to the present date (December 1906), the Company has built 846 vessels of all kinds, having a total displacement of 465,000 tons.\* All these, with the exception of a few built by Ditchburn and Mare in the firm's earliest days, have been built on the Essex bank of Bow Creek, where the Company's yard now covers twenty-four acres. For some years past, the Company has had no land on the Middlesex side of the Creek, where its general offices were situated formerly.

The Company has built war-ships for the British, German, Russian, Turkish, Spanish, Portuguese, Greek, Brazilian,

\*Of this enormous tonnage, vessels totalling 321,000 tons have been designed by Mr. Geo. C. Mackrow, the Company's Naval Architect, who was attached to Ditchburn and Mare in 1843 and is still in the service of the Company, having completed the extraordinarily long period of 63 years. He is now one of the Directors. I am indebted to him for information.



United States, Japanese, and other Governments. Among battle-ships and cruisers built in recent years are some of the finest afloat. Several of these have been built for the Japanese Government, including the *Fuji* (12,500 tons) and the *Shikishima* (15,000 tons); others have been built for the British Government, including the *Albion* (12,950 tons), the *Duncan* and the *Cornwallis* (both 14,000 tons), and the *Black Prince* (a first-class cruiser of 13,500 tons, now completing).

While most of the vessels built have been war-ships, some have been of other kinds—yachts, dredgers, packet-boats for the Channel and other services, and various other sorts, including the *Cleopatra*, which brought the 'Needle' to this country.

To-day, the building of ships (other than fishing-boats and small yachts) may be said to be practically extinct in Essex, except at West Ham and Wyvenhoe, and there seems little or no probability of its revival. Now that large vessels are always built of iron, there is an ever-increasing tendency for them to be built nearer the sources of supply of iron and coal in the North of England.

Allied to the building of ordinary trading-vessels is the building of fishing boats—an industry which is still carried on actively in Essex. It seems that most, if not all, of the boats used by Essex fishermen have been always, and are still, built in the county. That this was so a century ago is clear from Young's statements as to the boats used in the oyster-fishery in the estuaries of the Colne and the Blackwater:—

A dredging boat is [he says \*] from 14 to 30 or 40 tons burthen. All are decked and built at Wivenhoe, Brightlingsea, etc., etc. The price [is] 10*l.* a ton for the hull of the vessel only, and fitting out one of twenty tons will demand 150*l.* There are from two to four men to each vessel, who are paid by shares; and the master has a share for the vessel. In the spring, they go to the coast of Hants and Dorset, dredging there. Last week, Mr. Buxton counted 130 vessels at work within sight of Mersea.

Young also prints some information supplied to him by a correspondent, a Mr. Bennett Hawes, of Mersea, who says† that the number of fishing vessels of from eight to forty or fifty tons employed at the time in the Essex fisheries was

near 200, employing from 400 to 500 men and boys. A vessel carrying three men has [he adds] one share and a half of all the earnings, and the men one share each. Larger vessels have generally two shares, but, I believe, none more than this.

\* *Gen. View of Agric. of Essex* 1807, vol. ii., p. 387.

† *Op. cit.*, ii., p. 388.

The vessels, [which are] built at East Donyland, Wyvenhoe, Brightlingsea, Burnham, and Mersea, will last from 30 to 40 years, with care.

A person now living at Wivenhoe informed me that he had, within the last 20 years, built 100 vessels for the oyster business alone.

There has been an increase of boats (and, of course, of men) of more than half within the last thirty years.

At Barking, in the days when that place had a considerable fishing industry, fishing boats were built in large numbers, but building has now almost, or quite, ceased there.

At the present time, the building of fishing boats is carried on at Leigh, Southchurch, Heybridge, and Harwich; but the chief seat of the industry with us is still in the estuary of the Colne, at Brightlingsea, Wyvenhoe, and Rowhedge.

---

## BY THE RIVERSIDE.

BY A. W. DELL.

THE sun shines large and red over the hill, and the surrounding clouds are beginning to don the splendour of the sunset, as I step off the rickety wooden landing-stage into the boat—our clumsy barge-like craft which has borne us so many times up and down this quiet little Essex stream. Here, in spring, we are carried between banks brilliant with marsh marigolds, while the fields beyond, peering between the willows which fringe the stream, gleam white and yellow with their flowers.

This evening as the boat glides silently between the reedy banks, with only a musical ripple of the water under the prow, yellow water-lilies brush against the oars, while among the reeds can be seen clumps of forget-me-nots and wild thyme. For some way past the bridge, whose low red-brick arch has to be negotiated very warily, the river flows along a wide bed bordered with meadows, where cows are grazing with a steady 'munch, munch' of satisfaction.

But now we suddenly drift under the shadow of a row of overhanging willows, from whose drooping branches the leaves hang so low that they sweep against the boat and its occupants. The last rays of the sun pierce through between the old pollarded stems, and high up in the topmost branches a robin delivers his evening chant. Further on, a hundred or more

starlings are making noisy greetings to one another as they assemble for their evening flight in an old oak just across the stream. Here they will wait, chattering and flying about, now down on to the meadows, and now back again into the oak, till their company is made up. Then will come a sudden silence, immediately followed by the roar of beating wings as the whole flock takes flight for the distant roosting-place of half the starlings in the county, leaving the river more silent than before.

At present their incessant chatter and screaming greatly annoys a long-legged heron fishing in solitary state further down the river, and as we emerge from the shade of the trees and enter on a long stretch of open water, he can be seen flying off over the meadows to his heronry many miles away. Soon his slowly flapping wings have carried him over the brow of the hill, and he is lost to sight in the darkening east.

The river here seems to broaden out again, and the banks are bare of trees for some distance, so that one can see across the meadows on the right bank to the higher ploughed land crowned by the gaunt black figure of the windmill, which rears its tall column of red brick high into the air, as if ready, like a lighthouse, to resist all the winds that blow and all the storms that rage. To the right, where the hill slopes away to the valley, the blue smoke of the village drifts among the elms, while on a little higher ground the spire of the church can just be made out among its surrounding trees.

Once more our waterway is shaded, this time by a sturdy ash, followed by a row of giant willows from whose immense trunks giant branches spread out to the other side of the river. And here, under the shadow of the willows, our journey down the river must end, for just ahead the white weatherboarding of the water-mill gleams across the river, and close by is the miller's house with its quaint little angles and projections and mossy-tiled roof.

Round swings the boat to the creaking of the rowlocks, and we head her once more for the open stretch of water beyond the willows. As we glide out from the gloom a dark form suddenly shoots out from a tree ahead, and with silent strokes of the wing an old barn owl makes off up the river, soon followed by his mate from another tree on the other side of the stream.

Presently, as the boat carries us silently on, we pass by the gardens of a row of cottages, and in one of them I see an old friend sitting by the edge of the water, and smoking his evening pipe.

'Evening, Harry,' I say, as I bring the boat gently alongside the wooden piles that bank off his garden from the river.

'Evenin', sir,' says Harry, 'another good day for the harvest to-morrow, I count.'

'I hope so, I am sure. Very quiet on the river, isn't it?'

'That it is,' assents Harry, 'wonderful quiet here of an evenin'. The nights have been that warm to-year that I've a come here most evenin's to smoke a pipe. For 'tween you and I and the gatepost, t'aint allus quite so peaceful indoors. Not when my missus is riled, that is.' And having made this unusually long speech, Harry relapsed into silence, and a cloud of tobacco smoke.

'And how are you, yourself?' say I, by way of restarting the conversation. 'I am afraid your evenings by the river don't make your rheumatics any better.'

'That they don't,' replies Harry, mournfully, 'but there, I ain't a pig and didn't ought to grunt. If I live and be spared, I'll be eighty-three come Michaelmas, and, as I say, we can't none on us expect to live for everlastun.'

A long silence ensues, and then Harry goes on. 'Look at all them six or seven millions of men up in Lunnon, a-ragin' and a-tearin' round. In a hundred years' time they'll all be gone. Not one left.'

'And the river,' think I, as I paddle home, 'will be still flowing on through these fields just the same as to-night. Ah well, life is—by Jove, there goes an otter! Didn't I tell the Master there was one here, though he wouldn't believe me.'

And so home among the willows.

---

**Epitaph in Twinstead Churchyard.**—'Lucy Norman, wife of Peter Norman, gardener, to whom she bore seventeen children, died aged fifty-three, 10 April, 1794. Sir James Marriott placed this stone to protect her remains. Respect the dead and imitate her virtues.'

## NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

**Essex Mayors.** ON Mayors' Day, Nov. 9, the following gentlemen were elected to fill the office of Mayor in the various towns of Essex:—

<b>CHELMSFORD</b> ... ..	Alderman Frederic Chancellor (7th time)
<b>COLCHESTER</b> ... ..	Councillor Walter B. Sparling
<b>HARWICH</b> ... ..	Councillor W. H. Elwell (2nd time)
<b>MALDON</b> ... ..	Councillor H. A. Krohn (4th time)
<b>SAFFRON WALDEN</b> ..	Alderman Joseph Bell (4th time)
<b>SOUTHEND</b> ... ..	Councillor Walter Robert King
<b>EAST HAM</b> ... ..	Councillor G. Pratt (Deputy-Mayor)
<b>WEST HAM</b> ... ..	Alderman Spratt

The election of a Deputy-Mayor for Brightlingsea, a limb of the Cinque Ports, was carried out according to ancient usage by the jurors assembling in the belfry of All Saints' Church, when Captain Wenlock was elected.

**High Sheriff.** THE new High Sheriff of the County is Mr. Charles Ernest Ridley, third son of Thomas Dixon Ridley, of The Elms, Chelmsford, and now head of the well-known firm of T. D. Ridley and Sons, millers, brewers and maltsters. Mr. Ernest Ridley was born at Chelmsford in 1847, and was educated at Uppingham and Trinity College, Cambridge. He is chairman or vice-chairman of several of the Committees of the Essex County Council, chairman of the Finance Committee of the Essex County Lunatic Asylum and Hon. Secretary and Treasurer of the Essex Convalescent Home at Clacton-on-Sea. Mr. Ridley has always been devoted to sport in all its forms, he is an enthusiastic huntsman and a keen cricketer.

**Kelvedon Parish Room.** A NEW Parish Room has been erected in Kelvedon Street upon a site given by the Vicar, Rev. E. F. Hay, subscriptions for the building fund having been readily forthcoming to fill this long-needed want. The Hall is built from plans made by Mr. Percy Beaumont, it is Gothic in style, and the main room measures 50 by 28 feet. A smaller room above is for the use of the Young Men's Club, and a committee room is provided below. Further

additions are contemplated. The building was opened on October 3 by Major-General Sir Henry Ewart, K.C.B., G.C.V.O., of Felix Hall, who expressed the thanks of the parish to the Vicar, who had organised the affair. A concert followed, when the assistance of some talented professionals was much appreciated.

**Churches, Restorations, &c.** CHELMSFORD.—A memorial window has been given by Lieutenant Hardwicke Holderness to St. Mary's Church, in memory of his wife, a daughter of Mr. Walter Gray, of Chelmsford, whose death shortly after her marriage was the result of the severe earthquake in India last year. It was unveiled by the mother of the deceased young lady on 3 December, Canon Lake, the rector, saying the dedicatory prayers.

DANBURY.—A stained glass window has been presented to Danbury Church by the Rev. F. W. Rogers, Headmaster of Chelmsford Grammar School, in memory of Mrs. Rogers, who had long frequented Danbury for her health, and who died there on 18 May, 1904. A monument over her grave was unveiled at the same time. The dedication sermon was preached by the Rector (Rev. J. B. Plumtre), assisted by the Rev. A. W. Flux and the Rev. F. S. Paynter, in the presence of a number of friends, assistant masters of the school, and boys.

LOUGHTON.—The rectorial jubilee of the Rev. John Whitaker Maitland was made the occasion of the presentation (on November 27th) of an illuminated address, and the insertion, as a memorial of the event, of three new stained-glass windows at the east end of the chancel of the parish church. The subject of the central one is Our Lord represented as crowned, and in the attitude of benediction, holding in the left hand an orb: the windows on each side represent St. John Baptist, the patron saint of the church, and St. Alban, the protomartyr, above whom there are choirs of angelic beings. An inscription in the glass of the middle window records the circumstances of their erection. The amount contributed proving more than sufficient to carry out this work, a gradine, or retable, of carved alabaster and marble has also been provided for the altar. The work has been successfully carried out by Messrs. Powell, of Whitefriars, whose connection with the church and parish is of ancient date.

NEVENDON.—A new altar, presented by a Yorkshire gentleman, has been dedicated at St. Peter's Church by the Bishop of Colchester, assisted by the Rector, Rev. F. W. Greenstreet. The altar is of oak with five panels, carved with sacred emblems.

UPMINSTER.—A fine granite cross has been erected in the churchyard as a memorial to General Branfill, bearing the following inscription:—

Sacred to the Memory of  
Major-General BRYDGES ROBINSON BRANFILL,  
J.P., of Essex,  
Late 5th Bengal Cavalry,  
of Burghstead Lodge, Billericay,  
5th son of Champion Branfill, Esq.,  
of Upminster Hall.  
Born 22 November, 1833; Died May 26, 1905.

**Obituaries.** THE REV. JOHN JAMES STEVENSON MOORE, LL.D.

(Dublin), vicar of Dagenham, died there on 4th October, after a short illness of pneumonia. He had held the living for thirty years. Born in 1829 in the Isle of Man, educated at Trinity College, Dublin, and ordained in 1855, Dr. Moore was for fourteen years Chaplain of the Seamen's Mission at Swansea, where he carried on a good and lasting work among the sailors in the docks. At Dagenham, to which place he came in 1876, he will be long remembered by his restoration of the church, and by his efforts to obtain a district church for Chadwell Heath, which, during the latter years of his incumbency, became a separate parish with an independent vicar. Dr. Moore's wife survives him, and his son, Mr. C. J. Stevenson Moore, Chief Inspector of Police in Bengal, was present at his funeral in Dagenham churchyard on 9th October, when he was borne to the grave by members of his church choir.

THE REV. EDWARD MUSSELWHITE, rector of Salcot Virley, and a friend and neighbour of the Rev. S. Baring Gould (author of *Mehalah*), when he was at East Mersea, has recently died. He was ordained in 1855, and had held the joint livings of Salcot and Salcot Virley for about twenty-eight years.

**Red Hills Exploration.** AN influential Committee of Essex men interested in scientific discovery has been formed jointly by the Essex Archæological Society and the Essex Field Club, with Mr. H. Wilmer, C.G., as Hon. Sec. and

Treasurer, to investigate the deposits common along the margins of the estuaries and tidal rivers of this county, which have acquired the name of 'Red Hills.' The composition of the deposits is red burnt clay intermingled with rude pottery; they vary in size from a few rods to several acres, and are now given over in many cases to cultivation, the soil of which they are composed appearing singularly productive. Some have been proved by the pottery found therein to be at least prehistoric in origin. Many theories as to their purpose and existence have been advanced, but no systematic effort has heretofore been made to pierce the mystery that surrounds them. Mr. Wm. Cole, in the *Essex Naturalist* of July 1906, made a report of some he had examined. Operations have already commenced, and a number of hills in the parish of Langenhoe have been carefully excavated, with important results, which will be embodied in reports of the Committee and circulated, as funds permit. Mr. Francis W. Reader, who was engaged under General Pitts Rivers, Inspector of Ancient Monuments, is rendering assistance of the greatest value.

---

## NOTES AND QUERIES.

'Otes' as an Essex Place-name.—Can any reader of the *Essex Review* suggest a likely derivation for the word 'Otes,' which occurs several times in Essex as the name of a farm or residence? The best-known example was, probably, the mansion of 'Otes,' in High Laver, which was the home of the Mashams from the time of James I. to late Georgian days. Here Locke the philosopher spent the last ten years of his life, dying there in 1704. In 1712 Sir Samuel Masham, Bart., was created Lord Masham of Otes, but all his honours became extinct on the death of his son Samuel, the second Baron, in 1776. The house exists no longer, but extensive fish-ponds and mounds still mark the position of the grounds which once surrounded it (cf. *E.R.* xiv., p. 29). In Writtle there is a manor called 'Benedict Otes'; while in the adjoining parish of Chignal St. James there is a small farm known as 'Beaumont Otes' (pronounced locally 'Beam-a-notes'). Doubtless there are others.

Morant says (i., p. 140) that 'Otes,' in High Laver, took its name from one John Otes who held it in the time of



Edward III., and he gives a reference to an inquest of 18 Edward II. Again, he says (ii., p. 67) that 'Benedict Otes' took its name from 'one Benedictus Oates' that held it formerly. In records it is corruptly written 'Benditotes' and 'Benecotts.' Morant alludes also (*loc. cit.*) to Beaumont Otes, 'on the road from Chignal Smeley to Chelmsford,' but says nothing of any Mr. Beaumont Otes who gave it its name.

I confess to considerable doubt as to whether the name is really derived from a surname, as Morant says it is. A John Otes there may have been, for Morant seems to have had documentary evidence of his existence; but of Benedictus Otes Morant tells us nothing whatever, and one cannot help suspecting that he was invented by Morant to account for the unusual place-name. Again, even supposing that both these individuals really existed, who was Beaumont Otes?—M. C.

**Earl's Path** (*E.R.* xv., p. 175).—I notice that Mr. Barnard, in his pleasant article on 'Epping Forest by night,' speaks of 'the Earl's Path.' In the interest of posterity, if not of our contemporaries, it may be well to say that the definite article is misleading. Earls are far to seek in Loughton parish, although the Manor did, for a brief year or two, belong to a Rochford. The path in question owes its name, I believe, to a local laundress; but I am unable to say why her memory, rather than that of another, should be thus perpetuated.—W. C. W.

**Witham, New Station.**—In view of the extensive re-building now proceeding at Witham Station, and of the growing importance of it as a junction, it is perhaps timely and interesting to quote from our national merry-maker, 'Punch,' of fifty-seven years ago, a description of the station as it then appeared. A drawing of the solitary porter, on whom hung all the arduous labours, accompanies some lines where humour is as conspicuous as veracity :—

PORTER'S STATISTICS.

"If that celebrated porter Atlas—the Pickford of Antiquity, who carried the whole world, without even the aid of a knot, upon his shoulders—should re-appear upon the earth, he would hardly be 'strong enough for the place' of porter at the Witham Station of the Eastern Counties Railway. There is

on the spot a meeting of two or three lines, so that the official in attendance finds himself always in the midst of a very trying juncture. The impossibility of doing three things at once will occasion a collision now and then; but we believe the Directors



think of advertising for a sort of human three-in-one to fill the situation at Witham, his duties being to turn the points, ring the bell, and work the telegraph. We understand that an individual who squints is always preferred on this line, for the faculty of

looking two ways at once is likely to be useful to him in the discharge of his duty. This accounts for the numerous startling cases of strabismus one meets with along this line, but as motion is not quite so rapid as vision, it sometimes happens that the porters are destined to see danger in two places at once, without the possibility of avoiding it. A troop of railway acrobats for the service of the economically managed lines would perhaps be found useful, and if the porters could be trained up as Vauxhall Diavoli, to make rapid descents along the electric telegraph wires from station to station, they would be enabled to get from one part to another in time to be on duty almost at two places at once."—*Punch*, 1849; p. 12.

**Essex Dialect Words.**—An accident to a labourer here has brought to my notice a good old word of which, I am ashamed to say, I was ignorant. The man was going about with a bandaged eye, and told me he had got an 'ail' in it in threshing. I took him to say a nail, but fortunately an expert was by, and explained that an ail is a barley-beard. The word is an ancient one, as the following extract adapted from the Oxford English Dictionary shows:—

Ail (obs. or dial.) Forms, aile, eyle, egl, &c. O.E. Cognate with Germ. egel, agele. c. 1000. *O.E. Gospel*, Luke vi. 41. Hwi gesihst du ta egle on dines brodor eagan? (Why beholdest thou the mote in thy brother's eye?) 1578. Lyte, *Dodoens*, 461. 'The eares (of barley) be . . . set ful of long bearded sharpe ayles' 1787. Winter, *Syst. Husb.*, 310. 'Barley should likewise be . . . well shook in a sack by two men, to be cleared from ailes? [Still in use in the Eastern Counties.]

Another man told me he once met with the same mishap, but put an 'eye-seed' in his eye over-night, and in the morning the ail 'laid' on his eyelid. I think the 'eye-seed' thus used about here is gromwell seed (*Lithospermum Officinale*), which has, I suppose, a mucilaginous coat, to which the foreign body sticks. Mr. Britten, in *The Treasury of Botany* does not mention gromwell seed as having this property, but says that the seed of *Salvia Verbenaca* is so used. I find no mention of this virtue of either plant in Gerard, Dodoens—or Culpeper.

EDWARD GEPP, High Easter.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS.

*From Midshipman to Field Marshal.* By EVELYN WOOD, F.M., V.C., G.C.B., G.C.M.G. 2 vols., 24 illustrations and maps, pp. xiv. 322, vi. 299. Methuen and Co. Price 25s.

This book must add extraordinarily to the world-wide popularity of the author, who is to-day one of the most popular men in his native county of Essex. Already it is in a fourth edition, and that we are able to state this in our notice of it, brings some consolation for what might seem a rather delayed appreciation. But its publication in October, shortly after the issue of our last number, is responsible for this.

The book teems with thrilling interest at whatever page you open it. Whether it is the midshipman and aide-de-camp of seventeen leading a storming party up the terrible Redan; the soldier-lieutenant-interpreter, aged twenty-two, of Irregular Cavalry in India; the gay insouciant sportsman spending his few years of home service in Ireland or at Aldershot; or the colonel and major-general of Ashanti, Zululand, Egypt and the Sudan; it is the same open single-hearted nature that is displayed, courageous, danger-courting, yet full of sagacity, confidence and good judgment.

The habit begun in early life of keeping a diary has been of invaluable service to the author, and the stirring incidents of war, personal perils and loss of comrades, are told with the vivid pen of the eye-witness before time has dulled the recollection.

The style in which the book is written is before all things suited to the narrative, which carries the reader from point to point and disarms all criticism by coming from a man of deeds not words.

Sir Evelyn Wood was born at Cressing Vicarage on 9th February 1838, the youngest son of John Page Wood, vicar at that time of Cressing and rector of St. Peter's, Cornhill. His father succeeded to the baronetcy in 1843, removed to Rivenhall Place, which he rented from the Westerns, and did valuable service in the county as J.P., D.L., and chairman of the Braintree Board of Guardians. From one long associated with him there, the present writer has heard many a time the story of Sir John's deep emotion and pride when the news reached him of his youngest boy's distinguished action in the Naval

Brigade in the Crimea. Sir Evelyn's mother was Emma Carolina Michell, who came of a race of Cornish squires. After a somewhat troublous education at Marlborough (first at the Grammar School and afterwards at the College), the boy joined H.M.S. *Queen* on May 24, 1852; a few weeks later his uncle, Captain Michell, hoisted his pennant on the ship, and many are the tales his nephew tells of the peculiar austerity he displayed towards his young relative. Soon after his arrival in the Crimea, Wood bought a pony out of a drove from Asia Minor, a cheap purchase he says, although it cost £18, for it carried him through the campaign and lived till 1883, for the last few years of its life at Rivenhall. In the Crimea Wood made the acquaintance of Captain, afterwards Sir William, Peel whose well-meant intentions to save the boy's life were scarcely appreciated at the time.

While we were lying there [under the breast work of the Redan], Captain Peel sent me on five different errands, none being of any importance. On the last occasion, just at the false dawn, disregarding many bullets from the Redan, I walked straight across the open towards the Rear instead of going round by the zig-zags. Captain Peel then called me back, giving up the attempt to get rid of me. The author adds in a note:—He was anxious I should be saved from the fire we were about to encounter. This I only knew afterwards from a letter written to his brother the following day; at the time I was greatly irritated.

He was wounded, however, in the assault, and invalided home, only to begin immediately 'to worry my mother about returning to the Crimea.' In a week or two he was gazetted to the 13th Light Dragoons, and in January 1856 he started again for the seat of war. By March he lay in hospital at Scutari, so sick of typhoid and pneumonia, that his parents started for Constantinople with small hope of finding their son alive.

The account of the three years spent in India are full of interest, then follows the story of work at home at the Staff College, the romance of a faithful affection which survived much opposition, for the sister of a school friend, Viscount Southwell. The Southwell family being Roman Catholics, objected to Miss Southwell's marriage to a Protestant, objections were however finally overcome, after seven years the young couple were hastily married, as the bridegroom was on the eve of starting for the Abyssinian war under Lord Napier. The marriage was rendered possible by the kindness of Wood's brother-in-law, Sir Thomas Barrett Lennard, of whose life-long kindness the author

speaks in the warmest terms. For twenty-one years, Wood managed his Irish estate of about 9,000 acres at Clones.

Sir Evelyn's story of the South African war of 1878—1879, under General the Hon. F. Theisiger, afterwards Lord Chelmsford, is deeply interesting. Colonel Buller was operating in combination with him, and to his heroism a special tribute is paid. The story of the 'ride to death' up the fatal hill at Inhlobane, and the death of Lloyd, his interpreter, and Captain the Hon. Ronald Campbell, is crowned with a story of the latter which must be quoted to show how Wood was loved by his staff.

♣ Campbell had sat opposite to me for three months and had anticipated every want with the utmost devotion. As I visited the outposts at least twice every night from the date of Isandwhana till after Ulandi, July 4, my clothes were nearly always damp from walking through the long grass, which when not wet from the heavy rain which fell constantly through the months of February and March, was soaked with dew, and I had forbidden either of the staff accompanying me, because as we slept in our boots and clothes, anyone who walked round the sentries got saturated up to the waist-belt. I had, however, once or twice suspected that I was being followed, and one night, turning suddenly in the darkness, I knocked against a man and then recognised Campbell's voice, as he answered my challenge. I said sharply, 'Why are you disobeying orders, what are you doing here?' 'I always have the fear, sir,' he replied, 'that one night you won't hear the challenge of one of the sentries, and you will be shot.'

Throughout the narrative of this campaign in S. Africa, names of officers are constantly arising which, twenty years later, in the next S. African war, were to become household words, although at the time many of them were, of course, young men. Sir Evelyn himself volunteered to go out again in 1900, he even acceded to the proposal to serve under Lord Kitchener who had been a Lieutenant when he was a Colonel, but Kitchener with creditable courtesy refused the position, and eventually Sir Evelyn was able to do notable work at home as Quarter-Master-General and Adjutant-General.

The book contains some very entertaining stories of his dealings with the natives. A chief, on one occasion, asked to select a present to be sent from England, chose a tall hat, an umbrella and stick, and it was curious that several years later Sir Evelyn's son should accidentally discover the stick, with its inscription on a gold plate, still a valued possession of the recipient. Queen Victoria on several occasions commanded Sir Evelyn to Windsor and Balmoral; she requested him to conduct the Empress Eugénie on her sad expedition to see the

scene of the Prince Imperial's gallant death (eighteen wounds from assegais, all in front). Sir Evelyn's account of his share in the great funeral procession is highly interesting. One of the greatest charms the book possesses is its simple direct naïveté, equally noticable whether the author is telling of the actions which won him honour and promotion, of his early struggles as a poor man in an expensive profession, whose practice it was to avoid cards, alcohol and betting, or of the ridicule it sometimes brought about him. The reception accorded him each time when he came home to Belhus after a victorious campaign, and the County presentation of the Sword of Honour at Chelmsford on 14th October 1879, are related in the same way. Altogether it is a book that no one who wishes to follow the history of the last fifty years can afford to miss.

*The Great Revolt of 1381.* By CHARLES OMAN, M.A. With two maps (pp. viii. and 220) (med. 8vo.), Oxford Clarendon Press, 1906. 8s. 6d. net.

The need for another book on *The Great Revolt of 1381*, after the recent work of Edgar Powell, G. M. Trevelyan, Réville, Cunningham, and others, was not perhaps of a very pressing order. But Mr. Oman was already studying the subject for the *Political History*, material was ready to hand in considerable abundance, a detailed narrative is sure to find adherents, and it is always amusing to go over a time-honoured theme inch by inch with a powerful microscope.

The theory of the rising, it must be admitted, derives no special illumination from Mr. Oman's essay. The subject has been worked at to good purpose by economic historians, and very little room was afforded in which new speculation could play. Political causes played a much more important part than was held twenty years ago, when this rising was always contrasted with that of 1450. Contrasts are always convenient, especially in the 14th century, when there is so much that is very obscure. There seems little doubt now, and in this respect Mr. Oman only confirms the regular oracles, that the predisposing causes were mainly political. The long strain of the war, that *damnosa hereditas* of Edward III., the evil of its intoxicating effects, and the disorganisation and distress which were sure to follow in its wake, were just beginning to mak

themselves felt. It is rather significant, perhaps, that Kent, which least of all the shires, felt the evil of serfdom, but as the highway to the continent had been most demoralised by the traffic of the war, and had most suffered by the loss of trade with Guienne, Gascony, and Spain, should have taken, along with Essex (where labour troubles were much more rife), the chief part in both the start and maintenance of the revolt. Another grievance was the retention on the Council of John of Gaunt, a disagreeable reminder of the 'contract' and 'war office scandals' of the late reign.

The underlying causes were admittedly economic, and the social grievances, it is now fairly perceived, were neither homogeneous nor universal. They were, on the contrary, extremely local, various, and sometimes contradictory. They were not only the grievances of John Plowman against his lord, or the monastery with the wily abbot, who refused to grant or be bound by any charter; but also of townsmen in great numbers, who wanted a lever against their municipal oligarchies; of apprentices who wanted better wages and greater facilities to set up as masters on a small scale; and, not least, of corner-men and hangers-on, 'the scurf of the commonwealth,' as Bacon called such men, who looked with envy upon the prices of skilled labourers, and raised the perennial alarm against aliens and foreign traders sucking the blood of the country, and exporting gold and silver across the sea.

The old theory that the upheaval was, in some measure at any rate, religious, an early form as some surmised of Christian Socialism, receives no countenance in these pages. The mob were not delicately scrupulous about violating sanctuary or breaking into churches, but if they were not religious they were equally not anti-religious. There were no deliberate religious outrages. It is true that Archbishop Sudbury was done to death, but that was in his capacity as incompetent statesman, not as over-arrogant primate or churchman. A similar fate overtook Archbishop Scrope at Henry IV.'s hands, not as a churchman but as a rebel. The man whom good churchmen at this time most hated was John of Gaunt. And this same potentate (Wiclif's patron) was the chief butt of the hatred and menace and scorn of the insurgents. Clerks and Friars are frequently found among the leaders of the



rising. But it is clear that religion had nothing to do with the assault of the villein upon his manorial lord; of the unchartered townsman upon the local lord-abbot; of the skilled or unskilled labourers of the city upon their employers; of the urban democrats upon the urban oligarchs; or, finally, of the riverside mobs and neer-do-weels upon the foreign merchants. There can have been little of the secret socialistic conspiracy at work in those days, even though there may have been a few Cades and Tappertits who believed that a fifth monarchy or a levellers' saturnalia was at hand; or could gain credence for the assertion that in England seven half-penny loaves should be sold for a penny, or that the three-hooped pot should have ten hoops.

The ground-bass of the whole disturbance was to be found in the accentuated conflict of interest between landlord and labourer. The one constant factor in all discussions concerning 1381 is the recognised fact that the pestilence of 1349 and 1362 had permanently raised the price of labour. The villein or serf accordingly wanted to get quit of his *corvées* and customs, and enter the free labour market. The landlord wanted to coerce him to remain as he was, and to render the free market less enticing by enforcing a statutory wage. Here, as things proved, they were attempting a feat beyond their strength. But, meanwhile, the landless labourers, not a little enraged by these efforts, were determined to get a bit more than their legal pay. To effect these objects, both villein and free-labourer attempted every kind of combination or agricultural union against the lord and his bailiff. They often went so far as to get assistance from lawyers to prove that in Domesday Book their forbears were not entered as holding under base tenure, but as free men. But for the Black Death and the Statutes of Labourers, these differences might possibly have exhausted themselves in regular economic channels. These, however, brought about a stoppage in the circulation which led to catastrophe. The eventual emancipation of the villein was brought about, not by any revulsion of feeling, but by a purely economic process of evolution.

The immediate provocation, as André Réville clearly demonstrated, was fiscal. In November, 1380, owing to the extraordinary expenditure in the war, the Commons decreed a new Poll Tax at the rate of a shilling (3 groats) per head

through every township or parish in the country. To avert what seemed in their eyes immediate ruin, the villages in the South-East of England began with one accord to make false returns. We have the figures of many of these returns, which are not infrequently absurd upon the face of them (Mr. Oman's figures, by the way, do not always agree precisely with those of the pioneer investigator of the rising, M. Réville). The Government were much incensed by the inadequate returns and, in March 1831, they issued a mandate for a new tax-census. It was the inquisitorial work of these new commissioners which kindled the spark of insurrection. It first broke into flame, not in Kent, as the old fable alleges, but in Essex, in the marshland villages of Fobbing, Corringham, and Stanford. The commissioners were beaten and stoned out of these villages, and had to retire upon Brentwood in disorder. There on 2nd June, six men were killed in a tumult, and the mob broke out into plunder and riot, which were rapidly emulated on the south side of the Thames, though it is not until 7th June that we first hear of that 'enigmatic personage,' Wat Tyler. A new authority for the Brentwood riot is cited at length in a translation, made by the author of the 'Anonimal Chronicle of St. Mary's, York.' The French is, no doubt, difficult, though we may point out that variants of *sisour* (meaning *assizer*) are of almost every day occurrence in French documents of the period.

The narrative part of the book is excellent, as Mr. Oman's narrative nearly always is. The irruption of Kent and Essex insurgents into London, the panic which they caused, the two nights of terror and panic, the lootings and assassinations, the red fool-fury of the Thames, the sack of the Temple, the ugly murder of Sudbury, the young boy-king's promptitude in taking his life into his hands, and the extraordinary courage and resource that he showed at Clerkenwell, and after, all these things are most vividly described. The aimless character of the rising in West Norfolk comes as something of an anticlimax.

The book concludes with six appendices and two maps. The poll-tax returns of a typical hundred are given in appendix IV. ; and the hundred chosen is that of Hinckford in Essex. The disproportion of the sexes (at Felsted for instance there are 47 unmarried men to 10 unmarried women) and the disparity between the returns of 1377 and 1381 indicate the temerity with

which the latter returns were 'cooked.' Both figures and place-names, however, seem to need some checking. 'Alhamstone' and 'Bumstead' have a very ambiguous look, and should, of course, be Alphamstone and Bumpstead. The index references to Liston are erroneous. In the case of the parishes named in the poll-tax rolls, this difficulty is averted by the simple plan of omitting them from the index altogether.—TH. S.

In the 'Journal of the Bankers' Institute' for October 1906, pp. 319-330, Mr. Miller Christy has published an interesting article on 'The History of Banks and Banking in Essex,' for which he has collected a large amount of detailed information by means of personal inquiry. The article is the more interesting since the private firms of bankers bearing names long associated with the county have disappeared with their absorption into the larger amalgamated banks of Messrs. Barclay and Co. and the great joint stock banks of London. County banking in its embryo state was carried on, he tells us, by merchants or tradesmen whose business entailed a constant correspondence with a London banker or other financial agent. For the convenience of his friends or customers, the merchant negotiated their bills and drafts with his own; gradually this part of his business outstripped in importance the earlier calling, which was gradually abandoned, and he became a 'banker' pure and simple. This was the case with Richard and John Twining, tea dealers, of the Strand, and John Mills, tea dealer, of High Street, Colchester, who together commenced operations as bankers in Colchester about 1765, and who are generally regarded as the pioneers of banking in the county. Twinings retired from the local bank and were succeeded by John Bawtree, of Colchester, and the name became Mills, Bawtree and Co. This bank's stoppage in 1891 will be remembered.

By 1774 the bank of Crickett and Co. was established at Chelmsford, Maldon, and Colchester by a family of Flemish extraction, who had been established in Colchester since the end of the 17th century. They were joined by George Round, sen., of Lexden House, second son of James Round, of Birch, who was succeeded by his son George (d. 1857). This bank divided into two branches, at Colchester and Chelmsford.

A cheque form of the Chelmsford branch is here shown

CHEQUE FORM (Reduced).

No	Chelmsford Bank.	
— days	<i>N<sup>o</sup></i> <i>J. S. Crickitt, Menish, &amp; Crickitt</i>	
— 179 —	Pay to	— or bearers —
£	<i>£</i>	_____

Firm founded at Colchester about 1774. Became bankrupt on 24th December, 1825, during the Great Bank Panic. Traded at Colchester, Chelmsford, and Maldon.

(reduced). This branch was the first to collapse in the great bank panic of 1825-6, when three Essex banks failed within a week. On Christmas Eve, 1825, Crickett's Chelmsford Bank stopped payment, and the partners as well as many of their clients were irretrievably ruined. The Colchester branch was just able to weather the storm, and that chiefly by the spirited action of the Rev. William Marsh, D.D., rector of St. Peter's, who happened to have a considerable sum of money in his house, and who, hearing the state of affairs, promptly put it into a bag, and marched openly through a crowd of angry bystanders, to deposit it in the bank. Confidence was restored, and the bank was saved. The story is well told by Miss Catherine Marsh, the noble and philanthropic daughter of Dr. Marsh, in her life of her father (1867). After this crisis the bank was re-organised and its style became Round, Green, Green and Patisson; in 1891 it was Gurneys, Round, Green and Co., and in 1896 was absorbed by Barclay.

The bank of Sparrow and Co., which has so long held a prominent position in the county, was established at Braintree in 1803 by James Goodeve Sparrow, of Halstead, and three years later it extended to Chelmsford. The original partners were George Brown, Charles Hanbury, and Joseph Savill, besides Mr. Sparrow. Thomas Simpson joined them a few years later. The trade name of the undertaking was 'The Essex and Suffolk Bank,' which by 1830 had become 'The Essex Bank.'

Messrs. Sparrow were also affected by the bank panic, but not until the worst was well over; on February 27, 1826, they were obliged to suspend payment temporarily. At a meeting of creditors held at the Shire Hall, Chelmsford, on March 7, it was reported that the assets exceeded the liabilities by at least £18,000, while the separate estates of the partners were large, and the position, in spite of temporary embarrassment, sound. Business was re-commenced before long with a change of partners and title, and Sparrow's Bank has continued to our own time, although absorbed into Barclay's in June, 1896. Mr. W. Michael Tufnell, who died in March, 1905, had been connected with it since 1838.

It has always been a well-known fact that in former days, say at the beginning of last century, banking and brewing were

largely conducted by Quakers. These industries seemed then as much relegated to Quaker enterprise as the manufacture of biscuits and cocoa is now. Gibson's bank at Saffron Walden dates from 1825, when, on the suspension of Searle and Co.'s bank, the Gibsons, a family of successful brewers, highly esteemed there, were approached by the leading inhabitants of the town with a request that they would establish a bank for the public convenience in place of the one which had closed its doors. This, too, was amalgamated with Barclay's in 1896, a seat on the board being allotted to the senior partner, Mr. Edmund Burch Gibson, which he still happily fills. Barclay's now owns 36 branches or agencies in the county, or nearly one half of the Essex banks. The London and County Bank, Limited, owns 16; The London and Provincial Bank, Limited, thirteen.

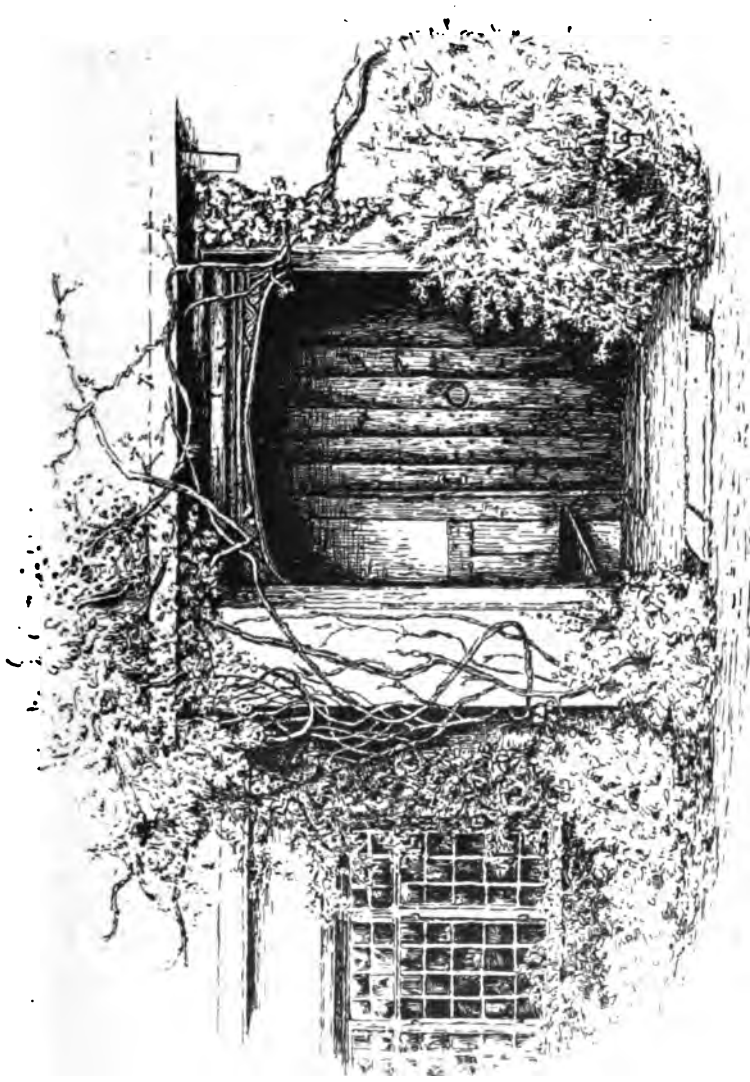
Mr. Christy traces the history of a Harwich banking firm established about 1780 by one Anthony Cox; afterwards it became Bridges, Cox and Godfrey, Cox and Knocker, Cox and Son; Cox, Cobbold and Co.; at the last designation the partnership remained for over 50 years. This bank passed unscathed through the panic years, and only on 1st January, 1899, altered its style to Bacon, Cobbold and Co., having joined the Ipswich bank of Bacon, Cobbold, Tollemache and Co. It then published a balance sheet for the first time. On 2nd January, 1905, it was absorbed by the Capital and Counties Bank, Limited, and one of the oldest Essex private banks then disappeared. Mr. Christy concludes his interesting paper by stating that the only private bank now left is the branch at Romford of Messrs. Hill and Sons, of London:

*Braintree and Bocking: A Pictorial Account of Two Essex Townships.* By MAY CUNNINGTON and STEPHEN A. WARNER. (With an Introduction by HERBERT J. CUNNINGTON. Illustrated with thirteen original illustrations in colour, others in wash, three from photographs, and forty-seven pen-and-ink drawings, by the Authors). (4to., pp. 55). London, Arnold Fairbairns. Price, 3s. 6d.

The perpetuation of local and decorative history by means of the arts of pictorial design is all too rare with us, in spite of

the facilities now afforded by the photographer's aid. To record the features and architecture of a place is a labour of love always, and seldom has the task been more piously performed than by the authors of this most attractive little volume. It must not be forgotten that they have set themselves to produce a 'Pictorial Account,' and not to write an exhaustive, and learned, and probably dry-as-dust history of all the past happenings of nine or ten centuries. For that these two townships have been of considerable importance since the Domesday Survey or long before, the authors have made abundantly clear. We could wish Mr. Cunnington in his introduction had told us a little more about the Bishop of London's palace on or near the Parsonage Hill, but his mention of the mystery plays of St. Swithip and St. Andrew, given in the Church about 1522, is extremely interesting. Unfortunately the old Vestry-book, from which a copy was made by Samuel Dale, of the expenditure incident to the production, has disappeared. Roman occupation of Braintree is illustrated by the reproduction of coins and urns from the collection of the Vicar, Rev. J. W. Kenworthy. From their situation at the intersecting point of two Roman military roads—*i.e.*, from Camulodunum (Colchester) to Verulamium (St. Albans), and from Bury St. Edmunds to London, the towns gained much renown. A vast number of important hostelries were seated on these old pilgrimage and coaching roads; some of them after became the workshops of Flemish weavers imported into England from the days of Edward III. 'The 'good and trewe Clothe' made at Bocking is referred to by Norden in 1594, and a certain woollen drugget or baize was long known as 'Bockings.'

The interesting set of bosses in the Jesus Chapel in Braintree Church are particularly well illustrated by Mr. Warner's drawings, as are the carvings in Bocking Hall, several houses in Bradford Street, the Woolpack Inn, and the Dial House. Carvings in Bocking Church are also selected with much taste to fill two pages in the latter section of the book. Nowhere does it appear that the credit of these very admirable and exact drawings, as well as those of the coins and iron work, are the work of Mr. Stephen Warner, who is also, we believe, entirely responsible for the letterpress. For Miss Cunnington's coloured sketches of the town of Braintree and its approaches, of houses



ROCKING HALL.—THE FRONT PORCH.



in Little Square, the Church from the Gant, and the Woolpack Inn, no praise can be too high. Bocking Mill and Church and the outlying cluster of houses which has almost attained a



CARVED FIGURE ON THE SIX BELLS INN, BRADFORD STREET, BOCKING.

separate entity under the name of 'Bocking Church Street,' are also capitally rendered by her brush. Their reproduction reflects great credit on the printers, and we have nothing but praise for the style and get-up of the book, its cover, and general appearance. Indeed, it appears little short of a marvel that so much taste and excellence can be offered for the very small sum of three and sixpence. We anticipate many objections to the way in which the coloured illustrations are inserted, by pasting the top only, but such critics may be reminded that the alternative of using a shiny, smooth paper for everything, is an execrable one, and moreover would not have suited the etchings. The drawings might, it is true, have been stuck down all over but this can be done without detracting from the appearance of the book. By the courtesy of the publisher we are enabled to reproduce two or three of

the pen-and-ink illustrations, in order that our readers may judge of the young artist's work.

Drawings of the Trade Tokens which were particularly

numerous from the tradespeople of the two towns are also capitally rendered by the same hand. A remarkable fact about them, noted by the author, is that the issuers were mostly Quakers, who formed a large colony of successful merchants and tradesmen in the neighbourhood. Two, however, out of the three he names in Braintree were issued by soldiers! One, bearing a pair of scales and a wheatsheaf, was issued by Abraham Ansell, of Bocking, Baker. This is not illustrated, nor do we learn the date. The name of Ansell does not appear in the index.



CARVING IN BOCKING CHURCH.

We may add a word of appreciation for the dedication to the memory of Mr. Augustus Cunnington, whose fine collection of Essex books, noticed in these pages (*E.R.* vol. xi., p. 245) has been used by the authors in the preparation of this volume. We notice they give a careful bibliography, but there is no list of illustrations, although the subjects are starred in the Index.

*Straw-Plaiting: A Lost Essex Industry.* By I. CHALKLEY GOULD, F.S.A.

This article has been reprinted from the *Essex Naturalist* (vol. xiv, 1906) in pamphlet form and contains much valuable




information of the straw-plaiting industry. Introduced in the end of the Eighteenth Century to the village of Gosfield by the Marquis and Marchioness of Buckingham, who then inhabited Gosfield Place, it spread in one or two directions in the County until handsome profits were made at a time when as much as 7s. a score yards of plait was received by the women engaged. Later on, the price paid sunk to 2d. and 3d. a score, until about 1890, or earlier, the industry died out completely, owing to the use of Japanese lighter-weight straw for hats. Some illustrations of straw splitters and bone 'engines,' roller, mill, and of the plait itself, add largely to the interest of the paper.

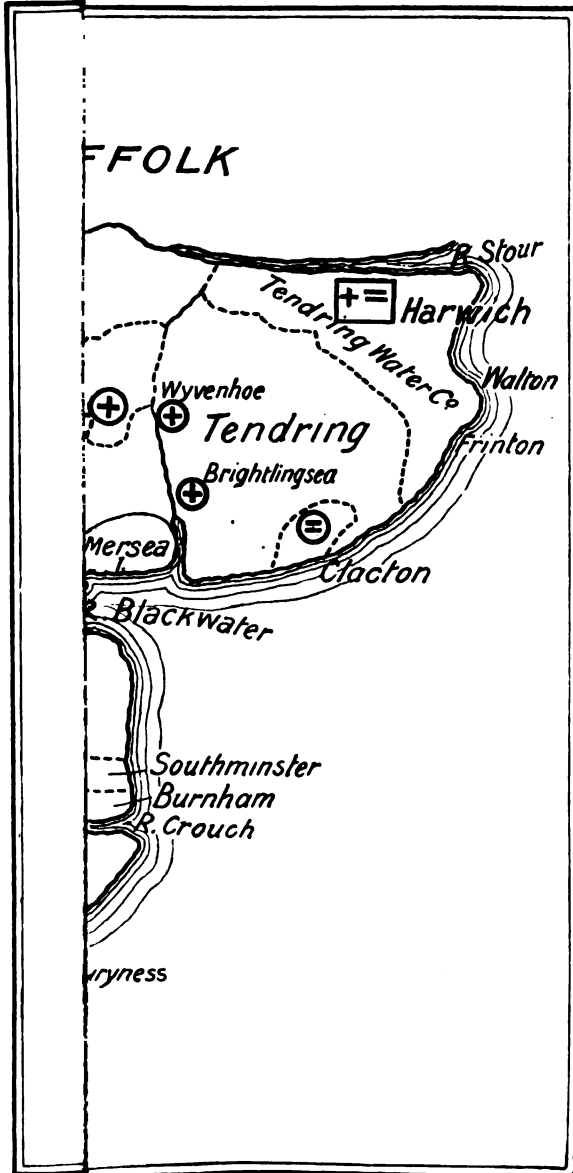
We have received a copy of a *Bodleian Guide*, by Andrew Clark, a small quarto book of 100 pages or more, capitally illustrated, and most readable and entertaining.

It is written by our valued contributor, Dr. Andrew Clark, who probably knows the great library as thoroughly as any man in Oxford. He has imparted to it a most pleasant flavour of history and archæology, stirred in so judiciously that the willing reader is never conscious of intentional instruction, much less of being personally conducted round historic buildings by a 'guide'; but rather that out of the abundance of his store, a pleasant companion, steeped in Oxford legend and history, chats to him the while he shows glimpses of the lore of books and buildings, till Thomas Bodley becomes anything but a name from out the past. The title seems a little colloquial. Why a 'Bodleian Guide,' and not a 'Guide to the Bodleian, or the Bodleian Library.'? Perhaps, however, the worthy aim to be informal is partly accountable for this. The little Handbook should become vastly popular, and have a long life before it.

A capital little illustrated booklet entitled *A Brief Statement of the Claims of the Borough of Colchester to be The Cathedral City for the Proposed Diocese of Essex*, issued by the Town Council of the Borough, has reached us. Much interest is felt in the question, and the county town naturally urges at least an equal claim. We believe nothing is yet settled, but in view of the rapid increase in population in South Essex and the fact that another division may some day be needed, Colchester appears to have a strong topographical as well as an irrefragable historical claim.

APPLIES.

  = Owned by the Sanitary Authority.  
 = Company.





THE  
ESSEX REVIEW:

*A Quarterly Journal for the County.*

---

---

No. 62.]

APRIL, 1907.

VOL. XVI.

---

---

THE WATER SUPPLY OF THE  
COUNTY OF ESSEX.

BY JOHN C. THRESH, M.D., D.SC., ETC.

*Medical Officer of Health for the County, Lecturer on Public Health, London  
Hospital Medical College.*

AT the present time the population of the county is about 1,300,000, and the amount of water required daily for this number of inhabitants is fully 20 million gallons. From what sources is this large amount of water derived? Primarily, this, of course, comes from the rainfall, but very little rain water is collected and utilised. There are no mountains or moorlands in the county from which the rain can be collected, and as practically the whole area is under cultivation, the water running off the surface into ponds and streams is always more or less impure. Streams and lakes form the most important sources of supply in very many counties, but these usually collect water from thinly populated areas in hilly districts where the rainfall is heavy.

In Essex the rainfall is very low, averaging only about 22 inches per annum, whilst on the western side of England, amongst the mountains of Wales and the Lake District, it may average three times as much. Few people realise the enormous amount of water which falls yearly. One inch of rainfall over an acre of ground amounts to 22,500 gallons. Taking the area of the whole county as one million acres, and the rainfall as 22 inches, the average quantity which falls in Essex must exceed 500,000,000,000 gallons, or seventy times more than is necessary to supply the whole amount of water required, for domestic, municipal and trade purposes. About one-third of this rainfall

2

runs off the ground surface; into ditches, brooks and rivers, and ultimately finds its way into the sea, another third is absorbed by the soil, and most of this reappears as springs, but much remains imprisoned in the earth and can be reached by sinking wells. The remainder evaporates and passes again into the air.

With one exception the rivers of Essex, or which bound Essex, are practically useless as sources of water. They are either very small and contain very little water during the summer, when most water is required, or they are tidal, and the water contains so much salt as to be useless for domestic purposes. The exception is the river Lee, which divides Essex from Herts. This river rises in the Chiltern Hills and brings down daily over 70 million gallons of water, of which the Metropolitan Water Board abstract nearly 50 million gallons for the supply of London and a portion of Essex. The river, traversing agricultural districts and receiving sewage effluents from numerous towns and villages, is quite unfit for drinking purposes until it has been purified. This is done by allowing it to undergo a natural purification whilst stored in enormous reservoirs at Walthamstow and elsewhere, and by submitting it to a very careful filtration before it is supplied to the consumers. The Water Board also obtain a large quantity of water from several deep wells in the county, at Waltham Holy Cross, Ilford and East Ham. As they take so much water from the county, it is only right that they should be compelled to supply a large portion of it with water; accordingly they are so compelled, by Parliament, to supply Walthamstow, Leyton, East Ham, West Ham, Wanstead, Woodford, Buckhurst Hill, Chigwell, Loughton, Chingford, Waltham Holy Cross, and a part of Ilford, a population of about 700,000. Hence all the more populous portion of the county is within the London water area, probably a very fortunate circumstance, though it must be remembered that if the Water Board ever spend millions of pounds in obtaining water from Wales, Essex will have to bear its share of the expense, notwithstanding that we have at our boundary a river which furnishes us with an abundant supply. The Lee Valley water is 'hard,' but with proper supervision of the river to prevent pollution, and efficient storage and filtration, it constitutes a perfectly wholesome water.

A large area in the south of the county is supplied by another water company, the South Essex Water Company. Its area of supply includes most of the Orsett and Romford Rural Districts, and the towns of Grays, Barking, Romford, Brentwood, and part of Ilford; thus all the populous areas in these districts are supplied. The water is derived from chalk wells at Grays and from a deep well, also in the chalk, at Romford. As the population of this area is increasing rapidly in population, the Company is seeking fresh sources of supply.

Another important water company is the Southend Water Company, which originally was formed to supply Southend with water from two or three deep wells in or near the town. The growth of population has been so enormous that the company has had to sink well after well at points between Fobbing and Southend. It has only been by the exercise of unceasing vigilance and great foresight that this company has been able to maintain an abundant supply of wholesome water. As their mains pass through a number of parishes, Fobbing, Vange, Pitsea, Bowers Gifford, Eastwood, etc., the company supplies certain of these and some adjoining parishes with water, greatly to the advantage of these areas.

In the north of the county is an enterprising company, the Tendring Hundred Water Company, which derives water from deep wells in the chalk at Mistley, and supplies many rural parishes in the Tendring Hundred, as well as the towns of Manningtree, Harwich and Dovercourt, Parkeston, Walton, and Frinton. The town of Clacton in this district is supplied with excellent and soft water from wells in the gravel beds at Great Bentley. The waterworks are owned by the town.

There is still another water company supplying water in Essex, the Herts and Essex Company, which obtains water from chalk wells at Sawbridgeworth, in Herts, and supplies it to the inhabitants of Epping, Harlow, Netteswell, North Weald, Theydon Bois, and Theydon Garnon. The mains also extend into the Ongar district to the Ongars, Bobbingworth, Lambourne, and Shelley.

Most of the towns in the county to which reference has not already been made have public supplies owned by the sanitary authorities, and nearly all derive the water from wells sunk into the chalk. This geological formation extends throughout the



whole county, the chalk coming to the surface in the North West around Saffron Walden. It dips towards the South and East, becoming so deep near Southend that borings 500 or more feet in depth must be made to reach it. Unfortunately, where it lies at a considerable depth it does not yield water very freely; hence, as has just been stated, several wells have had to be sunk to furnish sufficient water to supply Southend. There is also a great difference in the character of the water yielded by the chalk at different places. Where the chalk is near the surface or only thinly covered with other beds, the water is 'hard' and contains from 15 to 20 grains of chalk per gallon in solution; where the chalk is at a considerable depth, the water is very soft and contains only a few grains per gallon in solution. Near the coast many of the deep wells yield a brackish water due to infiltration from the sea, and in a few places elsewhere the chalk water contains magnesia salts, which make it too hard for use for many domestic purposes. At Grays and Purfleet there is a fault, and the chalk, which a little distance away is some hundreds of feet below the ground surface, comes quite to the surface and is quarried for lime and cement burning.

Saffron Walden, Stanstead, Halstead, Braintree, Chelmsford, Witham, Maldon, Burnham, Ingatestone, Brightlingsea, Wyvenhoe, Rowhedge, Leigh, and Shoeburyness are all supplied from chalk wells, but at Colchester and Chelmsford the supplies are supplemented from springs arising from local gravel patches. These gravel areas absorb the rainfall freely and give it up again in the form of spring water. Clacton is supplied from such a source, as also is Southminster and a number of other villages. Wells sunk in this gravel sometimes yield a fairly abundant supply.

Dunmow is the only town in the county which has not a public water supply.

In several rural districts the enterprise of the Local Sanitary Authorities has provided public supplies for a large number of parishes. In certain of these districts there are many miles of water mains, and the fortunate inhabitants of such parishes are supplied with water as good in quality and quantity as is enjoyed by the inhabitants of the towns. The Rochford Rural District Council have a deep well in the chalk at South Benfleet, and from this they supply the parishes of South

Benfleet, Hadleigh, Hawkwell, Rayleigh, Rochford, and Thundersley.

The Chelmsford Rural District Council collect water from gravel springs at Danbury and supply that parish, Little Baddow, East Hanningfield, Woodham Ferris, Rettendon, Runwell, and part of Sandon. In the same rural district there are water supplies laid on to the houses in Great Baddow, Springfield, Ingatestone, Great Waltham, and Little Waltham.

In the Maldon Rural District certain springs in Woodham Walter, fed by the Danbury gravel, supply Woodham Mortimer, Hazeleigh, Purleigh, Stow Maries, Cold Norton, North Farnbridge, Latchingdon, Althorne, and Mayland. There are smaller schemes supplying Tiptree, and also Southminster.

In other parts of the county water is chiefly derived from shallow wells. Upon consulting the geological drift map of the county it will be observed that a large area around Colchester and another round Danbury is covered with gravel, and in these and other more limited areas where gravel is found, water is usually easily obtainable from wells only a few feet in depth.

The large area comprising the Roothings, and lying between Chelmsford and the Saffron Walden Rural District, is covered with a fairly thick bed of boulder clay; this yields very little water, and such as is yielded is very hard, and occasionally has an odour of rotten eggs, due to a trace of sulphuretted hydrogen. In this area the problem of water supply is a difficult one, but by sinking through the boulder clay into the thin bed of sand beneath, water is generally obtainable sufficient in quantity to supply a farm or a small group of houses.

In Central Essex there is a large area on the exposed London clay, and here the greatest difficulty is met with in obtaining water. Rain water is collected from roofs, but in this county, with its low rainfall, the amount thus obtainable is limited, and rarely suffices for all the requirements of the house. Hence ponds and ditches have to be resorted to to supplement the supply. It is in this area, however, that certain Rural District Councils and water companies have provided public supplies; hence from being the worst supplied, many of these parishes on the London clay are far better off than most other parishes on the gravel.

The Essex County Council have taken a great interest in this

question of water supply, and in 1901, I prepared, at their request, a full Report on the water supplies of the county ; in 1905 the portion relating to the Rural Districts was brought up to date and re-issued. From these reports anyone interested in this important question can obtain information concerning every parish in the county ; the maps included in the reports (one of which is reprinted here) show all the water mains of the various water companies and local authorities.

On the whole, Essex is much better supplied with water than many parts of this country. It is quite true that, save the River Lee, there is no very abundant source of supply, but there is no part in which water is not obtainable, though in a few places it entails the sinking of deep wells.

As regards the quality of the water, there has undoubtedly been a great improvement in recent years, as the sanitary authorities are giving great attention to the construction of wells and the protection of springs from pollution. The provision of more public supplies with water mains ramifying through numerous parishes is greatly to be desired, and, probably, nothing would assist more in developing the county and increasing its prosperity. These supplies are especially requisite for the dairy industry and for the development of building estates. Probably, also more manufacturing industries would be established in the county, were better facilities for obtaining water afforded.

---

## CAMPING-OUT IN EPPING FOREST.

BY ARTHUR T. BABNARD.

**T**HE long winter evenings afford the nature-lover opportunities for reflection. The scenes he has visited again pass before him ; for is not imagination the power of realizing things that were, while the living movement of thought lightly touches the details until the whole is printed in colours and gold ?

So much has been written about our beautiful Essex forest that the attempt to say anything new about it would seem an ambitious venture. Nevertheless, many there are who see in this small bit of woodland those compelling charms incident to the wildness and freedom of nature, and we may suppose that

these worshippers at the sylvan shrine are ever ready to listen to a fellow-worshipper, especially when his speech moves along simple lines. He may have nothing original to tell them, no startling theory to offer and no wonderful discovery to announce. The chorus of birds at dawn is none the less welcome because it has inaugurated day through whole geological periods ; spring creeping over the hedges loses none of its loveliness because, as an institution, it is older than man himself, but the mere mention of these ever-recurring moods of nature, either in verse or prose,



*Photographed by*

THREE GENIAL VISITORS.

*[Stanley Barnard.]*

seldom fails of awakening the more tender human emotions. In like manner every reference to Epping Forest reminds us of pleasant hours spent in a cool fragrant atmosphere, collecting treasures, studying the minute changes of leaf and herb, or contemplating a wealth of foliage showing marvellous diversity in size, in shape, in tint.

The writer has had exceptional opportunities for observing the forest for two seasons. By the kindness of the authorities he has been permitted to camp within its precincts, and few

week-ends have passed when he has not availed himself of the privilege. Sometimes he has spent the night alone in or near the tent, but more frequently he has enjoyed the genial companionship of a few friends. On all occasions, except when rain has been actually falling or the temperature abnormally low, he has elected to rest outside the tent on a primitive bed of beech-leaves, regarding fresh air as the one dominating pleasure of life. His aim has been insensibly to acquire a general idea of the forest the twenty-four hours round, and through all the changing



*Photographed by*

EPPING ROAD.

*[Stanley Barnard.]*

seasons; an idea that should include everything, from the myriad of transparent creatures in the several pretty ponds to the dome-shaped sky enclosing the landscape, not omitting the graduated richness of sunrise and sunset, and the kaleidoscopic colour scheme, never really absent—only partially obscured on the darkest night.

The mist-veiled quietude of this most primitive part of Essex about 3 o'clock on any summer morning, the trembling stars, the chill air, the beads of moisture hanging in profusion everywhere, the fixed still galleries of gnarled and lichen-stained

trunks, the chastened tones of green and brown seen in a feeble light, and the perfume of the bracken suggestive of apple orchards—these resolve themselves into a mystic grandeur, possessing a high interest for the nature-lover. The pageant of day has begun anew, and is already silently and rapidly proceeding. The thick blue haze which encircles the forms melts away. The sun peeps above the horizon, and every glade is instantly flushed with brightness. The tiny beads of moisture shoot out a thousand rays, and there is a burst of eloquence from our feathered friends.



*Photographed by]*

THE WAKE POND.

*[Stanley Barnard.*

On the way to the sun-lit pond for the morning dip the white fluffy tails of the rabbits go bobbing off in every direction, and in all probability a glimpse of the deer, going in single file towards Monk Wood, will be obtained ; at any rate, that is the one desire of the photographer of our party at the moment. A glance at the photograph of our bath shows it to be a mirror nestling among tall trees, with a luxuriant growth of greenery about its moist margins. That mirror has imparted a lustre to the writer's memory which can never be dimmed, and sundry

small bottles at home in his study contain curious creatures fished from its depths, more tangible mementoes of the many very agreeable visits to the Wake Pond.

The kettle is singing on the camp-fire when we return to the tent. Our table is 'the unplanted forest floor'—one grand bespangled expanse at this early hour. A waterproof ground-sheet is first spread out and upon it a snow-white cloth. Some of our party, indeed, provide themselves with finger-napkins, although there is on every hand an abundance of clean crisp beech leaves. These interesting people are solving a problem, 'How to transport civilization into the midst of a primitive thicket.' Breakfast goes forward to the tune of a singular medley of notes—chirps, calls, trills, and warbles; petulant little showers of leaves fall, some coming to rest in the coffee and others on the butter; a sly current of air carries the smoke from the wood-fire full tilt upon us, and we are subjected to a yellow peril when the wasps discover our jam. But there is a sort of heartiness and antique quaintness about taking one's breakfast in the maze and tangle of Epping Forest at 5 a.m. that amply compensates for the levity of air-currents and buccaneering wasps.

So trivial a matter as the sound of wheels on the Epping Road is sufficient to break up the breakfast party. Our photographer, endowed with beautiful traits of imagination and a real love for his camera, is off to secure the first picture of the day, and the others, not guessing the source of his inspiration, follow at a distance. This courtesy, by the way, is always jealously observed among us; not that it is necessary when a cart is to be stalked, but the nimble and alert inhabitants of Epping Forest, his common quarry, if they are to display some of their rogueries and waggeries in the finished picture, *do* require that a high degree of deference in respect of silence and distance be accorded to the knight of the camera.

Once abroad there need be no unseemly haste in returning. The breakfast table generally merges imperceptibly into the dinner table, and this again into the tea and supper tables—unless a lady happens to be of our party, when this neglect and a few other unconventionalities may not be tolerated. We are perpetually on the tip-toe of expectation that something novel will turn up, and the more prosaic duties of life are, therefore, practically disregarded.

The rural divinities, the subject of another illustration, had presumably passed a somewhat restless night ; for their lowing through the hours of darkness had caused us a little anxiety. They will on occasion, perhaps charged with some romantic import, or, perhaps, merely with a view to alleviating an irritation of their noses, explore the tent pegs and ropes, a proceeding undesirable to the sleeping inmates. But now, in the early hours of the morning, they have come to rest on one of the uplands in the neighbourhood of High Beach, assuming a lofty indifference to the outside world, including all tent-dwellers.



*Photographed by*

RURAL DIVINITIES.

*[Stanley Barnard*

We are inspired by an admiration for liberty, and before the day is far advanced each is making longer or shorter excursions through the tangled thickets, along the tortuous glades, or to the gem-like garden of some open space. Unfortunately, the hours are provokingly brief, but some amends are made when we display our treasures and talk over the events of the day round the camp-fire after night-fall. One will exhibit something small and fierce in the insect line ; another, a curious fungus taken from some old-world stump. One of the group will speak



eloquently of the evanescent light effects witnessed by him on the brow of a low hill. How the sun, glinting upon the new bracken-scrolls, touched their tips with unburnished silver! The mellow effects produced in Debden Slade as the sun went down in the west! How, on passing the top of a certain avenue, the vista came to an end in a dark bank of furze lightly bricked with pure gold! In a word, the day is rounded off pleasantly enough by clothing a body of incidents in a garment of language.

---

## BURIED TREASURE AT BEELEIGH ABBEY.

BY REV. A. CLARK, LL.D.

FOLK-LORE tales have long and deeply impressed on the popular imagination the possibilities of the existence of, and the recovery of, treasures buried in the earth. We still read of gropings in the mud of Tobermory Bay, off the island of Mull, in the hope of coming across the pay-chests of the Spanish Armada; of ships, financed by joint-stock adventurers, sailing to fish for the wrecked gold of Paul Kruger on the African coast; of noblemen's yachts combining the placid amusement of visiting the summer islands of the Pacific with the excitement of searching for hoards hidden by buccaneers.

Just after the dissolution of the monasteries it was natural that the country should be full of speculation of this sort. These monasteries had been thought to be immensely rich; they proved to be on the verge of, or over the verge of, insolvency. The popular mind refused to accept the plain and obvious explanation, that the last penny had been squeezed out of monastic treasuries to supply Henry VIII.'s reiterated demands for money to defray the charges of a wasteful court and ruinous wars. Some other cause had to be assigned for the disparity between expectation of wealth and the result. What more natural than to accuse the monks of providing against the evil day by bundling plate and moneys into great chests and burying them secretly and safely out of the spoiler's reach.

At Pleshey, even at this day, you may hear a long story of a

great iron-bound chest of treasure, sunk in the mud of the castle moat. It was cast there at the destruction of Pleshey College. It has once seen the light of day since, when it was being pulled out by a strong team of horses. But the rope broke, and the chest rolled back into the turbid water, was quickly swallowed up by the soft mud, and there it lies.

Maldon Sessions Book in Elizabeth's reign furnishes us with the details of a similar story. Here two things receive attention, the legal and the legendary. By the law the finder of a hid treasure would benefit little, owing to the claims of the Crown and the lord of the manor. The story recognises this point and provides a licence from the Queen to search for the treasure and keep a good part of it. Next, the difficulty was to decide where, in the whole bounds of the monastic demesne, to begin spade-work. But superstition had its resource. By conjuration, by magic signs and words of power, the demons might be compelled to reveal the secrets of the earth. The great conjurer of the age was Dr. John Dee. In the village where he lived 'the children dreaded him because he was accounted a conjurer.' Tales ran from mouth to mouth how he had put a careless laundry-maid in the way of recovering the basket of linen she had mislaid; how he had helped a great lord to recover his stolen carriage-horses; how, by following his instructions, a man had found a heavy wedge of gold in a pond in Wales. His fame had spread to Muscovy, and the feeble-minded Czar Feodor, and the all-powerful minister, Boris Godunof, had joined in tempting him, by promise of great pensions, to transfer his talents to the Russian Court. So naturally Maldon treasure-seekers hankered after the aid of Dee's curious arts.

It was all very well to imagine such possibilities, but the man who ventured to speak of them came within the grip of the law. The Statute of 1563 (5 Elizabeth, chapter 16) was expressly directed 'agaynst Conjuracions, Inchantments, and Witchcrafts.' When Maldon authorities, therefore, found that there was talk of such things in the borough, they were bound to take action. This is the record they have left.

March 29, 1591, George Oder, landlord of the White Hart, Maldon, deposed that on March 20th there were in his inn, over a friendly glass, John Mace (a Queen's messenger),

Thomas Badcock, and Edmund Hunt, another Maldon innholder. Mace asked whether Badcock were a learned man, and Hunt replied that Badcock was a 'prettie scholar.' Hunt then opened his mind as to what he thought learning might lead to. 'Entring into some speche concerning conjuryng,' he said that he 'is, and longe tyme hath bene, trobled in his mynde towchyng moneye that shoold be hydd in the grownde, and that he hadd been often tymes called and trobled in the nyght tyme therabouts, and yett can not be qyett for the same; and that he knew where hit did lye.' Oder asked Hunt why he 'didd not make it knowen vnto some magestrats, that it myght come to light.' Hunt asked Oder, no doubt in a whisper, whether Mace, being Queen's messenger, could obtain a licence to search. 'It may be he can,' Oder replied, 'aske yow hym.' Hunt, turning to Mace, said, 'Yow may be a better scholler than wee are aware off'; and produced two pieces of parchment 'wherein were wrytten manye crosses, carrackts [=characters], and strange names.' Mace compared them, and saw that they were both alike. He then gave 'th' one agayne vnto Hunt, and, kepinge th' oder,' said, 'This is straunge geare in dede.' Hunt was 'verye earnest' to get back the second parchment, but Mace refused to give it up, 'sayinge—he was the Queen's man, and woold keepe ytt.' Two days later Hunt, with Badcock, was again at the White Hart, and told Oder that he had the parchment 'of a scholar at Wytham' (*i.e.*, Witham).

The magistrates at once got the parchment from Mace, and sent for Hunt.

March 30, 1591, Hunt told his story:—

'Beinge long tym trobled in his mynde towchinge money that shold be hydd about Byelie, and desyrous to be resolved concernynge the same, about Septembre last, he, meetinge with one Thomas Collyne at Woodham Walter, disclosed his mynde vnto Collynne, and how he was trobled. Collyne bade him goo to the place, and to bringe a pece of the yearth there vnto hym. Within a moneth after, he went to Byelie, and tooke a pece of the yearth, and went to Collyn with it to Cheppyngge Ongar. Whervpon Collyn tooke the peece of yearthe, and said that he woold carrye it to Doctor Dee, and, yf he shold iudge to be any money there, that then Doctor Dee

would make suite to the Quene's maiestie to have a lycens to dygge and seeke for the same.' Collyne 'being called awaye out of the chambre where they was [*sic*] talking,' Hunt, 'spyng a certen parchment wrytten full of crosses, carrects and strange names, tooke yt pryvelie and brought it away with hym :' which is the 'parchement wrytten with crosses, carrects, and strange names' declared by George Oder. Hunt showed the parchment 'vnto his sonne of th'age of xxiiii<sup>th</sup> [four-and-twentie] yeres,' and he told him that it was 'nought, and cōwncelled hym to put hit awaye.' He showed the parchment to Mace only 'to aske hym whether he could tell-what it was, and wherto it tended.'

Hereupon Hunt was bound over in £20 to appear at next Sessions to answer to the accusation of practising conjuration, contrary to statute. I fear that the sequel of the story is lost.

---

## THE GROCERS COMPANY IN CONNECTION WITH ESSEX.

WRITTEN AND ILLUSTRATED BY STEPHEN A. WARNER, B.A.

**T**HIS famous Company, like many another institution of to-day, can trace back its history to a very small beginning, and although it has never been definitely connected with any particular part of the country, except, of course, the City of London, it may be of interest to glance at its records and note in passing such references to Essex as can be found.

So far back as 1180 the 'Gilda Pipariorum' or Guild of the Pepperers is set down in the Pipe Roll as 'adulterine,' *i.e.* formed without formal acknowledgment by the King, and is accordingly fined 16 marks. During the thirteenth century, owing to its close connection with Italian and Lombard merchants, it gradually gained importance. In 1221 it supplied in Andrew Bokerel the Lord Mayor of London; in 1316 the Grocers appear as the 'Pepperers of Soper's Lane,' near Walbrook, gathered round the Church of St. Antholin or St. Antony, a Lombardic saint, whom they had taken as their patron in consequence of his early followers having been traders between England and the East. About 1240, and again in 1255, John de Gisorz, a member of the guild, and Lord Mayor, is mentioned in the Feet

of Fines for Essex in connection with property in Stisted, Halstead and Belchamp William (? Walter). He was of the Pisan family of Gisorio. In the year 1309 there is a mention (in the City Records) of one Luke de Havering, and ten years later an important Essex name appears, namely, Hammond de Chiggewell or Chikwell, six times Lord Mayor of London. At this time also they had charge of the King's beam or 'magna statera' for weighing goods by 'aver-de-poys,' or, as the Venetians called it, 'peso grosso.' There can be little doubt that the name of 'Grossarii,' which in 1328 they had adopted as a kind of trade name, was derived from this.



FIG. 1.—ARMS OF THE GROCERS COMPANY  
(On a boss in Braintree Church).

Towards the middle of this century Edward III., on the failure of his Florentine bankers—the Bardi and Peruzzi—turned more than ever to his own subjects for the wherewithal to replenish a purse ever being emptied by Continental wars. This privilege of becoming a creditor of royalty was neither eagerly sought nor easily evaded, and it was for this reason, most probably, that the Guild of the Pepperers, in 1345, put themselves under the protection of the powerful Abbot of Bury St. Edmunds. Hitherto they had been merely a guild of traders, but the times being troublous, and the prospect of royal exactions imminent, they thought it best to band together for

greater security, and so, at their first meeting in the 'Abbot's place of Bury,' they formed themselves into the Fraternity of St. Antony, ordaining that no one should be a member 'unless he be of good condition and of their mystery, that is to say, a Pepperer of Soper's Lane, canvas dealer of the Ropery, or Spicer of the Chepe. . . . And at his entry he shall pay at least 13s. 4d. sterling or the value.' They started with a membership of twenty-one, including two wardens, or masters, who held office for a year, and on retiring elected new masters according to the ordinance which bade them come 'with two chaplets and place them on the heads of two others of their company, whomsoever it shall please them'—the aforesaid chaplets being circular pieces of metal, about four or five inches high and richly chased, with two crossed straps to form a sort of crown. One of the earliest members was Nicholas Chancer, a relative of the great poet; and in 1356 John Bovyndon, possibly connected with Bovingdon, near Bocking, was made warden.

Owing to a small gap in the records, the first time the Fraternity appears as the Company of Grocers is in 1373, though that title had probably been assumed somewhat earlier; in the same year among a list of members may be found, the above-mentioned John Bovyndon, Thomas Bouyngdone (spelling is somewhat inconsistent), Sire Robert Yllerika (? Billericay), and Matthew Passeleu. This last name, found later spelt Passelow, is probably connected with that of the family who lived at Dagenham from about this time, at the manor of Parsloes (*Trans. Essex Archaeol. Soc.* n.s., vol. ix., p. 431).

The headquarters of the Company were in Bucklersbury, then called Bokerel's Bury, *i.e.*, the residence of Bokerel, descended from the Boccherelli, a Pisan family, for which they paid a rent of 33s. 4d. during this period. It was in 1385, after having obtained the management of the second weighing beam, or 'speciaria,' *i.e.*, the Tron, or Troy Weight for small goods, such as precious metals and small spiceries, although, curiously enough, including wool, that they moved both the weighing machines to Bucklersbury, and now had a special charge and title as 'Keepers of the King's Weigh-house.' They also had the important office of Garbelling or Cleansing Groceries to ensure purity, chiefly of pepper and spices.

In their dual capacity of Weighers and Garbellers they had

extensive powers, which they frequently exercised in the carrying out of their duties, such as the right to enter and search shops, impose fines for deceits and even to imprison, while stringent provisions were laid down as to weights, and the amount of moisture to be allowed in goods brought to be weighed. An entry in the accounts of 1386 says: 'Item given to Douston, Sergeant of the Chamber, for searching of weights throughout the city, 3s. 4d.'

The following are a number of entries relating to Essex drawn from their accounts, and lists of members:—

1387. Johan Chemylsford is a member.
1393. Herri Parmentere, Johan Hydyngham, and Thomas Pateswyk are members. (These names recur at intervals during the next twenty years or so).
- „ Item paid to Robert Chapman, of Kogsale (Coggeshall), for cloth which amounts to £31 13s. 6d.
- „ Item paid to John Hend for 13 cloths of Ray sum of £27 6s.\*
1399. Item paid to John Hende for 13 cloths of Ray which amounts to £30 os. 13d.
- „ Another payment to the same man for 'white ray.'
- „ Payment by Masters of the Grocers to one Robert Coggysball, draper, £37 14s. od.
- Thomas Rothing (? Roothing) is a member.
1405. Item paid to Elys Bockynge, draper, of London, for 67 yards of medley at 4s. the yard . . . . sum of £13 8s. od.
- Another payment for 100 yards of medley to the same man.
- „ Received from T. Marche, of Colchester, for making him free . . . . sum of 13s. 4d.
1408. Item paid to Robert Chapman for 95 yards of green (cloth) . . . . £14 3s. 8d.

This is, probably, the man mentioned ten years earlier.

They are constantly buying 'verdulet' which would imply that green was the colour of their livery at this time.

1413. Item we have received of P. Mannok for one Fyne sum of £10 (he is mentioned again later).
1416. John Pattiswik is fined £4.

Some time previously there had been this entry:—'Item, we have received from divers persons of this mistery fines for powders which were found illegal.' This man seems to have been a great offender, for he was repeatedly being fined 'for

\* This was probably Sir John Hende who, as the Rev. T. H. Curling informs me, was Lord Mayor in 1391 and 1404, and a great benefactor to Coggeshall Abbey. He died in 1418, seized of the Bradwell-juxta-Coggeshall estate, a nunnery in White Roothing, land at Wrabness, and other property).

pepper,' *i.e.*, for adulterated pepper, or similar reasons, and in 1431 his shady tricks resulted in the Company having to pay compensation to one Walter Couper, a chapman, of York, for 'peper fausly medlyed par Pattiswik.' It is odd that for this he should have escaped with so light a fine as 40s., but he was doubtless made to repay the Company the amount of compensation in addition.

1419. Payment to Swayne de Cogsale and to him for blue cloth . . . ,  
sum of £35 4s. 3d.\*

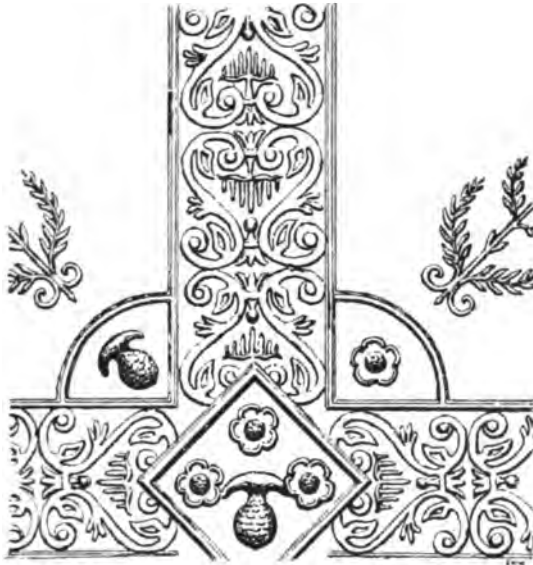


FIG. 2.—ORNAMENTAL CEILING  
(In Great Square House, Braintree).

1419. Willelmus Sporhawk [a North Essex name] is a member.  
1420. Item to W. Essex for dying . . . . sum of 43s. 8d.  
1422. Received, for entries of divers Folk to our livery, of [among others]  
John Paschelew.  
1423. Johan and Edmond Hedyngham are members.  
1428. Philipe Mannok 'in Essex' and Richard Passelow are members.

For the next five years or so no fresh Essex names occur and after that time the documents are almost entirely filled with the wardens' accounts of expenses in connection with repairs,

\* These allusions to Coggeshall show how thriving must have been the woollen industry there in those days.



periodical dinners, regular attendance at Stourbridge Fair, and city functions.

The archives of the company, from which these notes have been gathered, have only been reproduced in facsimile and transcribed down to the year 1462, and therefore from that date details are not easy to obtain. The company itself continued to flourish in spite of calls upon its funds by Queen Elizabeth and very heavy drains on its resources during the Civil War. In 1626 an Alderman of the City of London named John Hawkins, was a member of the Company and an inhabitant of Braintree. He lived in the imposing house in Great Square, the red brick front of which he may possibly have added himself to the older building which may still be seen at the back. Like his company he was very well-to-do, and the remains of a stucco ceiling in the interior of the house, a drawing of which is given here, point to sumptuous furnishing in former days. A tablet in the chancel of the church perpetuates his memory. In the south chancel aisle of the same building, erected about 1535, there is to be seen a wooden boss (see Figure 1) in the roof, bearing the company's arms, a chevron between nine cloves, three, three, and three, and possibly commemorating the beneficence of John Hawkins' ancestors. An Essex name figures very prominently in the year of the Restoration, namely that of Sir Thomas Alleyn, of Hatfield Peverel, who was a member of the 'mystery' and Lord Mayor of London. He obtained a great distinction for the company by inducing Charles II. to be enrolled as a member; this, however, is but one item in the brilliant history of a company which is said to have supplied a hundred Lord Mayors to the city and reckoned five kings among its members.

An election poll of the livery in 1700 gives the two well-known Essex names of Sir John Houblon and Samuel Lethuleire (as it is there spelt), Esquire.

It may be of interest to note in conclusion, that, according to Boyne, twenty-three Essex Trade Tokens bear the arms of the Grocers' Company.

## OLD SCHOOL AT WHITE ROOTHING.

A PHOTOGRAPH of the very picturesque old thatched house built about 1812 in the village of White Roding for a school, has been kindly contributed by Miss E. Rolleston,



[Miss E. Rolleston.]

SCHOOL HOUSE: WHITE ROOTHING.

Photographed by]

of Little Laver Hall, to whom we are indebted also for the few particulars that she is able to glean about its history.

The school stands very near to the Rectory, and, as may be seen in the illustration, close upon the road, being obviously built upon waste land beside it, which has since been enfranchised or

made freehold. The cost of the original building, as appears from the register book of the parish, was £338 4s. 2d., a sum raised by subscription between the years 1812 and 1819, when the Rev. Henry Budd was rector. The centre portion of the building formed the teacher's cottage, and at either end was a schoolroom for boys and girls. The school was opened in 1813 and remained in use until closed on the building of the new schoolroom about 1875. The cottage has been inhabited up till quite lately, and one of the class-rooms is still used for a Sunday School, although it is understood to be greatly in need of repair.

## A YEOMAN'S COMMON-PLACE BOOK AT THE COMMENCEMENT OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY.

BY J. C. SHENSTONE.

**M**OST of our ancient documents, though affording us records of notable events and of dates, would be but dry skeletons, were it not for correspondence, manuscript diaries, and such papers, which are occasionally unearthed, and which enable us to clothe our skeleton with flesh and inspire it with human life.

Mr. George Page, a yeoman farmer, of Fingringhoe, in Essex, recently lent me an interesting common-place book, kept by his grandfather, from whom the ownership of his farm had descended, also a printed volume,\* upon the fly-leaf of which some notable events are recorded.

The notes date from 1773 to 1830, or thereabouts, a most interesting period in our national history, and as many refer to the military events of that period, I will first deal with the more interesting of these entries. They record more particularly the

\* This book is a quarto volume of 152 pages and twenty-four copper-plate engravings, (specially engraved for it, but unsigned), which appears to have been issued in parts, and bound for the purchaser. It is *The Life of our Blessed Lord, containing his Genealogy, the Lives and Sufferings of Apostles, Evangelists and Martyrs, with a full defence of Christianity, etc.*, by Rev. John Fleetwood, D.D., published by the King's Authority, London, 1772, printed for J. Cooke, at Shakespear's Head, Paternoster Row. On the fly-leaf is this entry:—Dec. 24, 1773. This book was taken in this year by Benj. Page and paid for by numbers at sixpence per number and contained six numbers and coast (sic) four shillings to be bound at this time. The whole coast was £0 16s. 6d. Benjamin Page. His Book. Whether this was father or son does not appear, but Benjamin Page, senior, died Dec. 10, 1796, age 72; another entry tells us about a son of the same name.

local preparations which were made for giving the French a warm reception, in the event of a threatened invasion being attempted.

For many years those living near the east coast were inspired with great terror lest this invasion should take place, and in the days of my youth my older friends often recounted the nights which they spent in fear and trembling, when false reports arrived of the landing of the enemy. At that time, and for long afterwards, nurses never failed to threaten naughty children that 'Bony' would come after them unless they at once behaved themselves. The entries in this old book and in the common-place book give a fairly detailed account of the military preparations made to repel the threatened attack, and also much of interest as to the passing of troops to and from the continent.

Those who have visited the East Coast of England will recall the peculiar structures, known as Martello Towers, lining the coast at regular intervals. These towers were erected for the purpose of repelling the French in the event of their trying to land on our eastern counties. They have long since been relegated as coastguardsmen's shelters, or for similar purposes. The defensive steps recorded in these pages, like the Martello Towers, appear quaint and curious in view of the modern developments of our implements of war.

1798. April 3rd. At a meeting of the principal inhabitants of the parish of Fingringhoe, held for the purpose of taking into Consideration the most effectual means of preserving of the property and drawing of cattle and stock of all kinds away from the coasts, and likewise destruction of Mills and ovens, and the felling of trees across the Roads to prevent and annoy as much as possible an invasion threatened by our most inveterate enemies the French, T. J. Page was appointed to see the destruction of Mills and ovens, and likewise to see to the marking of cattle, and that the utmost precaution is taken to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy. Edward Wade, jun., was appointed Captain of 25 men for felling trees, and Tom Jaggard over other 25 men, Steward King and P. Stone, conductor of Waggon and Carts, and John Cooper, inspector of Waggon, etc. L. Stone and John Archer are appointed to assist in the destruction of Mills and Ovens, etc.

I might perhaps here remind our readers that the coast of Essex is bordered by extensive marshes, separated from one another by deep dikes; it is also worth noting that the network of Essex roads, bordered by high hedges, was recently

found to afford great difficulties to the invading forces in some military manœuvres carried out in this county. Not only did parties of soldiers find difficulty in discovering their routes, but high hedges, in a comparatively flat country, afforded excellent cover for the defensive forces. Blocking of roads by the felling of trees would no doubt have added considerably to the difficulties of the invading forces, whilst the difficulty in obtaining food in those days of small transport vessels must have been a serious hindrance. The entries in the common-place book continue the narrative of this exciting period.

1799. Sept. 16. The first regiment of Dragoons began to pass through Colchester in division in their rout to be embarked for Holland to join Abercrombie.\*

The eleventh Regiment marched through this place (Fingringhoe) to shoot at targets on Mr. Cooper's marsh.

Oct. 7. Defeat of English under the Duke of York here recorded.

From the 24th to the 31st the wounded men began to arrive at Colchester Barracks. The first that came landed at Mystley Thorne, the others some landed at Wivenhoe, and the remainder at the Hythe. They consisted of upwards of 1,200, the greatest number of which were wounded in the battle of the 19th, the rest were ill of agues, etc.

Nov. 9th. This day, and for several days preceding, different regiments came to Colchester and then marched to their different winter quarters, which troops had been on the continent with the Duke of York, where they suffered considerable loss both in killed and wounded. The remains of the different regiments which arrived at Colchester were in a most deplorable condition, some without shoes and stockings, and almost every necessity that is wanting to equip a soldier.

The next record that I shall quote gives us a graphic account of the parish rejoicings which took place when peace was made between Great Britain and France. These rejoicings, when compared with the rejoicings in this country at the time of the Boer campaign, afford us a fine contrast between the different social condition of the country at the beginning and at the end of the nineteenth century.

1801. Oct. 14. This day much rejoicing took place here on account of a peace being made between Great Britain and the French Republic. The morning was ushered in by ringing of bells and firing of canon, and the tops of houses and other conspicuous places was decorated by flags of various devices. Two large booths were erected on the

\* Sir Ralph Abercrombie (1734-1801), the famous General, sailed for Holland with 10,000 men, on 13 August, 1799, as Commander-in-Chief of the army about to recapture Holland from the French; he was superseded by the Duke of York, under whom the attack on Bergen op Zoom, October 2 and 20, failed.

green, and to add to the general festivity a bullock was roasted whole, filled with potatoes, and a great deal of beer with other liquors was given to the populace all at the expense of John W. Cooper, except 2½ bushels of flour, which was the gift of John Jaggard of this place, which was made into puddings and dumplings, and a quantity of carrots and potatoes given by myself, and also a hogshead of good beer by John Bawtree, Esq. It was supposed that the number of people of all descriptions assembled was not less than fifteen hundred, upwards of seventy lbs. of gunpowder was fired away, with an abundance of fireworks of different sorts.

The beef was intended to be cut up and divided between the inhabitants of this parish, but as soon as it was begun to be divided the mob broke in and took it even off the plates of those gentlemen that were eating it. Some of the most resolute of the rabble got large pieces, whilst numbers was not able to procure a morsel.

A large furnace was erected near the hedge opposite the Whalebone by Barton, of Wivenhoe, the bullock was put to the fire about 12 o'clock last night, and taken up between five and six o'clock this afternoon, and considering the cooks, which consisted of the greatest part of the lower order of people in the parish, it was very well drest, but not a seat could be found in the Whalebone or in the Booths owing to such an unusual number of spectators.

- Oct. 15. The rejoicings began yesterday continued to-day, a vast number of intoxicated men, with flags flying and firing of canon paraded about the parish, dragging the canon with them. About 10 in the morning the whole assemblage went to Mr. John Cooper's, where they continued for several hours drinking of punch and firing of canon, and in the afternoon returned to the Whalebone with Cooper at their head, singing of 'God Save the King' and other songs of victory, where they, numbers of them, continued until late at night on the 17th instant. It is said, and generally believed, that this rejoicing, expense of which principally falls on John Cooper,\* will cost him upwards of one hundred pounds.

In 1803 a fresh scare of the invasion of our east coast arose. The following entry is of much interest, as detailing the various weapons with which the quickly organised volunteers were armed. At first one wonders what chance men armed with such a scratch lot of weapons would have stood against Napoleon's well-equipped army, but when one recollects that these were the days of short-range firing, and consequently hand to hand fighting, and that this coast is protected by a network of dikes, the gateways through which are known only to the natives: and that recently our troops, with the aid of modern ordnance maps, had difficulty in finding their way by Essex roads, owing to the high hedges and absence of landmarks, possibly sturdy farm

\* The John Cooper alluded to in these entries is said to have made a large fortune by the high prices of farm produce which prevailed during these wars.

hands, who knew every inch of the country, might have turned pitchforks to better account than we should expect. One almost wishes an actual conflict had occurred, in order that we might know how our Essex valiants proved themselves.

1803, July 21. At a parish meeting held this day at the Whalebone, Fingringhoe, the principal inhabitants there assembled did appoint the different situations of persons to act as guides, conductors of teams, and drivers of teams and every other kind of cattle from off the sea coast to some more upland place, and also took the name of all the men to act as occasion may require, some with guns, others with pitchforks, mattocks, spade, shovel, hooks, axes, and all kinds of offensive weapons to repel the threatening attacks of our enemies the French.

July 22nd. The Cheshire Militia marched from Colchester to Langenhoe Common, commonly called Abberton Green, and there encamped.

Friday, October 14th. Lieutenant Jones, of the Royal Engineers, accompanied by 25 men, of the East Norfolk Militia, began to erect a battery on Hornet Heath, opposite Wivenhoe, for two pieces of ordnance to protect the hardway over Wivenhoe Ferry, in case of invasion, and finished it on Monday, the 24th following; on Sunday, the 23rd, was landed on the Ferry bridge, Fingringhoe, the stores, consisting of shot, round and grape, gunpowder and other materials, and on the following day four pieces of cannon, two for the battery on Hornet Heath, and the others for Batteries at the Strood, Mersea Island. Self carted up clovers from the marsh below, and likewise the guns and every other material, and for which I was paid the sum of £2 6s.

Probably those entries referring to agriculture rank next in interest. I have, therefore, abstracted a few which give a good picture of the farm life of that period. It is evident that the advantages to be gained by the use of machinery were fully appreciated by the Essex farmer, even at this early date. Some of these notes are of interest as referring to the inflated price of corn during the war, which enriched the farmer, but must have caused great suffering to the poor. It is also noteworthy that the farmer availed himself of assistance from the soldiers stationed near by in gathering his harvests.

1799. Nov. 28th. Mr. Jo. Ashwell came here with his drill machine to drill nine acres of wheat after cole seed, and after we had done about one acre and a half was obliged to leave off, on account of my putting too much lime to the seed, which gummed up the small works or notches in the different little wheels which regulated the hoppers, and made it sow irregular.

Nov. 29th. Continued to sow, and did tolerable regular.

Dec. 7th. This day, at Colchester Market, fine bright malting barley was worth three pounds per quarter, and it was said that that price was

- refused by Mr. W. Willis of Stanway. But wheats were dull sale at £23 per load, though this fortnight they were taken off with some freedom at £27 per load, and even that price was refused by some.
- Dec. 14th. Bought eight beasts at Colchester off the Stine, Welch runts (for the sum of thirty-two pounds and gave a man one shilling and sixpence to drive them to Fingringhoe). Mr. Hefill of Wivenhoe selected them out, and for which I treated him with two shillings worth of punch at the Waggon and Horses, where I paid the man for the above.
1800. April 3rd. S.W. wind and fair. Harold and Hollis finished plowing the pidgeon-house field, but Hollis, after I left him there in the morning between seven and eight o'clock, left off double thurrowing and only plowed as usual, and that in so shameful a manner that I discharged him for it. Inman raked up short stuff in the stackyard, and laid it down in the bullock yard. Master Fox threshed.
- April 12th. Westerly wind, cloudy, with some little rain. Inman, Fox, and self went to Mr. Garretts for a waggon-load of turnips, for which I am to keep his sheep in return. Harold ploughed in kitchen field, John Lee began to set potatoes in the pidgeon-house, one acre of which he is to have, he to find seed and workmanship, and I to find Land and plowing and to equally divide the produce.
- May 23rd. S.E. wind with clouds, a fresh breeze. Vincent, Lines, Perkins and his boy carted muck on the 5 acres before the house from the row in the field. The reason that I had it carried on for, before the field was fully fallowed, is that there is always twitch and seed when the earth is taken from the sides or ends and carried on with the muck and never fails to fowl the land when carted on after a good fallow. And in my obinion (*sic*) it is always the best way to fallow your manure with your land. Rain in the afternoon began about two o'clock. Showers.
- Dec. 13th. Wind southerly with rain. Chamberlain threshed oats, Petley wheat, Inman and boys topped carrots, but did little else. Mr. Ed. Cooper and E. Sage came and dined with me to look at my turnips. This day at Colchester Market wheat fetched the astonishing price of forty guineas per load, but forty pounds currently.
- Dec. 14th. Wind Easterly, fair but cold, some rain in the afternoon. This day in the morning service, Mr. Gunning and the curate of this parish read a Proclamation from the King, recommending in a very forcible manner to the masters of all families to lessen as much as possible the consumption of bread, as the average crop of the last harvest (1800) falls short of a fair average crop full one fourth, and that the last crop was begun full six weeks sooner than it usually is, and also to restrict as much as possible the consumption of oats by pleasure houses and others, etc.
- Dec. 24th. Westerly wind with clouds and rain at night. Chamber went to Mr. John Dunning's, Colchester, with 12 coomb of wheat sold on Saturday at £42 per load. Denny finished barrowing loomb [loam] on the garden, then cut reeds for to make a fence below the garden. Petley threshed barley and oats. Mr. John Garrett and self caught Eels in the afternoon.



1801, Feb. 4th. A strong gale from the westward. Brailey put down two trees for posts, and one for linen posts. Jennings and two raked twitch. Other men as before. Self went to Mr. Jo. Simsons to shoot rabbits and then went to look at Mr. B. Firmin's threshing machine; then to the Club.

Aug. 13th. The soldiers and self fetched flaggs from the side of the river for Jack Jennings to thatch the barley stack with. Others as before.

Aug. 15th. Two soldiers and self carting pease, beans, and wheat. Chamberlain as before. Five soldiers came yesterday and began to reap wheat half-day in 6 acres, and to-day finished reaping  $2\frac{1}{2}$  of wheat at 7s. per acre.

The farmer of 1800, like the farmer of 1900, was clearly keenly interested in the weather, which plays so important a part in his occupation; Mr. Page carefully noted the weather in his daily record. The climate of his day appears to have been as treacherous and unaccountable as the weather to-day. The following record of comparatively genial weather, suddenly changing to arctic weather, is not unlike a change we experienced in February, 1907. It would appear that the old-fashioned winters so often alluded to were not unlike the winter of modern times.

1807. Feb. 18th. The evening of yesterday was remarkably pleasant and mild, as I and Mrs. Page visited the Rev. Chas. Mustard without a great Coat, but it turned cold in the evening, the moon shone very bright. Returned home about one this morning, the wind then at the south of the west, blew very cold and rained very fast. About three this morning changed to the N.W. and N., shifting. Blowing a terrible hurrican and freezing remarkably fast, with a heavy fall of snow, which drove in at the smallest crevices, freezing most grievously all day long. The wind blowing very strong, the severity of which nothing could long resist. The fowls freezing in the yard. The cattle that were not housed suffered pittyfully. Many sail of ships were lost, and with regret I write the 'Repulse' cutter of Wivenhoe, Captain Danl. Stacey, and all hands except seven who were off in the long boat. So bad was the weather that the different description of ships under way soon became perfectly unnavigable, the snow as it fell freezing on the different cordage so as to make them too large for the blocks, and consequently of no use.

The yeoman, of course, took an interest in the church of his parish, and partook of the sacrament; though he does occasionally lead us to suppose that he only showed himself there on wet Sundays, and even on one of those, he is careful to add that he 'did not go in, being very late.'

1801. July 20. N.W. wind and very warm. Self sowing turnips, others as before. For some little time our steaple of the Church has been repairing and this afternoon the weathercock was re-put up and fresh guilt by Sanford, of Wivenhoe.

Our yeoman was a keen sportsman, and never lost an opportunity of shooting, hunting, coursing, fishing, or playing at cricket. These were the days, however, before breach-loading guns or the driving of birds, were introduced, hence the bags of game were modest when compared with modern records.

1799. Oct. 2. Mr. Neal and myself went a shooting at Peldon, and dined at the Rose and supped at the Lion, Abberton. Myself shot three brace of birds and a hare. Mr. Neal shot one bird and a hare.

Nov. 1st. Up to this day I had killed fifty brace of birds and two and a half brace of hares, for which I had shot 176 times, reckoning random shots.

Another time he proudly records that he shot two brace of snipe at five shots.

A very exciting hunting incident is also worthy of record:—

1800. Nov. 4th, Wind westerly and fair. Vincent plowed in Hall field and finished it, then stopd a gap before the house . . . self jobbed; afternoon went to Hornet Heath to see a bunch of Harriers that belong to the Regiment of Foot guards stationed at Colchester Barracks.

Nov. 12th. S.W. wind and fair. Mr. Sach's hounds hunted a baig [bag] fox past my house. I mounted my horse and joined them against Donyland Church, where they were at a check. They then hit him off again below Donyland heath and had slow hunting all the way to the back of the barracks, and into the gardens behind Mr. Tabor's house, where he leaped over a very high boarded fence into a yard, and from thence on to a building belonging to Mr. Tabor, where I climbed up and found him in a lead gutter between two ruffs, [roofs] from whence he ran on to a house fronting nearly the Custom House. I then got from off the house where I first found him. I then got upon a lean-to that ajoined the house, from which I climbed up on to the house where he was, and ran him along the gable part of the roof fronting the street, where he looked down, to the no small amusement of some hundreds of spectators. He then turned along downwards towards the river, where I followed him across the roof of several houses until a man met him. He then ran and jumped from building to building to the ground, in sight of the whole bunch of hounds, who killed him after running about one hundred yards.

1830. Feb. 24th. The hounds met at Abberton Lion and tried the south side of this parish, but did not find a fox; went with them to Chert wood, as I returned saw A. F. Millers Esq. coursing party, at Sir Henry Smith's, course three brace of hares, all of which ran away.

The diarist frequently went fishing for such coarse fish as the streams of his neighbourhood provided.

1800. June 1st. Northerly wind and bloustrous wether. Sunday sac [rament]. Yesterday in the evening, Mr. Garritt and self,

Lines and Vincent went fishing in the river, took several good eels and roach, and other fish and one bream.

June 3rd. Lines spread muck in five acres before the house, but did but little, being idle and left off at three o'clock. Vincent plowed. . . . self at 12 o'clock went and dined at Mr. Simson's, Ardleigh, and fished his ponds, and caught a great number of Crusoel Carp out of every pond we fished. The first pond we attempted to draw with his flew, but took none, we then tryd my draig and the first haul took 190 brace of Carp and at another haul in a ditch about eight feet across and a hundred yards long. we took 81½ fish or 407 brace, all Carp, the largest of them did not exceed  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a lb., but would all in my opinion average four ounces. Wind E.N.E, and fair and warm.

In the summer months cricket matches between local clubs alternated with fishing. In these matches our diarist appears to have held his own against the local cricketers in this as in other sports.

1800. July 29th. N.E. wind and cloudy, not so hot as for some days. Old Lines ploughed on the sier, Vincent in Poppy field, Boy jobbed, Crusell finished hoeing carrots. Self played cricket on Abberton Green with ten others against eleven of Maldon but got beat. The first innings there was but three runs difference in favour of Maldon, the second innings they got with great ease.

Aug. 7. N.W. wind with a few drops of fine rain. Felgate and boy and old Morris finished carting oats out of orchard field. A stranger came at 10 o'clock. Self went with the Winstree Hundred Club and played crickett with the Maldon Club, which beat the Winstree Club and 57 runs over. Self got home about 10 in the evening.

1801. June 25th. Self went to Abberton fair and played Crickit, the Winstree Hundred club against the Gentlemen of Mersea Island, which we beat and 36 runs over.

Although clearly keen upon sport, the yeoman, nevertheless, did not neglect to attend to his public duties, nor to share in the milder pleasures of life with his wife and children; thus we find

1800. April 14th. Dined at the Whalebone at the Easter meeting. Collected a part of half-yearly taxes this day at the Easter yearly meeting. This day Mr. and Mrs. Simson dined with Mr. and Mrs. Balley, and John Ward and children drank tea with Mrs. Page, sen. and Mr. Garritt and wife drank tea with Mrs. Page, junior.

Nov. 30th. Went to the play at Colchester to see Othello and Midas.

Nor were his Christmas festivities forgotten. On Dec. 26, 1800, he gave workmen and servants and tenants a dinner, entertaining his good friends, the Garritts, to tea at the same time. Next day he rode into Colchester to dine with the Masons of the Angel Lodge, but was disappointed to find the feast postponed

till Tuesday. Christmas day was as mild as April, but by February there was a heavy snow. This was not so severe a fall as happened in the following May, when snow lay a foot deep for several days.

1801. June 21. S E. wind and fair. A great concourse of people assembled at Fingringhoe Church this day to hear Psalm singing, there being upwards of twenty vocal and instrumental performers. The church was completely crowded, the aisles as well as the chancell and porch were completely filled. Edward Firmin, many years foreman at Fingringhoe Mill, was interred this churchyard this afternoon.

A yeoman so keen upon sport as Mr. Page naturally excited the suspicion of his richer neighbours; hence we find that a neighbouring brewer, evidently a man of much local influence, kept a watchful eye upon him and did not hesitate to take legal measures against him immediately any cause arose for suspicion of his encroachment upon his neighbours' shooting rights

1801. Oct. 11. This morning Mr. William Simson, with his brother Edward, came and went a shooting, and as we were returning home to dinner across Mr. T. Cooper's stoney field, John Bautree, the brewer, came to us, and after giving us some insulting language, threatened to lay an information against each of us, and was as good as his word, for on the Thursday following, Hardy, that keep Colchester Gail, served us with a summons to appear at Colchester Castle on Saturday, the 13th inst., as Tom and I did, with Mr. Sargeant the attorney with us, and after waiting some time Bautree began saying we shot at his tame partridges, which we did not; he then said many other frivolous things, as void of truth as the former; when, after some conversation from Mr. Sargeant, Mr. Bautree said that if we paid the expences which were already incurred, he should think no more upon the subject, which, by Mr. Sargeant's advice, we consented to, and the business finished to the amusement of most present, more than to John Bautree. Note, the expences amounted to seven shillings each, making one guinea in the whole.

1803. Oct. 12th. Joseph Fookes, constable of this place, by virtue of a distress warrant sined by John Bautree came and took a tumbrel cart, which he sold on Monday, the seventeenth of October following, to Mr. John Garritt for the sum of six pounds, which distress was for my carrying a gun on Sept. 1st, 1803, on an information laid by Robt. Kingsbury of this place, and said to be committed at the Colchester castle. I being summoned but having attended once before, would not attend any more, the penalty levied being five pounds, and Mason, the lawyer, charged 4s. for filling up the summons, making the whole cost which I paid £5 4s.

The following entry reminds us how easy it was to get hanged a hundred years ago, and also of the old adage, 'When the cat's away the mice will play.'

Aug. 1800. N.W. wind and very hot and remarkable dusty. Self went to Chelmsford to have Baker sworn to his settlement. Felgate and his partner kept Morris part of the day, but went in to the river grubbing eels, as did James Cole and Tom Jennings. Frank the Miller and Hollis assisted them on the outside, as did Tom Jennings's men. Knowing I was not at home, Boy kept in River field.

Note, there was five men executed at Chelmsford this day, three for housebreaking, and the other two for killing and stealing a calf. They were penitent.

The following short account of a runaway and his return is possibly of some interest. We are not, however, told that a fatted calf was killed upon the return of the prodigal son.

1800. April 12th. Mr. Daniel Dyer, of Stanway, lost one of his sons, the younger, a lad of about fifteen years old. He spent the evening with his father at the Waggon and Horses, Colchester, went from there at eight in the evening to walk home, but has not since been heard of, thow the most diligent search has been made and rewards offered.

April 15. Mr. Dyer's son was found in a state of profligacy on the 15th inst., or more properly speaking, he returned home in that state.

The following entry tells us of the surprise experienced in digging up some mineral matter in the course of agricultural operations, no doubt a pocket of copperas (sulphide of iron) in London Clay, was dug into. This copperas when washed out of the London Clay cliffs by the sea, for a long period furnished the materials for a local industry, green copperas used in dying black being obtained from it.\*

Dec. 18th. Wind Southerly and S.E. Foggy. As it has been for many days. Dum finished dressing then began to thresh barley. John Denny came this morning and went with Chamberlain to carting loom, and in digging about eight feet below the [surface] Chamberlain found a hard substance which I carried home, and after washing found it to be some kind of a metal oar (ore), about three times the weight of a stone the same size. After which Denny found some of the above, as did Chamberlain and myself several more, in all about seven pieces, in digging perhaps not more than two solid yards.

One or two entries would show that our friend was appreciated by some of his wealthy and influential neighbours. It also reminds us of the hot sea-water baths which were so popular at most of our seaside resorts in the earlier part of last century.

1799. September 16th. Lent Lord Hawkesbury's† steward, Mr. Boon, my cart to go to Harwich to take a survey of the house of — Robinson,

\* See *Victoria Histories, Essex*, vol. ii. p. 411.

† Charles Jenkinson, born 1729, a distinguished statesman in the North and Grafton administrations, Lord of the Admiralty, Secretary at War, &c., President of the Board of Trade 1785-1801, was M.P. for Harwich 1772-1774, created (1786) Baron Hawkesbury, and in 1796 Lord Liverpool. This was his second wife, the widow of Sir Charles Cope, whom he had married, 1782. He died December, 1808, aged 80:—Eds.

M.P. for that borough. Lord and Lady Hawkesbury being going to reside there during the month of October for the benefit of the hot bath, and after that Lord Hawkesbury and family to return to town for the convenience of attending Parliament during the sitting of that august body.

Sept. 23. Lord Hawkesbury left Fingringhoe Hall and went to London, and his Lady to Harwich for the benefit of the warm bath. Lord Hawkesbury's town house is in Sackville Street, No. 29, London.

Sept. 25. Recd as a present from the Right Honble. the Lord Hawkesbury, one dozen of bottled Borter (*sic.*) with hamper and bottles.

These notes, I think, afford us a good picture of an Essex yeoman of the year 1800, and as such are worth preserving. The typical yeoman of that period clearly did not worry himself either with sentiment nor with intellectual effort, but was well-satisfied with a healthy country life: attending to the business of his farm, working himself with his men, beautifying and making arbours in his garden, heartily enjoying all such sport and simple pleasures as came in his way, dying at a mature old age and handing on his farm to several generations of descendants. One cannot but regret the evil times our country cousins have fallen upon in more recent years, which have brought failure and ruin into the lives of hundreds of such men.

---

## KING CHARLES I.'S BIBLE AT BROOMFIELD.

BY MISS RICHENDA CHRISTY.

PROBABLY few people know that Broomfield possesses a Bible which was once the property of King Charles I.; a few notes, therefore, as to its history may be interesting. Inside the cover is the inscription, 'This Bible was King Charles the First's, afterwards was my grandfather's, Patrick Younge, Esq., who was Library-Keeper to his Majesty, now given to the Church at Broomfield by me, Sarah Atwood, Aug. ye 4th, 1723.'

In Thomas Wright's *History of Essex*, under the heading Broomfield, we read:—

The learned Patrick Younge, M.A., resided in this Parish, with his son-in-law, John Atwood, Esq., at the Parsonage-house, and died there in 1652. He was educated at St. Andrew's, and graduated at Oxford in 1605.

He became Keeper of the King's Library at St. James', and published St. Clement's Epistle of the Romans, Greek and Latin, in 1637. On account of his profound knowledge of the Greek language, he was employed to print the Septuagint from the Alexandrian MS., presented to King Charles I. by Bishop Cyril Lucas, but did not live to finish that work.

Younge was buried in the chancel of the church, under a grave-stone of black marble, the inscription of which, as it lies in the direct path to the communion rail, is getting almost obliterated. It is only just possible to make out the lettering:—

"Here lyeth interred the body of Patrick Younge, Esq., sonne of Sir Peter Younge, Knt. He had two daughters and co-heires, Elizabeth



CHARLES THE FIRST'S BIBLE.

married to John Atwood, Esq., and Sarah married to Sir Samuel Hoo(d), Knt., and dyed the 7th day of September, 1652."

The Parsonage-house or old Rectory (not to be confused with the Vicarage), where he lived, was a fine old Elizabethan house, one room in which was called the Queen's room, and had the Royal Arms finely executed in stucco, occupying the entire space from mantelpiece to ceiling. The Devereux arms were also carved in stone on one of the chimneys.

Henry VIII. granted this house, glebe, and great tithes to one William Harris (by-the-way a name still very common in

Broomfield); from him they passed to Richard Lord Rich, who made them part of the endowment of his Free-school and almshouse at Felsted. The lessees as lay rectors were charged with the maintenance of the chancel of the church. The house was a commodious gentleman's seat, and was still standing within living memory (my father's), of which not a trace now remains, except some very fine elm trees, a piece of garden wall, and some picturesque red brick farm buildings, in the midst of which the modern square house, in box of bricks style of architecture, looks strangely out of place.

Philip Morant, the Essex historian, once lived here. He was vicar of Broomfield for four years, from 1734 to 1738. He was the last vicar to reside in the old house, I believe, and was succeeded

by a family of the name of Lucas, who for fifty years were lessees of the Parsonage house. Curiously enough, a member of this family was destined later to play an important part in the history of King Charles's Bible. This was Colonel William James Lucas, of Witham, a well-known member of the Essex Archæological Society. In a letter written after a visit to Broomfield in October, 1892, to the Rev. William



COVER OF BIBLE, ARMS OF CHARLES I.



Trimmer, then vicar, he graphically describes how this happened:—

‘I was glad to see the old font replaced. It was my good fortune to rescue it from being sold as old stone. It was for years sunk in your stable yard (the Vicarage) as a drinking trough for the horses. At the sale, on the death of the Rev. Vincent Edwards (in 1843), it was dug out, and would have been sold in a lot of old stone had I not seen it and insisted, in spite of the auctioneer’s men, in having it moved and left in the church tower. I also saved King Charles’s Bible, which I suppose you have. That was in a dirty old brown paper cover lying on the floor with a lot of a dozen or so old books, and had I not happened to pick it up and feel the embossed cover through the paper, it, too, would have been sold, in some lot of ‘one dozen vols. various,’ for 1/- or 1/6.’

A narrow escape truly! Let us be thankful that Broomfield vicars since that time have better realized their responsibilities towards things old and rare.

As for the Book itself, the cover is the chief interest. Our photograph gives a very good idea of it without the colour which is really charming. The ground is a warm purple velvet, with the design of initials C. R. and Royal Coat of Arms worked in gold and silver threads, very much embossed; the quarterings of the shield being in blue and scarlet silk, are still quite bright. Both covers are alike, and contain the ordinary authorised version of James I. There is a copper-plate title-page with the usual sacred emblems, surrounding the following lettering:—

‘The Holy Bible—Containing the Old Testament and the New Newlie Translated out of ye originall Tongues, and with the former Translations diligently compared and revised by His Majesties special commandment.—Appointed to be read in Churches.

Printed at London by Bonham Norton, and John Bill, Printers to ye King’s most excellent Majestie, Anno. 1629. Jasper Isac fecit.’

The book has plainly never been much used, either by the royal owner or by anyone else.

There are some faint pencil words in the margin of the 1st chapter of Ezekiel, which some would like to believe to be the royal martyr’s own hand writing. (Query—were lead pencils in use at that period?). I believe the writing to be by

the same hand as the inscription by the donor, Sarah Atwood.

A few years ago, a parishioner, thinking that the Bible ought to be kept in the church, had an oak case, with a glass lid, made for it and placed behind the pulpit; it was found, however, that slight signs of mildew appeared from its being kept so closely shut up, and also the glass lid was considered hardly sufficient protection. So the precious Book is now kept once more at the vicarage, where the Rev. C. Edmunds is very willing to show it to any one interested. I am also indebted to him for the loan of Colonel Lucas' letter to Mr. Trimmer.

The Bible has been occasionally exhibited at local literary and antiquarian societies, and was on view at the village centenary Bible Society Meeting, when the photographs here reproduced were taken by Mr. Hagon, of Broomfield, who has kindly allowed me to use them for this article.

---

## NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

**County Council.** THE newly elected Council met for the statutory meeting on 12th March, and proceeded to the election of thirteen Aldermen. Mr. Laurence Marriage retiring from ill health, his place was filled by the election of Mr. E. A. Fairhead. Mr. Andrew Johnston was again chosen chairman, and Mr. W. W. Glenny vice-chairman.

**Flatford Bridge.** A new bridge is about to replace the picturesque wooden structure (figured in our pages, vol. xiii., p. 150) which is so connected with Constable, and has now become unsafe. The new bridge, designed by a London architect, preserves as far as possible some features of the old.

**Obituaries.** The Rev. ROBERT HENRY FALKNER, rector of Woodham Walter, died there on 25th February, after a short illness. The living was in his own gift and he had enjoyed it since 1875, when he came to Essex from Ireland, where he had been educated and ordained. He was 78 years of age; buried at Woodham Walter on January 30th.

The Rev. JOHN CHARLES COX, formerly vicar for thirty years of the parish of Felsted, died at Eastbourne on 17th March,

in his 87th year. Although he had retired from active life and from the county for many years, the memory of Mr. Cox is still green in Felsted and the neighbourhood, where he filled a remarkable place so long. Born at Oxford in 1821, a son of George Valentine Cox, armiger, and educated at Trinity College, Mr. Cox was a famous oarsman, and rowed in the University race of 1842, the year when Oxford won their first victory on the London course. In the next year, 1843, Mr. Cox was again one of the victors, when the historic seven-oared race was rowed at Henley for the grand Challenge Cup. The Oxford stroke, Mr. Fletcher-Menzies, fainted as he got into his place, and the stewards of the race refused to allow a substitute. Oxford, however, pluckily started with an oar short, and won amid scenes of wild enthusiasm. Mr. Cox was a good scholar, a country gentleman of the old type, a keen sportsman, and interested in public education, as befitted a dweller at the place of Lord Rich's foundation. He was ordained in 1845 and licensed to the curacy of Little Bealings, Suffolk, which he left for Guildford in 1847. After six years here he became domestic chaplain to Earl Cowley, ambassador to Paris, and came to Felsted in 1869. He married in January, 1873, Bertha Caroline, youngest sister of Sir Charles Du Cane, M.P. for North Essex, 1857-68, who survives him. Mr. Cox resigned the vicarage of Felsted eight years ago, and has since resided at Eastbourne.

**Brunwin Memorial Chapel.** A chapel has been erected in the parish of Rayne by the family of the late Mr. George Brunwin, of that place, as a memorial to him and the mission work he has long conducted in the parish. A brass commemorative tablet has been affixed over the vestry door. It is understood that the chapel will be taken over by the Essex Congregational Union after a few months.

**Churches, Restorations, etc.** DEDHAM.—Two more beautiful stained glass windows have been recently placed in the church by the vicar, the Rev. C. A. Jones, Rural Dean, who in 1902 (*E.R.* xiii, 47) gave the East window in memory of his wife. The North window of three lancets bears the figures of St. Peter, St. John the Beloved, and St. James the Greater; in the South window, also of three lancets, are the figures of St. Paul, St. Stephen, the protomartyr, and St.

Luke the Evangelist. This window was completed on January 25, the day of the conversion of St. Paul. Both are inscribed 'To the Glory of God, erected by the Rev. C. A. Jones, vicar of Dedham, 1885-1906, Rural Dean of Dedham, 1890-1898.'

LITTLE BARDFIELD.—A brass memorial tablet was recently unveiled and dedicated to the memory of the late Rev. R. H. White. The tablet is designed by Mr. Richard Creed, F.R.I.B.A., of Little Bardfield Hall, and is a beautiful work of art, representing the late rector under an architectural canopy in full Eucharistic vestments. An excellent likeness has been well caught by the craftsman, and altogether the deeply incised brass will be recognised in time to come as one of the chief ornaments of this ancient church, which the rector himself did so much to adorn. The portrait is surrounded by leaf-work of shamrock, bordered with emblems of St. Katherine, and the inscription, 'Richard Henry White, M.A., 41 years rector of this parish,' underneath the figure, 'Lord, I have loved the habitation of Thy house, and the place where Thine honour dwelleth.' The cost of the brass, namely £22, was entirely defrayed by the parishioners. The Rural Dean, the Rev. W. E. L. Lampet, a life-long friend of Mr. White, delivered an appropriate address, in which he dwelt upon the great work accomplished by the late rector, as a pioneer of catholic doctrine and practice, not only in that parish, but also in the whole district.

WALTHAMSTOW.—A new reredos in the Lady Chapel of St. James' Church was dedicated by the Bishop of Colchester on February 7. The reredos, which is a triptych about eight feet in length, consists of a centre panel with the Virgin seated, holding the infant Saviour and surrounded by worshipping angels, while at the sides are the wise men and the adoring shepherds. It is placed as a memorial to Miss G. M. Yatman, the leader of a settlement of female lay workers who have done much good in the parish, who died a year ago. It is the work of Miss Burlison, a sculptor, who exhibited it in plaster at the Royal Academy of 1903. It is now coloured.

NORTH OCKENDON.—On March 2, a memorial window was dedicated by the Bishop of Barking, it having been presented to the church by Mrs. Russell, now of Petersfield (and her son

Mr. Champion Branfill Russell, of Stubbers), in memory of the late Colonel Branfill Russell, who recently died there. The subject of the window is Christ and the two disciples journeying together to Emmaus.

---

## NOTES AND QUERIES.

**Chelmsford Races in 1810.**—The following particulars of the County Cup, run for at Chelmsford during nearly 100 years, are not without interest, showing as they do how much more local support was obtained for that meeting in those days than is the case at present. It will be observed that the names of the subscribers are almost without exception those of well-known Essex landlords. The severe nature of the race, as regards weights and distance, also forms a striking contrast to races of the present day.

### *Chelmsford Races, 1810.*

'The County Cup for Horses never having started or received forfeit for Plate, Match, or Sweepstakes before the day of naming, carrying the following weights, 4 years old : 10st. 4lb. ; 5 years old : 11st. 6lb. ; 6 years old : 12st. ; and aged : 12st. 2lb. ; the best of heats two and a half miles each, with the exception of such horses only as belong to Major Cooke's Hunt, and may have started in April, 1810, and not won. The Horses to be named to Mr. Weatherby or the clerk of the course on or before 1st June, paying 3 guineas entrance, which must be paid at the time of naming, or not entitled to win.

Present subscribers [all giving uniformly one guinea] :—Sir Thos. Barrett Lennard, Mr. St. Aubyn,\* Mr. L. Kortwright, Mr. Archer Houblon, Col. Bullock, Mr. John Wright, Mr. T. G. Bramston, Mr. Harvey, Col. Strutt, Capt. Disney, Mr. Wright, Mr. T. Wright, Mr. Judd, Mr. Wilson, Mr. J. B. Abdey, Mr. Tyrell, Mr. Du Cane, Mr. Spencer, Mr. Ruggles, Mr. Lodowick, Mr. Kortwright, Mr. P. Wright, Mr. Newton, Mr. Stanes, Mr. C. Tepier, Mr. Bramston Stanes, Mr. Western, Mr. C. Tower, and Mr. Conyers.'

T. BARRETT LENNARD.

**Great Thunderstorm and Rainfall of October 22, 1859.**—Meteorological events are very soon forgotten, and it

\* A nephew to Sir T. B. L.

may not be amiss to put upon record some recollections of a storm of unusual vehemence that I well remember, although it happened close upon fifty years ago. It was a Thursday night, the 22nd of October. Rain had fallen almost without intermission the whole day, but there was nothing in the state of the barometer to indicate the approaching storm. About 7 o'clock, amid torrents of rain, the town of Colchester was suddenly illumined by a discharge of electricity from the clouds, which hung in awful blackness over the whole district. Until long after midnight the fury of the storm raged, thunder and wind mingled in chorus, rain descended in sheets, while from every point of the compass vivid flashes of lightning rendered the darkness more visible. A chimney in Priory Street was the only thing struck, but much damage was done by flood upon the parade ground at the Camp. About 9 o'clock a portion of a wall, 12 feet high and about 150 in length, fell with a huge crash into the road, its foundations being undermined by the weight of water and a strong west wind blowing at the time. A torrent rushed over the fallen wall, joined with streams from surrounding buildings, and rushed down Military Road for about 200 yards, carving for itself a channel nearly 7 feet wide and 4 feet deep. It carried with it, towards Magdalen Street, a vast body of sand and stones, and at the same time laid bare the gas main supplying the houses in that neighbourhood, and inundated several houses. I was out driving during the worst of this storm; the rain beat so furiously into my cart that it could not get out fast enough by the holes in the bottom and the slit where the back lets down, so it poured over the front by the steps and came nearly up to my ankles, as I remember. Near Latchingdon Lion the road was flooded 2 feet deep, and the brook at Deadway Bridge ran higher than the parapets. I narrowly escaped an accident, for not seeing the deep gully—above alluded to—in the darkness, I nearly drove into it on returning. In other parts of the county, bridges were swept away, trees torn up, and soil washed away by the rushing torrent. Cattle were drowned, pigs and sheep, and, in Purleigh parish, a young man, who was endeavouring to lead his pony through some water, was washed away and his body carried half-a-mile down the road. Tillingham marshes became a sea. Carriers' vans and mail carts ran great risks. Houses and farms at Woodham Ferris, Althorne,

Mundon, and other places were flooded to a great depth, and acres of top soil washed from the fields. Altogether it was a most remarkable storm, such as I have never seen the like of since. Unfortunately I have no record of the rainfall, but it must have been, as our sporting friends say, a 'record.' Little damage was done, I believe, in the county town, but in Sandon the brick bridge was destroyed, and some draymen were nearly drowned in the darkness of the early morning.

HENRY LAVER, Colchester.

**Emigration to New England.**—Maldon Sessions Book, E., fol. 76, preserves a characteristic note of this movement, and of the suspicion with which it was regarded by the party in power:—

'Memorandum that the 29th day of March, 1638, Thomas Ruck, gentleman, and . . . Hawkyms (his servant), and Joseph Hills, and . . . Wayte (his servant), tooke, everie of them, the oathes of supremacy and allegiance to his maiestie before the bailiffs and Mr. Thomas Plume (one of his highness' Justices of his Peace within this burrough), in the moote-hall of the same, the said persons being bound for the plantations in America called newe-England.'

It may be noted that neither of the two masters had been long in Maldon, but that both of them had gone up the ladder of municipal honours very rapidly. It is a safe inference that they were welcome new-comers in the borough, not only because of their Puritan opinions, but as men of substance able to bear their share of the crushing taxation of the day.

On Dec. 6, 1630, Thomas Ruck and his son Peter were admitted to burgess-ship of Maldon, by purchase (admission-fine, £8). Thomas Ruck, a woollen-draper, born at Cranbrooke in Kent, then took the oath of burgess; Peter Ruck's oath was respited till he came of age. Thomas's younger children were:—sons, Thomas, John, and James, and daughters, Elizabeth and Joan. Dec. 6, 1630, Thomas Ruck was elected a head-burgess (i.e. one of 18, corresponding to the modern Town-council); Dec. 5, 1631, he was elected Alderman.

On Dec. 5, 1631, Thomas Hills, a linen-draper, place of birth left blank, was admitted to burgess-ship of Maldon by purchase (admission-fine, £8). He had, at the date of his admission, two

daughters, Mary and Elizabeth. He was elected a head-burgess, May 28, 1632; and Alderman, Dec. 2, 1633.

Are there, over ocean, any Rucks or Hills, to answer this call of blood?

ANDREW CLARK, Great Leighs.

**The Hempe Rhyme.**—It is well-known that popular apprehensions as to the disasters which might follow the death (possibly hastened by assassination) of Elizabeth, the last sovereign of the old line, got crystallized into an evil-omened couplet:—

When *Hempe* is spun,  
*England* is done.

It was uncertain whether a Spanish or a Scottish claimant would succeed—both unpopular, as foreigners, and also unpopular, the former as Romanist, the latter as Presbyterian.

Maldon Sessions Book for 1595 has an interesting statement as to this rhyme, told with the delightful hesitancy (here sadly condensed) of the then Town-clerk.

The confession of Thomas Spigurnell, made in open court, 14th April, 1595:—Walter Marshall, apprentice to Thomas Hutt, told Spigurnell that he heard Nicholas Cock, apothecary, say that a certain person was hanged for spelling, or expounding, of this word—hempe. And the cause was, for that the said treaterous-minded person referred h. to Henrye, and e. to Edwarde, and m. to Marye, and p. to Phillip, and e. to Elizabeth. Hereupon, Walter Marshall was sent for; admitted that on April 10th, 1595, he had repeated to Spigurnell this saying, *as* having been told him by Cock; but expressed his decided opinion that Cock had not spoken these words in any evil pretence towching her majestie. The Bailiffs did not venture to take this charitable view. They bound Cock over to answer to what might be objected against him at next Sessions, and bound Marshall over to attend the same Sessions to give evidence against Cock in respect of these seditious words. Unhappily, with the nightmare in consequence of these broken, imperfect records, the Sessions procedure in the case is lost. It may be noted, in explanation of what people then felt about the 'word,' that Henry VIII. died 1547; that Edward VI. died 1553; 'bloody' Mary reigned alone till 1554; that thenceforward,



after her marriage till her death, the royal style was, 1554 to 1558, Philip and Mary; but after November 17th, 1558, Elizabeth.

A. CLARK, Great Leighs.

**Maldon Grammar School.**—In my article on this early foundation which has recently appeared in the section Schools of vol. II. of the Victoria *History of Essex*, noticed elsewhere in this number, I was much indebted to Dr. Andrew Clark for some notes he had recently made on examining the Maldon Borough Rolls. He has since pursued his investigations to the Sessions books, and now sends me the exact entry referring to John Daynes, appointed master in December 1621. He has also discovered the name of another, and later, master, which I have not included in the account there given, viz., John Hutt, gent., of Maldon, who was elected by the bailiffs and aldermen, April 21, 1656.

*Maldon Sessions Book, D, 1606—1631; pt. 129v.,*

*Curia parvi visus*: 3 December 1621, We, John Soan, gent., and John Edwards, Bailiffs, Thomas Hutt, William Burlz, Edward Hastler, Wilyam Frauneys, and George Purcas, aldermen of the said burrow, the said 3 of December 1621, being assembled in the said moote-hall, with one mutuall assent and consent, do order, decree and determine, that Mr. John Daynes, scholemaster of the grammer schoole in this Burrow, and the succeeding scholemasters in that place, from and after Christmas next, and at all times thenceforth, shall take yerely for teaching and instructing the sonne of any Townsman or Inhabitant of the said Burrow, being a freeman and able and fitt to pay therfore, twenty shillings by the yere and not above, for that in any man's memory no more hath been paid within this towne,

and again, in *Sessions Book E.*, fol. 216, the appointment of a schoolmaster some 35 years later, to teach the grammar school of the town, is noted, and a

Certificate granted by the bailiffs and aldermen to John Hutt, gent., of Maldon, that he has been elected, in terms of Ralph Breeder's will, to teach the grammar school and warrant given him to take the rents, etc., belonging to the school, so long as he continues schoolmaster.—21 April 1656.

C. FELL SMITH.

**Westerns of Rivenhall.**—Referring to my article on the Westerns (*E.R.* xi, 65), it is interesting now to chronicle the return to Essex, after many years, of one of the family, in the person of Colonel Charles Maximilian Western, the senior representative of the race after Sir Thomas C. C. Western, who, though

a generation younger is, I believe, only two years his junior. Neither Felix Hall nor Rivenhall Place being available at the time, Colonel Western has taken up his abode at Goldsmiths, Laindon Hills, a place rebuilt on the site of the old farm house about ten years ago by Sir Joseph C. Dimsdale. He is a gunner, late of the R.A., and has recently entertained the Drag Hounds from Woolwich on the opposite side of the Thames, an event which he tells me he hopes will be annual. Colonel Western's father, a brother of Sir Thomas Burch Western, M.P. for North Essex, died aged 91 in 1904, the last of his generation.

C. FELL SMITH.

---

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS.

*The Victoria History of the County of Essex.* Edited by WILLIAM PAGE, F.S.A., and J. HORACE ROUND, M.A., LL.D. Volume II. Pp. xxi., 628, large imperial 8vo. London (Archibald Constable and Co.), 1907. Price to subscribers £6 6s. for the five volumes.

THE anxiously expected second Essex volume of 'this important and ambitious literary undertaking,' as we styled it in noticing the first volume in 1903 (*E.R.*, xii., 123-7), has now made its appearance. It follows, of course, the same plan; each section has been written or edited by a specialist; a course that has much to commend it, but as we remarked before, and as we suppose is inevitable, the sections vary much both in research and merit. On the whole this second volume is very complete; many of the sections are excellent and probably exhaustive, as far as our present knowledge goes. They form an admirable starting point for future workers, as all available information is brought up to date and focussed, so to speak, under the various headings. There is necessarily some overlapping, but not much, and facts are used from different standpoints. A complete index will be helpful for reference, but the sections are sufficiently distinct.

In the 'Editorial Note,' on p. xvii., we seem to miss any reference to Mr. Haverfield's Roman section, which is overdue, also to the chapter on Agriculture, but this may be intended to follow in the next volume, the present one ending with Forestry. Doubtless it is a little difficult to get all contributors to work up to time in a large undertaking like the present;

still, a proper and consecutive arrangement of the sections is very desirable.

In noticing the first volume we called attention (*E.R.*, xii., 127) to the need of increased local supervision. All through the present volume there appears a laxity in the spelling of proper names even more noticeable than before; we have more than a page of errors to point out, and doubtless that is incomplete. This is due to the matter not having been read for press by someone personally familiar with the county. Many of these misprints, of course, readily lend themselves to correction, but others are more serious and likely to mislead, *e.g.*, on p. 64 we have Chigwell thrice for Chignal, a far removed locality; the footnote is incomprehensible. Then we have new names introduced to us, as 'Columba Roothing,' p. 77; 'Roothing Belchamp' on p. 46 may be better understood; 'South Bersted' (p. 319) is an utterly unknown spot. There are many others. Ordinary misprints abound as 'wry' for dark (p. 335), 'Osborn' for Ogborne the historian. These are irritating, as also is the varied spelling of certain names, *e.g.*, Dengie and Dengey, Utlesford and Uttlesford among the hundreds, Keddington and Kedington, Malden and Maldon, and numerous other instances among the parishes. The references, mostly in the footnotes, are not uniform; in fact authors must have gone out of their way to play variations on the theme, and this even in the same section. There are three differing references on one page. It is stated (p. 435) that there is now no place in Essex known as Wallfleet, but the creek between the islands of New England and Havengore still bears that name, and is frequently visited by the writer; it still produces excellent oysters. It is a pity to have made the evergreen Mr. T. W. Offin, of Hockley, 'late' on p. 425, and to have confused him with his half-brother, Mr. John Offin, of Hutton, on p. 575. These minor blemishes should have been avoided in a standard history, as this hopes to be, where absolute accuracy and uniformity is wanted. Personally we do not like the varying type and the arrangement of sometimes double columns and sometimes not, but here there may be differences of opinion.

We will now attempt to detail what this second volume, valuable as an addition to our county history, contains. It embraces nine sections, *viz.*, Ecclesiastical History, Religious

Houses, Political History, Maritime History, Social and Economic History, Industries, Schools, Sport, and Forestry.

Ecclesiastical history, apart from the monastic foundations, is dealt with very fully from the earliest times, and all that is certainly known of the planting of Christianity in this county is recorded. After the great survey of Domesday and the information given in the Domesday of St. Paul's (printed by the Camden Society in 1858), of course records become more certain. Thanks to Newcourt's *Repertorium*, Essex is in a position to be very fully dealt with; David's *Annals* and Strype's works come in useful later.

The unique fact is recorded by the authors, Rev. Dr. J. C. Cox and Mr. J. Horace Round, that Woodham Walter is probably the only instance of a church being consecrated other than by episcopal hands (p. 45, cf. also *E.R.* i., 87-96). The numerous changes in the ecclesiastical divisions of the county are set forth in the appendix. These are interesting particulars in view of the impending and desirable establishment of a distinct Essex see.

The religious houses of Essex, subject of the next section, were in number above the average of other counties—49 are enumerated and their positions shown on the map—but none of them was exceptionally wealthy. In the capable hands of Mr. Fowler, of the Public Record Office, they are treated most methodically; the very numerous references here are particularly clear and uniform; they exhibit very considerable, if not exhaustive, research. An immense amount of new information, especially the names of the heads of houses, is supplied.

Political history, by Miss Ethel Stokes, assisted by Mr. J. Horace Round, starts early with B.C. 54, and with tables of the princes of the Trinobantes and the East Saxon Kings. These, of course, are useful for reference and have doubtless been based upon the most reliable information obtainable. Then we are led on to parliamentary contests since 1290. This chapter clearly shews in many instances the difficulty of gauging popular feeling or predominating influence without contemporary records, which however would, of course, often be certainly partisan. The section is interesting, but is by no means complete, and much of the information, especially that of the earlier pages, could have been included under other

headings. Military history is included in this section, but is shortly disposed of. The old 44th and 56th regiments, whose achievements are on record, are acknowledged as belonging to Essex, but we should have a distinct record as in the case of the navy, to say nothing of yeomanry, militia, and volunteers.

We next come to a much neglected chapter of Essex history, viz., its Maritime History, which is supplied by Mr. M. Oppenheim. For generations next to nothing has been written of it, but here we have a most comprehensive article detailing what part, often an important one, Essex has taken in times past. It is quite possible that a future writer may revive the subject, for anyone who studies this section will see how really important the Essex coast and estuaries are for our national defence. The present history deals very largely, nor could it do otherwise, with the port of Harwich, characterising it as 'the only haven of any value in the county.' The harbour is illustrated by no less than five interesting plates.

The chapter or section on Social and Economic History, by Miss Nora E. MacMunn, is a lighter and well-written account of the county from a different standpoint; it doubtless contains many facts that it is well to have on record, which might not have appeared in more serious historical sections; it forestalls to a considerable extent the missing chapter on agriculture. James Brome's (1700) character of our Essex marshmen is new to us, and we quote it without adopting, at any rate, its present application, for they are stigmatized as 'persons of so abject and sordid a temper that they seem almost to have undergone poor Nebuchadnezzar's fate, and by conversing continually with the beasts to have learned their manners.' We cannot, however, subscribe to the note on p. 339, that only 'old people and fools' are left in the villages, or, again, to that on the next page, 'the art of ploughing threatens to become almost extinct,' nor again, but more doubtfully, to the following page where 'there seems no doubt that corn growing on the heavy clay soil cannot be made to pay under present conditions; the cost of production is too high and the market value of the produce too low.' Further, 'nevertheless the country people are certainly considered dull, and it must be admitted that technical education does not make much way in the rural districts.'

The appendix to this section gives a very useful table of

population, extracted by Mr. G. S. Minchin from the census returns for each decennial period from 1801 to 1901. Of course, the boundaries of many parishes have altered considerably under legislation, but these are stated as far as possible, and locally they would be known. The figures must be instructive—enormous increases in the metropolitan district, and in the rural stagnation, if not, as in so many instances, an actual decrease. This table is very apposite before the next chapter. Positive results; an intelligent perusal of what can be done by an enterprising mind, might and could supply the remedy. The depopulation of rural Essex is a problem that requires solving; in many directions the answer seems as if it might be easy.

The section on Industries, divided into three chapters, is undoubtedly the most original in the book, dealing as it does with the living life of the county workers. Exhaustive as it is, and entirely up to date, it is capable of, and will receive, extension, we hope, in the immediate future. It is the longest section in the volume, extending to 146 pages (355—500), and doubtless the one of most general interest. It is edited by the most capable hands of Mr. Miller Christy, who, from personal knowledge and industrious research, has supplied the larger part of the information; he has availed himself of the help of experts on certain subjects, viz., Dr. Henry Laver, Mr. J. C. Shenstone, Miss C. Fell Smith, Mr. W. W. Glenny, Mr. Wilson Marriage, T. S. Dymond, Lieut.-Col. Sir F. L. Nathan, and Mr. John Avery.

Miss C. Fell Smith's section on Schools (pp. 501—564) follows next. The history of our schools, endowed and otherwise, has never before been written; it required a vast amount of personal inquiry and investigation, as well as research among musty documents in the Record Office. It is a most exhaustive account, enriched with details of many forgotten founders, and must prove extremely valuable.

Sport occupies thirty pages and is divided into fifteen sub-sections; some of these seem rather thin for an important county history; but records of sport are preserved where probably a county historian would not look for them. Anyhow this section could and should have been better done.

Forestry is undertaken by Mr. J. Nisbet D'Oec. Forestry in Essex is mostly ancient history, of which much more, we think, might have been made, but it is interesting to have this new

chapter just now when there is considerable discussion as to whether or not it is advisable to attempt to plant our many thousand acres of derelict lands. Opinions vary, and an expert's advice is desired by many. A perusal of this section will certainly prove useful to those interested in the question. Timber growing in Essex has largely declined, and it might be an advantage in many directions to resuscitate it. But what landowners want to know is, will it pay?

This volume, like the last, has a nice frontispiece, a view of the valley of the Lea from Epping Forest, by William Hyde, and it is illustrated with no less than twenty-nine other maps and illustrations. We are sorry a few of the old seals of the Grammar Schools were not included. The brass effigy of Archbishop Harsnett from Chigwell Church is extremely fine, but hardly yields a living interest in the subject of education, and has often been reproduced.

*Cassell's Book of Quotations, Proverbs and Household Words.* A collection of Quotations from British and American authors, with many thousands of Proverbs, Familiar Phrases and Sayings from all sources, including Hebrew, Arabic, Greek, Latin, French, German, Spanish, Italian, and other languages. By W. GURNEY BENHAM. Cassell & Co., Ltd., London, Paris, New York, and Melbourne, 1907. Pp. 1256. cr. 8vo.

The love of man for quotation is a deep-rooted affection. No orator fails to use pithy or wise sayings as an ornament to his speeches; the best letter-writers have always added to their epistolary periods these gems from another setting.

Yet how few persons can give off-hand the exact origin or author of the lines they use. Dictionaries of Quotations have always been popular, and now in a truly stupendous volume, Mr. Gurney Benham has given us the best specimen of the kind extant. Herein is a mine of pithy sayings, proverbs, weather saws, poetry, prose, Bible and Latin utterances, which can scarcely fail to furnish rich ore to the digger or seeker in it. A completeness is achieved which no earlier commentators have aimed at. Here is a concordance to the Old and New Testaments and the Apocrypha ready to hand. Here are proverbs in a polyglot dress which would delight the soul even

of 'M. Walkley.' A great many appear in their English, French, Italian, and German guise, one, 'Like will to like,' is given in no less than seven languages. Latin quotations from Plautus, Martial, Horace and the like, proverbs, phrases, law terms, mottoes, etc., occupy no less than 230 pages, and, for the instruction of the unlearned, have a version in English appended. The section under authors ranges from Addison to Zangwill, and occupies rather less than half the book. In looking through this one is struck with the comparative quotableness of different authors, or is it that the extent of the compiler's predilections are measured? Thus, three pages from Massinger (1584-1639), against one entry from William Penn, seems to argue his unfamiliarity with the delightful *Fruits of Solitude*, which the present generation has demanded to be so many times reprinted in a handy form. We always knew that we were unconsciously quoting Alexander Pope (1688—1744) all day long, so it is hardly a surprise to find Mr. Benham devoting nearly fifteen pages to his epigrammatic phrases. He only gives us one quotation from John Stuart Mill, three from Cobbett and none from Pater. Yet we have the lavender water sentiment of Mrs. Hemans spreading over nearly a page. Mr. Benham's eclecticism may be seen in a glance at the authors' names, where appear: Villon and William Henley, Winston Churchill and Æschylus, The Dolly Dialogues and Plato, Jeremy Taylor, G. R. Sims, and Napoleon I. He might have ransacked the note books of Leonardo da Vinci to some purpose, or have drawn upon more of the modern epigrammists, as Lucas Malet, Maurice Hewlett, or Ellen Thorneycroft Fowler, as a counter balance to the learned periods of Mrs. Humphrey Ward. However, though there are gaps in his circle here and there, the volume is singularly free from errors as a whole. Under Drummond of Hawthorndean we notice three, including the misprint of St. for Sir John Scot. Under Hayley we miss the delightful epigram addressed to Blake: 'Thy friendship oft hath made my heart to ache, do be my enemy for friendship's sake.'

Several modern dramatists are quoted: Wilde, Shaw, Anthony Hope, and even H. A. Jones; yet we have none of the delightful crisp sayings that abound in Mr. Pinero's masterpieces. No doubt it is because we find so much that we greedily ask for more.

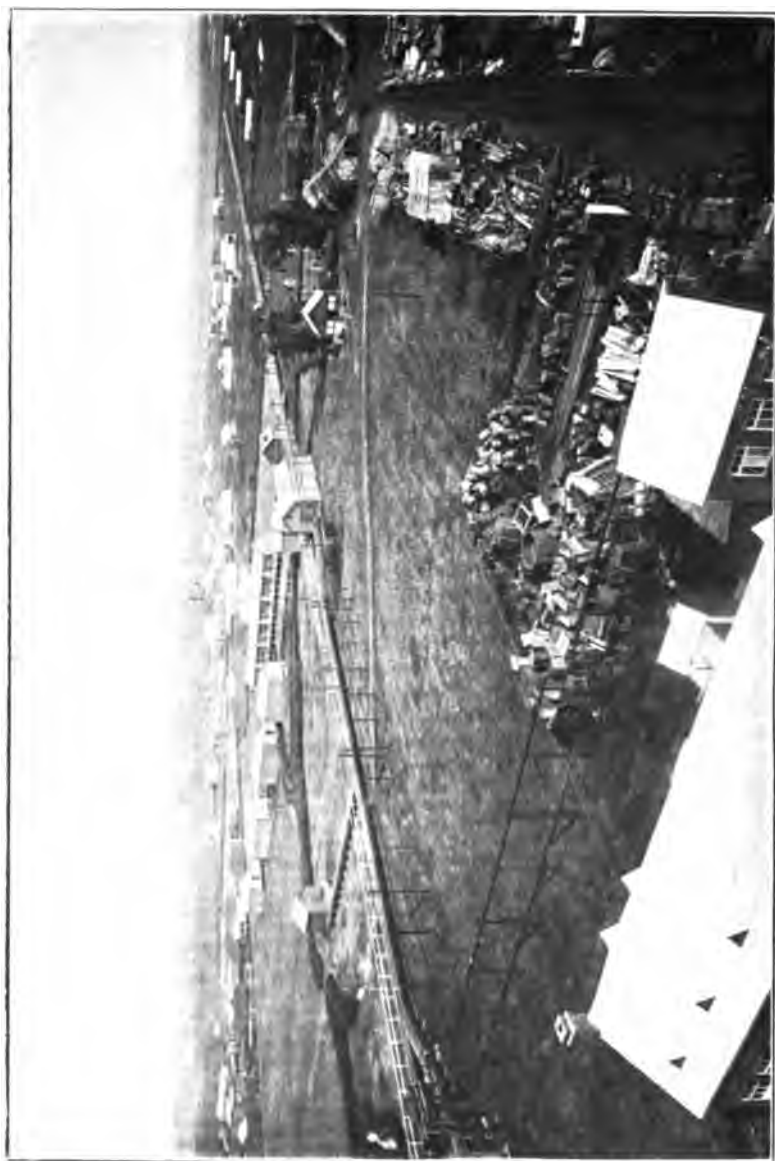


The short exposition of popular phrases strikes us as nearly the most interesting part of the volume. Who, for instance, would have guessed that 'mere man' originated in the shorter catechism, and not in the manifesto of some revolting suffragist. The saying that we are a nation of shopkeepers is always attributed to Disraeli, but Mr. Benham goes farther and traces it to Adam Smith. The phrase 'sent to Coventry' he dates back to the Civil War, and the impeccability of Cæsar's wife of course to Plutarch.

Some popular pleasantries from music-hall songs are assigned their dates of origin: strangely recent they seem, for nothing is so defunct as last year's jokes. Enough has been said to show that the book is vastly interesting for a dictionary. In fact, we know one literary gentleman who confesses to reading his Part straight through as soon as it arrives, for it is so interesting! Issued in monthly parts at 5½d., the whole work may be obtained for something less than the published price, and may then be bound to one's own taste. Indeed, the cheap binding in green cloth leaves much to be desired, for the book is a heavy tome, and by its very nature calls for much turning over. We have noticed a few misprints, 'Philander' for Philanderer, and 'Malfy' for Malfi, though possibly when this play of Webster's was published it may have been given the older form. There is no entry under Omar among the authors, and no cross reference to Fitzgerald, under whom the Persian poet's verses appear.

Mr. Benham has collected some East Anglian proverbs; among them 'A poor man's rain,' and others dealing with weather. He gives us the motto of Chelmsford, 'Many minds one heart,' and under Colchester he notes some references to 'weaver's beef,' *i.e.* sprats. He has included the Selkirk Grace, 'Some hae meat but canna eat,' &c., from Dr. Clark's version of it in Plume's MSS. in the *Essex Review*. In fact, he has an eye for authors everywhere, and deserves well of his day and generation, for has he not devoted 52 pages to William Shakespeare, and placed next unto him Bernard Shaw?





GENERAL VIEW OF KYNOCHTOWN.

THE  
ESSEX REVIEW:

*A Quarterly Journal for the County.*

---

---

No. 63.]

JULY, 1907.

VOL. XVI.

---

---

**NESTING OF THE RAVEN IN ESSEX.**

BY DR. HENRY LAVER, F.S.A.

ON no portion of the Fauna of Essex have the changes which have occurred during the century just ended produced such disastrous results as on the birds of prey.

These birds were, during the Nineteenth century, and especially in the earlier decades of it, very common throughout a great part of the county.

At the time mentioned there were very few gamekeepers in the county, a fact that had an important bearing on the subject, for they were mostly confined to the few large estates where game was said to be preserved. In the greater part of the county no steps in this direction were taken, and the game in these districts flourished as best it might; what there was existed under perfectly natural conditions, having to pass through the ordinary risks and trials of the struggle for life, an experience which, as is well known, contributes to the advantage of the species, although it occasionally falls hardly on the individual. It would be a great error to imagine that, under these natural surroundings, game was scarce, for certainly partridges and hares were as numerous as at the present time. The large hedges and high stubbles no doubt gave them much assistance and protection. Amongst the many species of birds classed as vermin, and, therefore, now to be destroyed at every opportunity, was the raven and its near relative, the carrion crow, both of these are now rare birds. Both these could once be considered common in Essex, especially in those districts near the coast, and every child in these parts would be perfectly familiar with the peculiar hoarse cry of the raven as it passed overhead.

Its 'pork, pork' would certainly distinguish the bird, and enable it to be recognised even by those—few, indeed, amongst the dwellers on the marshes—who could not name it by its peculiar flight. As time went on, and more persons began to take an interest in sport, the value of shooting rights improved, and game preserving became more general, a bad time for all so-called vermin came in, with the result that hawks, owls, magpies, jays, crows, and ravens were everywhere destroyed.

And when these latter birds, as well as many of the other species became scarce, their greatest enemy, the egg collector, came on the scene, and thus completed this destructive process which had been gradually causing the extermination of all these beautiful, interesting and useful creatures. As before mentioned, during the first fifty years of the last century, A.D. 1800-1850, ravens' nests were very common, or, perhaps, it might be said fairly so, in all those parishes of the county bordering on the marshes. I, myself, have often taken a part in rifling them of either eggs or young. On some farms the owners objected to the ravens being disturbed, because they said that ravens drove the rooks away from the fields near their nest, which was an undoubted fact.

Many of their nesting-places were occupied for several years in succession. This was especially the case where the tree, from any cause, was unclimbable. I remember a large elm at Latchingdon being felled, which had on it a raven's nest that defied all egg-stealers. It was easy to get up near to the nest, but this was so large that you could not get round it. When the tree was felled the accumulated sticks would have sufficed to fill a large tumbril cart. Ravens were very commonly kept as pets, and in 1852 I assisted in taking a nest of young ravens at Tolleshunt D'Arcy for the late Mr. Wiseman, who kept a school at Kelvedon. The following is a list of ravens' nests which I remember to have seen in Essex at various times in my younger days:—

1. In the row of elms to the right of the path from East Hall, Paglesham, to the church, one.
2. For many years there was one in Stannets Grove, Paglesham, in an oak tree.
3. There was another, also in an oak, in Hobbly Grove, on Church Hall, Paglesham.

4. One in an elm on my uncle's farm at Latchingdon, before referred to.
5. One on Northey Island. This continued until a few years ago.
6. One at Pudsey Hall, Hockley. This also continued to be occupied until a few years ago.
7. One ditto at East Mersea.
8. One on Osea Island in the Maldon river.
9. One at Bradwell-on-Sea.
10. One on Mr. Seabrook's farm, near Tolleshunt D'Arcy, also previously mentioned.
11. One at Lawford Hall, and in reference to this I have received a letter from Mr. Walter B. Nichols, which is of so much interest that I propose to give it in full.

Dear Sir,

Your letter has been forwarded on to me here. I am very glad to tell you all I can about the Lawford Ravens. A pair appeared in the winter of 1870 and settled in a clump of Scotch firs on a barrow on my father's property—Lawford Hall. They remained till 1878 or 9—always having two nests on separate trees in the clump. They were never disturbed or interfered with in any way beyond occasionally taking a young 'brancher' for friends. It was supposed that they came from abroad, owing to the heavy firing in the Franco-German War, but as a matter of fact I believe they came from Stutton, on the other side of the Stour, about five miles off. Soon after their appearance my father's herd was nearly destroyed by some disease, I forget what, but the villagers put the disaster down to the ravens. During their first spring they killed one or two weakly lambs, but I do not remember their doing any other damage to us—indeed, they seemed to get their food at some distance. They were most interesting to watch and not particularly shy; indeed, the hen sat very close, so that sometimes she did not leave the nest till one tapped the tree. The cock-bird would rush barking, with his long throat feathers all bristling, out of the trees when one got about one hundred yards from them. They had a delightful habit, while flying, of turning on their backs, sideways, not head-over-heels, and dropping many yards through the air, then recovering and soaring up again in circles.

I shall be very glad to receive a copy of your paper when published. I hope these very rough notes may be of use to you.

Yours very truly,

WALTER B. NICHOLS.

It will be seen that this nest was in existence in 1878, yet late as this seems, ravens continued to build in trees in Essex for some years afterwards. I think it will even be found they continued to nest in Essex trees up to a later period than in any other southern county.

It must not be supposed that these I have named were the only

ravens' nests in Essex, within living memory, as there were others in various parts of the county. My list refers only to those with which I came personally in contact in my boyhood, either by trying to steal their eggs or young, or by observing them when visiting in their districts.

---

## KYNOCHTOWN.

### A GREAT EXPLOSIVES FACTORY ON THE ESSEX MARSHES.

BY A. CLIFTON KELWAY.

TEN years ago there was no such place as Kynochtown, but only a couple of quaint old Essex farmhouses, 'Borley' and 'Shellhaven,' divided from each other by a mile of marshland, and from the villages of Corringham and Fobbing by several miles of similar ground, in the midst of which dangerous ditches were more abundant than paths. There they stood, those ancient farmhouses, very much as they had done time out of mind, almost unapproachable in winter, quite out of the beaten track at the best of times, and practically unknown save to the dwellers in the adjacent villages. One of them still stands, and is known as 'Oil Mill Farm.' Somewhat pathetic in its picturesque appearance, so suggestive of the days that are gone, the old cottage is no longer isolated, but forms part of Kynochtown, which, with its splendidly equipped factory, up-to-date 'stores,' schools, institute, post and telegraph office, embodies all that is most modern in commercial and social development. At few, if any, points along the Essex shore of the Thames can so great and startling a transformation have been effected with such rapidity and completeness as at Kynochtown, from whence during the last ten years cordite, nitro explosives, smokeless sporting powder, black gunpowder, and other deadly chemicals have been poured into the markets of the world in quantities too vast to be imagined.

It was, of course, the extreme isolation of this Essex marshland which constituted its chief fitness for the site of an explosives factory; and isolated it still remains, although two hundred acres of the freehold estate which Kynoch, Limited,

purchased in the autumn of 1896 are now covered by the long low buildings of the factory, adjoining the great gates of which stands the village—in some respects a model one—which the requirements of the workpeople called into existence. But with its isolation on the landward or northern side, Kynochtown combines the tremendous advantage of direct connection with the Thames, by which it is bounded on the south, and the creeks of Holehaven and Shellhaven lying east and west of it respectively. About two miles of the estate front on to the Thames, and



OIL MILL FARM.

something like three miles on to the two navigable creeks just named. From all of which it may be gathered that Kynochtown, factory of the most highly dangerous products that are known even to civilization, stands on a special and supremely suitable site. Isolated as it is and always must be, Kynochtown's chief connecting link with the world on the landward side consists of the Corringham Light Railway, which conveys the workpeople to and from the factory and Corringham several times a day, and connects Kynochtown with the little port of Thames Haven and the London, Tilbury, and Southend Railway on the south.



This little line, along which—when it can be induced to move—the tiny engine wanders, not too hurriedly, among the marshes and ditches, may be the smallest, but is certainly one of the



CORRINGHAM VILLAGE.

most profitable railways in the country. Its receipts last year amounted to £2,063 12s. 8d., and its expenses to £867 8s. 1d. Truly the battle is not always to the swift. The line was built by Kynochs, and opened six years ago—two years later, that is

to say, than the official naming of Kynochtown, which was performed by Miss Katherine Chamberlain (daughter of Mr. Arthur Chamberlain) when that lady visited the new village to lay the foundation of the schools there on November 18, 1899.

So much then for the site and origin of Kynochtown, the general aspect of which may be gathered from the view presented herewith—a view taken from the 'sea-wall,' which is formed of marsh clay, extracted so as to leave a drain on the land side. These sea-walls, many miles of which line the Essex shore of the Thames, are of vital importance to the dweller on the marshes, as the following extract from the parish register of Fobbing Church will indicate :—

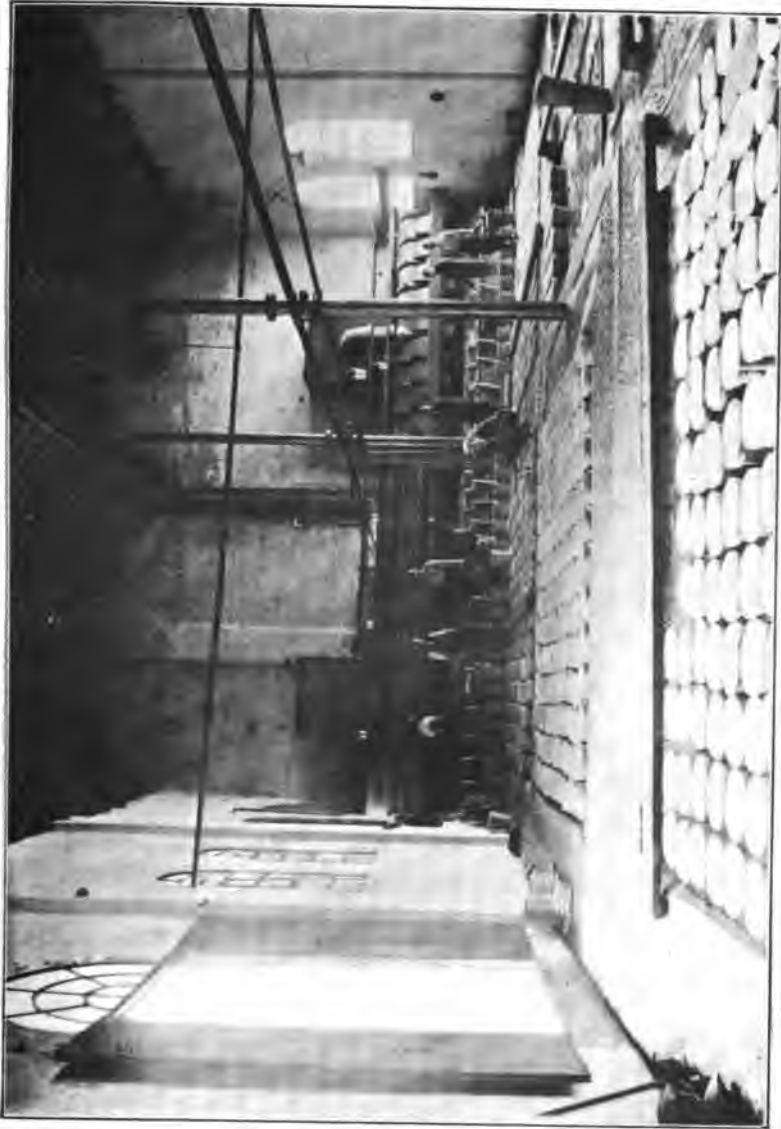
On Monday, the 16th day of February, 1735, about two o'clock in the afternoon, the wind being at north-west, there was the highest tide that was ever known, which overflowed all the sea-walls and laid the whole level several feet under water; it was computed to rise higher at London Bridge by eight inches than any tide yt had been in two hundred years before.

In recent days, in fact only a few months after the erection of the Kynoch factory, on November 29, 1897, a similar disaster occurred, a tidal wave bursting over the sea-walls, carrying all before it, and submerging the factory in three feet of water. The marshlands on either side of the river met a similar fate, but the factory buildings, having been placed sufficiently high to be above the floods, suffered but little damage, although the workpeople who were in them at the time of the flood had to remain until a rescue was effected by means of rafts. It would be interesting to know whether this latter-day flood was placed on record in the local church registers, as was that of 1735. Probably not. The sea-walls, or the management of them, is now vested in a permanent Commission, which has charge of a certain section or 'level,' Kynochtown lands forming part of the 'Fobbing levels.' While for spiritual purposes the new settlement is in Fobbing—that ancient forest village where Jack Straw's rising commenced in Essex—for civil purposes it forms part of Corringham, 'Home of the Corrs,' a village which is strangely ancient and modern, with its Norman-towered church, and its garish new cottages of red brick abutting on the 'terminus' of the Kynochtown railway.

And now as to Kynoch Factory, that great spreading range of mysterious, low-pitched buildings, which lies to the left of Kynochtown, and entrance to which can only be obtained

through the great gates, impressive in their size, and guarded by the 'Kynoch' Lions carved in stone. From the moment of entry the visitor cannot help feeling that he is in unwonted and possibly perilous surroundings. The searching query with which he is met by the patrol at the gates, as to whether he has any matches or other combustibles upon him, serves to impress his mind at once with the magnitude of the explosive forces which exist on every side, forces which are merely hidden, but could in no way be confined within the lightly constructed buildings which, in the main, make up the factory. And in the second place the remarkable stillness of the place is profoundly impressive. The workers are there, all around us, varying in number, when the factory is in full operation, from three or four hundred up to six hundred; but the various buildings are so detached, and the whole factory covers such an extensive area, that the silence of the place is only broken by the plaintive cry of the marsh birds, or the sighing of the wind, which, whatever the season of the year may be, seems ever to blow over these lowlands. The silence and the space exercise an undeniably solemnizing effect on the visitor unused to the place—an impression that would probably be lessened as the result of more familiar acquaintance with it—and prepare him for that extreme caution and implicit obedience to directions which must be observed by any who are fortunate enough to be permitted to examine closely the various departments of which the factory is made up.

Kynochtown factory is occupied in the manufacture of ammunition, chemicals, and every variety of explosives. Elsewhere, in other factories belonging to the same company, various kindred work is going on. At Arklow, of recent Parliamentary fame, for instance; at Wassborough Dale, Yorkshire, the home of black gunpowder; and at Witton, the company's principal works, probably seven or eight thousand people are, in all, employed. Kynochtown factory is divided into two distinct areas—the danger area, and that containing the chemical portion of the works and sundry workshops, offices, etc. A main road, which leads to the landing stage in Holehaven Creek, constitutes the boundary of the danger zone, which is divided into sections, devoted respectively to the manufacture of gun-cotton, black gunpowder, smokeless powder, cordite, nitro-glycerine, and .303 cartridges. In either section there is much that is of the utmost



GUN-COTTON DIPPING HOUSE.

interest to see, and a great deal that can be, to some extent at least, appreciated even by the layman who is so unlearned that he may not know a moderant from a solvent, or distinguish Troisdorf from Plastomenite powder. In a brief and entirely non-technical paper like this only a general impression can be given. And just as on entering the factory its intense silence strikes the mind, so, on closer examination, the admirable discipline of the place becomes a marked feature. Take, for example, our visit to the cordite range—a long line of low



KYNOCH STEAMERS DISCHARGING AT KYNOCHTOWN.

houses, with the square tower of the accumulator rising in the midst. Before entering any of the houses, or, indeed, being permitted to step across a certain line along the gangway which runs outside them, rubber overshoes have to be put on, in order to avoid the danger of friction being set up by the contact of ordinary walking shoes or boots with the floor within.

Cordite is the smokeless powder which has been used by the British service these sixteen years past, and is composed of nitro-glycerine and gun-cotton gelatinized by means of a solvent,

to which a certain proportion of a mineral hydrocarbon is added as a moderant. The principal stages in its manufacture consist of drying the gun-cotton; mixing it with nitro-glycerine; incorporating, pressing and reeling, or cutting; drying and blending and packing. A great deal might be said in explanation of these processes. In each stage or process and in every separate house, there is apparent that subdued air of discipline which, more, perhaps, than aught else, convinces the visitor of the underlying sense of danger, and necessity for absolute care, with which even the most thoughtless employee is impressed while engaged on his or her work. For at Kynochtown, and in kindred factories, the workpeople are of either sex. Probably of the whole something like ten per cent. are women or girls, whose deft touch and quickness of hand render them specially fitted to deal with such branches as the blending of the cordite and other stages in the process of its manufacture. Passing from room to room, one sees the lines of women and girls quietly and busily employed, all uniformly clothed in scarlet dresses, the colour denoting that they are employed within the danger zone, and emphasizing the necessity for the utmost care on the part of the wearer. They know the necessity full well, and are aware of the awful results that might ensue from the slightest act of forgetfulness. Moreover, the Company, rightly and wisely, strengthens this sense of responsibility by the infliction of the severest penalties on any employee detected transgressing rules which are essential for the safety of the whole place. Mere statistics are unimpressive, but when the vast power of this propellant and the danger of its constituent parts is realized, few words are necessary to emphasize the extreme necessity of care in handling it at every stage. There is danger everywhere, from the drying of the gun-cotton onward, and the immunity from serious disaster which has happily attended Kynochtown since its commencement is the best testimony as to the care with which the regulations have been observed. The comparatively recent disaster at Woolwich, which caused damage to houses in Corringham, many miles distant across the river, serves as an object lesson in this direction.

As to the appearance of cordite, after the earlier stage, in which it is paste, it is passed through machines from which it emerges in strands of varying size which are cut to the

required length, for all the world like strips of seaweed, brown, and of a gelatinous character. The blending follows after it is dried, and the nicety of this operation may be inferred from the fact that some sixty separate strands, of varying thickness, go to make up one cartridge. The size of the strand may vary from the thickness of a single hair to a quite considerable diameter. The packing of cordite is done into wooden boxes, holding 50lbs. or more, according to the cordite. Alongside of all these processes, or succeeding them, there are, of course, tests—the



SMOKELESS POWDER BLENDING HOUSE.

moisture test, the heat test for stability, and so on, some carried out in the laboratories by accomplished chemists, and others on the ranges, where the actual velocities and pressures have to come within certain defined limits. In every stage there is danger, unless certain rules are observed. Acetone, the solvent used in cordite, is poisonous; gun-cotton or nitro-glycerine are extremely sensitive and dangerous to handle; the finished product is an explosive of the most powerful character known to man. Small wonder then that throughout the works young and old

have learnt to put carelessness and heedlessness aside, and to exercise that constant caution which alone tends to ensure safety to all concerned in this dangerous occupation.

We cannot now speak at any length of the smokeless sporting powder, black gunpowder, and those other products which go out into all the world from this Thames-side factory. Sportsmen everywhere know the former product, the awards for which make a brave show in the factory office—itsself a wooden building which was originally erected in Hyde Park to accommodate the troops encamped therein during the Jubilee of 1887. The processes by which either product is made in its present perfection involve such nicety and attention to infinitesimal detail as to the lay mind seem scarcely comprehensible. And about it all there is that element of possible danger, the thought of which can never be far removed from the minds of those to whom is entrusted the delicate and responsible task of handling daily vast quantities of the most destructive products that man has yet discovered, or is ever likely to invent. With the Peace Conference at the Hague even now in sitting, a visit to the factory of Kynoch, Limited, gives rise to some interesting speculations. But that is another story.

[The writer wishes to express his indebtedness to Kynochs, Limited, and especially to Mr. W. Helcké, manager at Kynochtown, for the photographs which illustrate this article, and for information courteously given in its preparation.]

---

## THE VOICE FROM THE NIGHT.

BY A. S. CRIPPS.

IT was a bitter nightfall, with the rain falling and a north wind blowing. John Skene was not sure of his road. He looked for the light of a farmhouse when he had travelled half-an-hour, but he did not find it; so he harked back, and now he felt he had lost his bearings as he wandered aimlessly on and on. The rain had turned to sleet and stung his face; his hands were perished, carrying bundles; his feet grew very numb. At last he came into a deep lane between hedges. One might think that he had wandered out of Essex into Devonshire, such was the steepness of the enclosing banks.

Here it was ever so much warmer, and, joy and mystery! in the very lap of the hollow burnt red and dim the relics of a great



fire. He was soon squatting beside it and blowing the embers. He pulled out bread and meat that he had packed in a scarf, then an earthen flask of wine which he set in the ashes. So far he had had little time to think, he was so busy with rejoicing and thankfulness; now he began to think a great deal. In the firelight he could see the prints of many men and horses.

‘Half a score at least,’ thought he, ‘and they are gone north. God help the folk in their way!’

It was the time when the Queen’s bands that won, or half won, at Saint Albans, were drawing off again towards Yorkshire. Here, on the roads between Maldon and Thaxted, there had been a good deal of pillaging, and men murdered here and there.

John Skene had come by some goods rather lightly in these curious times, and he was making haste to Chipping Ongar under cover of the dark. The market there was on Wednesdays, and this was Monday night. When his wine was warmed and drunk, he shouldered his pack and grasped his bundles, to start warily up the lane to the left.

The moon had risen now, and looked through a surf of light clouds; the sleet came very sparsely. Before he had gone fifty yards he found something that brought him back to the fire to pass the night there. It was the body of a man lying on his face, but whether dead or not, Skene could not say. Something in the feel of the flesh and the fall of the limbs made him wonder whether there was not life still within. He threw down his packs and lifted and dragged the body to the fire; it was a very light one, great bones indeed, but little covering. Then he went back to fetch his own gear. When he reached the fire the third time the man was talking in a thin voice. ‘I came,’ he said, ‘where the cold bit me.’ He shivered and sighed. His face was a dead man’s face and his jaw fell as he ceased. Skene thought ‘he is dead at last.’ But a few moments after the man twitched his mouth in ghastly strife and pain and went on again; not many words, yet those very slowly.

‘Tell them at the Guest-House to feed the starving. Isn’t a man better than a picture or a shrine? Isn’t it better to give starving men meat than to have flesh oneself all days but fast-days.’ There was the same fall of the jaw; then after awhile the same struggle. His voice grew yet thinner and his throat rattled between his words. ‘I have been dead,’ he said, ‘and now I

know. Christ, He said sooth. We but play at feeding poor men. We keep the bread and flesh and we call it God's love to give the crumbs. But give all, all as Jesu gave. When one is dead, one looks back. Up old roads, Oh! so far and so clear. One is throttled with the meat and the drink, and strangled with the clothes we were so mean with. We cannot see Christ for heaped shrines and thin faces. Go to tell them, for it's but a mile hence. I have climbed all these hours and hours from the pit to tell them.'

The head fell forward, and the voice went far away, miles and miles as it seemed, while he called on Jesu and Saint Anthony. Skene could hear the voice as if behind a hill, long after the eyes closed, through the rattlings of the throat. Then there was nothing more to hear. The man was no living man. Had he ever been this long while? Skene was seized with qualms of sickness. In those muttered words there had been something abject, as the words of a soul driven out and once for all coming back to find its house half bolted and very cheerless. Flesh and spirit had not seemed to accord, they were as strangers, or rather old friends, who have outgrown or forgotten. Moreover, there was a savour in the air when the man spoke, as though his breath and lips had been for some while put by, and then reclaimed again tardily.

After the silence that fell for good and all, Skene first began to take real notice of his dress, which was that of some sort of lay-brother. He tried chafing the wrists awhile, but there was never a sign of life. Then Skene prayed for the soul, prayed to his own saints and to God for watch and ward, and lay down to sleep.

He stirred and roused himself in the night two or three times, but there was nothing moving save the wind in the hedges, and a stick snapping in the paling fire.

The dark-habited form lay quite firm and fast, with hood drawn over face, as it had been left.

When Skene sprang up at last the light was coming. The sky was very clear, it was cold and quiet. He was in doubt what to do till he heard the sound of horses on the hill and someone whistling. They were coming down the hill his way. He that drove the team was ploughman at the small Abbey close by. He came at Skene's beseeching, and declared he knew the body

as that of one of the lay-brothers. He showed Skene a track across the ploughed fields where he might go and call aid.

It was a rich Abbey, with a poorly served Guest-House, just as you might have guessed from those words spoken by the dead.

The lay-brother was dead, had been dead these three days, said a brother who professed the art of healing. Skene listened to him open-mouthed, but did not gainsay. The brothers washed and dressed the corpse for the grave, and took it on a bier into their church. They set beeswax lights about it, and the mass began. Said the Abbot, 'We will bury him after breakfast.'

At breakfast in the Refectory, Skene told his wild story. It were hard to say whether any of the brothers were altogether incredulous, although two professed to be. The Abbot summed up the matter with discretion: 'It may be that he was not dead, and it may be that he, being dead, yet spoke. The time was night, and ye were bespent and weary. Yet the words that ye heard were good words, even words for all to remember, or ever they come to die.'

No more was said at that time, but before Skene left, the Abbot took him aside, and asked him whether he felt moved by this adventure to sell all that he had and give himself to religion.

Skene had been strangely stirred at the burial, and he did not answer at once. 'I would fain answer you to-morrow,' he said. So he rested with them that night, and they prayed for him, being honest men, albeit they kept a good table.

In the morning he would not stay, although they sorely pressed him.

He had repeated some of those desperate words of the dead to them, but they had shaken their heads.

'Such zeal, over-reaching self, trippeth headlong,' said the Abbot, and proceeded to justify their reasonable way, as against Saint Francis and certain others. 'Yet if I should go the way of religion, I should try to go the way of these,' said Skene. 'Meseemeth that having heard that way so plainly commended, it would chafe me to be tied to a gracious fellowship such as yours. If I should give anything for Christ, why should I not give all, so far as a man may give? Why should I eat and

drink well and certainly with a Brotherhood, when the poor have no certain hope of meat from day to day.'

The wonted answer was vouchsafed, to wit, that so doing one would live longer to succour the starving, than if one starved oneself. But Skene was not content with it. 'I have no father or mother,' he said, 'only a brother, who has wealth enough. I will give you one bundle of gear. Ye shall sell or buy it as ye will, and say masses for him that is now certainly departed the way of Death. For he taught me indeed the way of God, as it seems to me. And the pack and the other bundle will I sell in Ongar, where I have sold merchandise these many years. Then will I take the road, and pay such service to those that wear our Lord's ragged livery as an unskilled man may.'

'It was ever the road of Lollardy,' said one of the monks.

'Or may be the way of Calvary,' said the Abbot, with some compassion.

So Skene went down the road with pack at shoulders, and one great armful.

Three days after he turned up the North Road, a Franciscan of 200 years back, without the habit.

As he went northwards in the train of that savage army he found plenty of work. He found among others four starving children in a rifled farmhouse, and when he had nothing left, having done all he could for them, he was at his wit's end. But he went and told some kin of theirs in a village five miles off, and they said they would send for them the next day. He was anxious as to the foraging for the children for that night, since he had forgotten to ask their relations till he was far on the way back. So he went up to an ale-house on a lonely green, that he might barter away his belt-buckle, and thought to drive as keen a bargain as ever he had done in Chipping Ongar. But those were uncertain days. Two drunken archers, as it fell out, set upon him and beat his head in with their staves.

So John Skene was saved from further anxieties, and went the way of knowledge. But his soul never slipped back as that other one's to tell what it learnt down the road, and to impeach oblates of self-love and ascetics of luxury.

## MALDON CIVIL COURTS, 1402.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

THIS paper carries back the existence of these courts as far as extant documents allow, describes their archaic features as then found, and tries to point out the large place they occupied in the business-life of South-East Essex. In this matter, as in so many others, trouble has arisen from 'the new edition.' A strange accident has lately made public the old Tell-it-not-in-Gath secret of the Bodleian, that, on acquiring the third edition of Shakespeare's works, the library authorities tossed into a heap of superseded duplicates, and sold for a few shillings, the library copy of the First Folio which has now been re-bought for £3,000. The charter of Philip and Mary, February 28, 1555, played a like part at Maldon. It was the legal instrument which could be appealed to in courts of law to justify the exercise of the borough privileges. Its continued use, accordingly, obscured the fact that these privileges were of great antiquity, and so led to present neglect, and subsequent loss, of the old charters by which they had been conferred.

This charter of 1555 affirmed the title of the bailiffs of Maldon to hold in their Mote-hall a court for determination of all causes, real or personal, which arose within the borough, and affirmed also the right of the bailiffs to compel the parties in these causes to plead in that court, either by distraint on their goods or by imprisonment. Real causes were those connected with land or houses; personal, those for recovery of debts, goods, or damages. The Charter further appointed Monday as the day for holding the weekly court. All this, however, is merely the recital of powers which had been in existence for at least a century and a half before the date of the charter. The extant Rolls, which record proceedings in the various Maldon courts, begin on August 28, 1402, and go on, with occasional gaps in the series, till 1504. Throughout all that period we find Maldon court exercising to the full the powers which were confirmed to it in 1555. It may, therefore, be of interest to put together from the earliest of the rolls a bare outline of legal procedure in an Essex borough at the beginning of the fifteenth century.

The plaintiff, personally or by attorney, appeared in court on a Monday, stated his claim, and put in security for the costs that

might be charged to him. Thus, August 28, 1402, Stephen Smyth, by his attorney Robert Brown (who became Smyth's surety), raised an action against Alice Trewlove for detaining goods which he said were his.

The court had then to decide how best to secure the defendant's attendance. Sometimes the defendant was simply summoned; more usually the forcible method of distraint (called also attachment or arrest) of goods was had recourse to. August 28, 1402, the officer of the court was ordered to distrain on Alice Trewlove to answer Smyth's action. Amusing lists of distresses, or goods thus taken possession of, occur. In 1405, to answer Richard Allone's suit, Alan Fysscher was attached by 3 coffers, 3 bedcloths, 1 chair, 4 cushions, and a board with 2 trestles. In some cases the officer actually kept the goods; in others, he gave them up to the defendant on security being given for payment of their value when demanded. In 1416 John Bysshop, of Writtle, having been distrained by a horse to answer a suit raised by William Dyer, of Witham, found a surety who became bound to 'bear the stress' of 10s. (value of the horse) if Bishop did not attend on the court-day. Mistakes were often made, wrong goods or insufficient goods being seized. In 1415 the officer distrained on William Swayn, of Mundon, by a horse, a bridle, and a sack of flour, but had to give them up to the bailiff of Mundon because they belonged to that manor, not to Swayn. In these cases fresh or further distraint was ordered at next court. In 1403 the seizure of two saucepans having failed to bring Katherine Parson into court to answer a suit of the wardens of St. Mary's gild, the officer was directed to seize goods of more value. John Audemer, of Maldon, in the beginning of 1414, was distrained on by a barrel of sweet wine, 4 yards of fustian, and 3 yards of linen cloth, to appear on February 19. As he did not appear further distress was ordered, which brought him to court on February 26. Occasionally 'rescue' was made, that is, the defendant removed the distresses without giving security. In July, 1416, when John Newman, sued for a debt of seventeen pence, was distrained on by his crop of fuller's teazels, he removed them from his garden without leave, but the officer went into his house, and effected a new distraint by carrying off one of his bed-sheets. As a rule rescue was visited by fine. In November, 1420, John Chylde broke arrest by

removing a horse with saddle and bridle which had been distrained. On December 9 he made his submission in court, and was let off on payment of 6d. fine. An amusing case attaches itself to a resident, presumably, of Great Waltham parish. In April, 1420, the officer reported that he had attached John Waltham, barker (*i.e.*, tanner), by a grey horse and saddle, but that Waltham had carried off the horse. He was instructed to use fresh distraint to bring him to court to answer for his offence. Waltham frustrated this by keeping out of the way, and on June 3 the court, in indignation, inflicted the heavy fine of 6s. 8d. for his contempt. Market by market, the officer watched to catch property of Waltham's within Maldon jurisdiction. The capture was effected on September 9, and Waltham then put in two Maldon householders as security that all his fines would be paid that Michaelmas.

When the defendant, by distraint or otherwise, was brought into court, the proverbial three courses lay open to him. Usually, anticipating the general course of modern county court summonses, liability was admitted. Then the defendant either asked leave to settle the case out of court or allowed judgment to be entered against him and the law to take its course. His action, in the former instance, was called a retraxit or withdrawft, and he paid a fine of 3d. to the court, if a freeman, and 6d. if not a freeman. In 1555, in the case of real actions, these fines were doubled. An example is September 4, 1402, John Marchaunt, on the suit of John Crakebon, appeared in court, acknowledged his debt, and withdrew the case from court, paying 3d. Where judgment was entered against a defendant, he was sometimes ordered to pay the specified amount into the next court. The more usual form was that the officer of the court was directed to levy, by distress if necessary, the fine for the court, and the amount decreed for, with damages, for the plaintiff. Damages seem generally set at 2d. or 3d. in the shilling of the principal debt. When the defendant denied liability, he was ordered to establish his plea in the next court following. This was done by the antique method of compurgators. He appeared, with a number of respectable neighbours (5, 6, 10, 11, as required by the court), and if these took oath that they believed the defendant's statement, he was acquitted. There is an excellent example in two cross-suits, brought on September 18, 1402. Stephen Mone

prosecuted John Sawyer for refusing to give up a bolster, worth 10d., and Sawyer claimed from Mone a debt of 12d., with damages. Each was ordered to appear, with his friends. On September 25 Sawyer's friends took oath that they believed him rather than Mone in the matter of the bolster; and Mone was, in the ordinary course of procedure, fined 3d. for false claim. On October 2, Mone failed to find friends to take oath that he did not owe Sawyer that shilling, and the officer was ordered to levy from Mone the fine of 3d. for the court, with 12d. and damages, to be paid to Sawyer. The third course was that, on denying liability, the defendant might ask the case to be postponed, over one court-day, if he were a 'foreigner' or non-freeman, but over three, if he were a freeman. 'Every freeman,' the 1448 by-laws specify, 'shall have three essoynes (that is, three court-days of answer), and a foreyn, one essoyn, if he will.' On June 18, 1403, John Marchaunt, sued for 4s. 6d., price of a cade of red herring, and 2s. damages for withholding payment for more than a year, appeared and denied liability. When, on June 25, the case came up for trial Marchaunt claimed his first essoyn.

The above actions are all personal. There is, however, an early example of a real action, sufficient to establish the antiquity of that jurisdiction. In January, 1411, after the death of Jeffrey Mott, his property in St. Mary's parish, called 'the Church-house,' was claimed by his son John, under the custom of the borough, and by another son, Thomas, under the father's will. It is unfortunate that the decision of the court is lost, since we have clearly a nice point raised as to the applicability of two borough bye-laws. The general law of inheritance in Maldon was that known as borough-English: 'The youngest son of the first wife shall have the heritage' of the father's house or land within the borough. This was modified by a custom, which made it 'lawful to every man that purchaseth any house or land within the borough to devise his purchase,' provided this devise is shown in court to the bailiffs within a fortnight after the acquisition, 'else it shall remain to the heir' under the general custom. To 'purchase' here seems to mean to acquire in any way other than by inheritance.

Lords of manors, whether individuals or corporations, shewed great anxiety to have all suits between tenants of the manor



decided in the court of their own manor. Something of this zeal may have come from their desire to recompense the steward of the manor by giving him a monopoly of money spent in litigation. Much more is probably due to the dread that, if any outside court got a footing within the manor, it might play King Stork. At Maldon the by-law (1468) is of the severest. 'No freeman shall sue another freeman, except in the borough court. If he is dissatisfied with the verdict there given, he may appeal to the higher courts, with leave of the bailiffs. Violation of either rule involves imprisonment for forty days with a great fine and expulsion from the freedom.'

The court not only had a monopoly of suits between freeman and freeman. Special circumstances gave it a wide jurisdiction. Maldon, as a harbour, had a considerable export trade in timber, firewood, malt, grain, roots, butter, and a considerable import trade in coal, fulling-earth, salt, lime, building-stone. As an industrial town, it had many cutlers, smiths, weavers, fullers, brewers, coopers, shipwrights. To its bi-weekly markets, Wednesdays and Saturdays, farmers, graziers, butchers, dairy-men, fishermen, gardeners, from a wide district, brought their produce. Its three fairs, each lasting four days, March 24-27, August 31-September 3, September 7-10, clustering round the festivals of Lady Day, St. Giles, Nativity of Mary, were attended by packmen from London, Colchester, and other towns, and by horse dealers and cattle-dealers from far. The borough had, therefore, a large concourse of people habitually resorting to it to buy and sell. Those of them who had claims against Maldon burgesses naturally sought to enforce their claims in Maldon itself when the goods of the opposite party could readily be attached in the suit. A few instances may exemplify several hundreds. April, 1403, Jeffrey Short, vicar of Ulting, sued Richard Ludlowe. May, 1408, Richard Perot, of Barling, prosecuted John Turpyn, of Maldon, for detaining his boat, valued at £4 6s. 8d. 1423, John Tanner, woolman, of Billericay, sued John Friday, weaver.

Tit for tat, however. Maldon provided exceptional facilities for Maldon tradesmen bringing troublesome outside customers into court for debt or damages. Every time an outsider brought produce or cattle into market, or boat or cargo to the hythe, he laid himself open to the jurisdiction of the court. One other

circumstance has to be added, not only as affecting Maldon small debt court, but as contributing something to an important geological problem. At Maldon was the first bridge over the Chelmer. To the east was the unbridged tidal estuary, unapproached by passable roads. To the west, for miles, the Chelmer ran deep, with muddy bottom. Just at Maldon the borough kept up a wooden bridge, Fulbridge, over the Chelmer, communicating by a raised causeway, with a stone bridge (causeway and bridge also maintained by Maldon), Heybridge, over the Blackwater. Whatever traffic, therefore, horse with pack-saddle, cart with load, pedlar with pack, drover with cattle, pigs, or sheep, passed between South-East Essex and Colchester and the north, or from the northern into the south-eastern hundreds, had perforce to go by Maldon bridges, and, in passing, became liable to distraint by the officer of Maldon court. The importance of this in extending the jurisdiction of the court is obvious. Now for the geological problem. The site of this causeway and the flat pasture-land (Portman Marsh, then the property of the borough), across which its mound passed, is now unrecognisable because railway, railway station, factory, warehouse, villa, cover it. In old leases, however, it is plain that Portman Marsh cannot have stood at its present level, but much lower. There are, in its leases, urgent clauses about keeping up the sea walls; about building them further back, if the sea swept away the line where they then stood; about not paying rent, if the land was submerged by 'outrage of waters' until the dykes and sluices were fully repaired. Frequent payments are made for filling up 'breaks' in the causeway, and great quantities of gravel are carted there. All these things are irreconcilable with Portman Marsh as it now is. If, therefore, there is, as Mr. E. A. Fitch has pointed out (*Maldon and the River Blackwater*, p. 62), tradition and geology to show, far back, subsidence at the mouth of the estuary, there is historical presumption for a subsequent rising of the level at the point reached by the tide. This is, however, a digression. We return to proceedings taken in Maldon Court by burgesses against outsiders. In 1406, in a suit raised by John Burgeys, merchant, of Maldon, the defendants (executors of Philip Eggmere, merchant, of Colchester) were distrained on by a lighter, valued at £8. In 1423 John Gate sued Thomas Bereman, pedder, of Oakley, near Harwich. In 1423,

John Cokyn, malter, of Clavering, near Saffron Walden, was distrained on by three horses, to answer Richard Sampson's claim for damages through failure to deliver malt as per contract. In 1436, at suit of John Rawley, John Smalcome, mariner, of London, was attached by his bow and sheaf of arrows.

There are numerous instances in which outsiders settled their differences by suit in Maldon Court. Here, of course, Maldon facility of distraint accounts for something, but something also must be allowed for the overt impartiality of the court. If a stranger sued a man in the man's own manor, he might suspect the steward of the manor of inclination to view with favour the defence. But the town clerk of Maldon had no personal interest, as between two strangers. Cases are:—1407, suit by Walter Hosyer, of Sandwich, against Henry Chapman, of Rochester; 1409, by William Paynell, of Tilney, against John Baliaunte, of Boston; 1414, by William Savage, mayor of Poole, Dorsetshire, against John Grene, baker, of Mersea. One suit suggests building-work on a church. In 1414, Thomas atte Steyle, mason, of Maidstone, raised an action for debt against Adam Herle, of Tillingham, and the parishioners of Tillingham. In 1430, two inhabitants of neighbouring parishes came a long way to settle their dispute, John Vykerys, of Felsted, suing John Walingier, of Great Waltham. In 1439, at the suit of William Swetyng dyer, of Coggeshall, John Hamond, fuller, of Danbury, was attached by a quantity of fulling-earth.

There are a number of instances in which action is brought at Maldon by an outsider against a resident in his own town. In 1429, John Batayle, of Chelmsford, sued William Standon, of Chelmsford. In 1434 Ralph Barton, of London, sued Robert Profote, of London.

For the convenience of travelling merchants, who could make no long stay, there existed a court which did its work more expeditiously than the ordinary borough court, condensing its procedure into one afternoon, or at most an afternoon and the forenoon of next day. This would seem to have been used on market-days and fair-days, but appears also to have been resorted to in special cases in lieu of the Monday court. This is called at first 'court of the market,' afterwards by the ordinary term Piepowder Court (from *pieds poudrieux*, the dusty feet of the

suitors). In 1406, John Payn, merchant, of Colchester, in the court of the market, sued Thomas Wangeford, also merchant of Colchester, for 20s. debt. Wangeford was distrained on, and the case called for 10 a m. Payn failed to find eleven compurgators to swear with him to the debt, and was, therefore, mulcted 6d. In 1409, in the court of the market, John Fisscher, of Chelmersford, sued Robert Normandy, of Branktre, for a debt of 10s. On market-day, Saturday, August 23, 1455, Thomas Swete, of London, and John Borell, of Chelmsford, raised cross-suits in Piepowder Court. They soon repented them of their quarrel, and when the cases were called, neither party appeared in court. The chamberlains of Maldon, however, sought them out, and made each of them pay 6d., his court-fine for a withdrawal. A case connected with the second of the September fairs in 1455 gives us a most amusing picture of the fiery energy of this special court beating down a Maldon burgess's shield of his essoyné privilege. In Piepowder Court, Tuesday after Nativity of Mary, September 11, 1455, Richard Elwalde, of Canewdon, sought to recover £5 due on a bond by Nicholas, weaver, of Maldon. Nicholas was distrained on to appear at 10 a.m., and when he failed to do so was mulcted 6d. The case was adjourned till 3 p.m., when Nicholas again failed to appear and was mulcted 12d. The case was adjourned till 4 p.m., when Nicholas claimed his first essoyné. The case was adjourned till next morning (Wednesday) at 9 a.m., and then, on second essoyné being claimed, till 4 p.m. that day. Nicholas then asked leave, court-fine 6d., to settle the case out of court. The terms were that at Christmas he should pay into court 2s. for his fines to the borough and 3s. 4d. in part-payment to the plaintiff. A further payment of 20s. on February 2 following was to extinguish the debt.

---

## THE GREAT VINE OF VALENTINES, ILFORD.

BY MILLER CHRISTY, F.L.S.

**W**HEN any member of the Vegetable Kingdom contrives (however passively) to achieve fame (however modest), it usually does so either by reason of its great size or of the high food-value or delicious flavour of its fruit. The remarkable plant described in the following paragraphs, namely, the

Great Vine, which grew formerly at 'Valentines,' in Great Ilford, and was close upon 150 years old when wantonly destroyed, was notable in all these respects, especially in size. It was as famous in its day as its descendant, the Great Vine at Hampton Court Palace, is now, and is, therefore, well worthy of a brief commemorative notice.

The roomy mansion now known as Valentines was built towards the close of the seventeenth century by Mr. James Chadwick, a son-in-law of John Tillotson, Archbishop of Canterbury (1691-94), who was, it is said, a frequent visitor there. The dwelling-house was called, originally, 'Valentine



'VALENTINES,' ILFORD.

House,' but why so named is not known. After passing through the hands of various owners, including Sir James Raymond, Bart., in whose time the vine was planted, the mansion came into the possession of the Ingleby family, its present possessors. They ceased, however, to occupy it on the death of the late Mrs. Ingleby, at the age of eighty, in January 1906. Up to this time, there was probably no country seat of such pretensions situated anywhere so near to London. Certainly there was none in Essex; for Valentines, with its ten acres of pleasure-grounds and park of about one hundred acres, lies within eight miles of the Royal Exchange. The view here given (for which readers are indebted to Mr. G. E. Tasker, author of *Ilford Past and*

*Present*), represents the house as it is to-day. Though far from handsome according to modern ideas, it still forms a comfortable residence.

The vine was planted at Valentines, in April 1758, by a Mr. Eden, head-gardener to Sir James Raymond, who appears to have made no special preparation of the soil. It was of the kind known as the Black Hamburg—so called, it is said, because imported into England from Germany by way of Hamburg. The importer seems to have been one John Warner, a London merchant, who brought this variety of vine to this country early in the Eighteenth Century. All the vines which have since attained remarkable size here seem to have been of this variety, which is exceptional in respect of its rapid and extensive growth. To what dimensions a healthy plant might attain in favourable conditions, it is hard to say, for all the most famous English specimens have completely filled to the utmost capacity, with their various branches, the houses in which they have grown. Probably a free-growing plant would easily fill a much larger vinery than any ever yet constructed. The example at Valentines grew in a vinery of remarkable size for the period, it being seventy feet long. Much larger houses are, of course, now common, owing to the cheapness of both glass and iron. The use of iron permits of a lightness and strength of construction which was unattainable in the days when the vinery at Valentines was erected with solid oak timbers. This vinery does not adjoin the house (the glass-house shown in the illustration is merely a small conservatory), but is erected against the southern face of a high wall on one side of one of the walled vegetable gardens.

The great vine not only filled the vinery, but extended beyond it, along the southern face of the wall, covering altogether a distance of about two hundred feet. Its early growth must have been remarkably rapid; for, by 1769, when only eleven years old, it had attained such a size that it was thought worth while to take from it the cutting which has now developed into the well-known Hampton Court vine.

From an early date, the grapes from the Valentines vine seem to have been regularly marketed. The Rev. William Gilpin, writing in 1791, says\* :—

It annually produces about four hundredweight of grapes, which used formerly (when the hothouse, I suppose, was kept warmer) to ripen in March, though

\* *Remarks on Forest Scenery*, i., pp. 149-151 (1791).

lately they have not ripened till June, when they sell at four shillings a pound, which produces about eighty pounds. . . . When the grapes ripened earlier, they produced much more than eighty pounds. A gentleman of character informed me that he had it from Sir Charles Raymond himself that, after supplying his own table, he has made one hundred and twenty pounds a year of the grapes; and the same gentleman, who was curious, enquired of the fruit-dealers, who told him that, in some years, they supposed the profits have not amounted to less than three hundred pounds. . . . At the lowest calculation the profits were prodigious. The stem of the vine was, in the year 1789, thirteen inches in circumference.

This famous vine survived and continued to bear fruit for about a century and a quarter, a truly remarkable record of prosperity. A Mr. W. Collyns, of Drews Teignton, who visited it in 1835, says\* that, in that year, it bore four hundredweight of grapes, and that its stem was then twenty-four inches in circumference. It would probably have been alive now had it not been destroyed wilfully. About thirty years ago (say, about 1875) there came to Valentines a 'new broom' in the shape of a new head-gardener, fresh from the spick and span royal gardens at Sandringham, where everything is done on the latest and most up-to-date principles. The methods followed in tending the aged vine were opposed to all his ideas on the subject of viticulture; and, knowing or caring nothing as to its long history, he promptly removed its venerable and bulky stem from the vinery and planted in its place a number of young sapling vines, in accordance with the most approved modern principles. He had announced his intentions to no one, and only when the ancient stump was blazing on a bonfire was news of the holocaust brought to Mr. W. A. Shepherd, the estate steward. That gentleman at once proceeded to the spot and succeeded in rescuing the charred stem before it was totally consumed. The fragment thus snatched from destruction was then affixed to one of the inner walls of the vinery, over the entrance doorway, and here it remains to this day—a memento of the wide fame the Valentines vine once enjoyed. It is shown in the accompanying photograph.

In more than one way, however, the ancient vine may be said to survive, even to-day. I am assured by Mr. William Bunn, who has been employed in the gardens for forty-six years and now has charge of them, that the actual root of the old vine was never removed from the ground, and that, from it, after the original stem was destroyed, there sprang up two shoots which

\* *Notes and Queries*, 1st series, xii., p. 404 (1855).

are now healthy plants and bear fruit every year. These two vines are easily distinguishable from the others now in the vinery, as they grow at a different angle and in a different line.

Moreover, the famous vine has yet other descendants, grown from slips, some of which have been or are famous. It was the parent of a large vine which grew in the hot-house at Cranbrook Hall, a mansion adjoining Valentines. This house has been pulled down and its extensive park built over within the last few



STUMP OF THE OLD VINE.

months. The Valentines vine was, too, the parent (as mentioned already) of the famous vine now at Hampton Court Palace, as well as of that in the vinery of Cumberland Lodge, in Windsor Great Park, and probably of many others throughout England. In all probability, it never attained a size equal to that of several English vines (very likely descendants from it) which are now living;\* but it remains worthy of note as having been almost,

\* Among these may be mentioned (beside the vines at Hampton Court, Cumberland Lodge, and Silwood Park—the latter noticed hereafter) that at Shardeloes, planted in 1793 and filling a house eighty feet long, and a much larger vine at Kinnell House, Breadalbane, planted in 1832 and filling a house 172 feet long by 25 feet wide—covering, that is, an area of about 475 square yards (see A. F. Barron's *Vines and Vine Culture*, 1983).



if not quite, the earliest English vine to become celebrated by reason of its great age and size.

The famous vine at Hampton Court Palace—certainly the best known and probably now the oldest vine in England—deserves brief notice here, if only because it is a descendant from the earlier vine at Valentines. Planted in 1769, it must have grown rapidly; for, little more than thirty years later, in 1800, it had already become ‘much celebrated’ as ‘the Great Vine.’\* It had then a stem thirteen inches in girth, a main branch 114 feet long (being turned at the further end of the vinery and trained back), and it had produced in one year, 2,200 bunches of grapes, of an average weight of one pound.† In 1891, according to Mr. Ernest Law, the historian of the palace,‡ the length of its main stem was limited to ninety feet, that being the length of the vine-house, which cannot be enlarged. The girth of its stem was three feet nine inches, and its annual crop was limited usually to about twelve hundred bunches. To-day, owing to the skill and care expended upon it, it is as healthy and productive as ever it was, and its fruit regularly appears on the royal tables.

For the same reason, the vine at Cumberland Lodge deserves mention also. The date of its planting, I know not; but it is nearly twice the size of the Hampton Court vine and is in perfect health. It fills a house measuring 138 feet long by 20 feet wide, and has a stem 3 feet 8 inches in circumference. It is the parent of another very large English vine—that at Silwood Park, near Sunninghill, which fills a house 120 feet long and 12 feet wide and has a stem about 3 feet in circumference.

Doubtless, we have in Essex also vines of great age and size; but I am able, at the moment, to mention only one—that belonging to the Right Hon. James Round, at Birch Hall, near Colchester. Very likely it is descended from the Valentines vine; but, as to this, nothing is known definitely. It was planted about fifty-five years ago (say, about 1852) and grows in a vinery 70 feet long, which it fills completely, having 444 feet of fruiting branches. Its roots are believed to have found its way into some drains, and to this, no doubt, its productiveness is partly due. Last year (1906), it produced 685 bunches of grapes, although it received no artificial heat.

\* See Lysons: *Parishes in the County of Middlesex*, p. 72 (1800).

† *Op. et loc. cit.*

‡ *Hist. of Hampton Court Palace*, ill., p. 298 (1891).

I may mention here, perhaps, that a slip from the Hampton Court vine was planted at Woodbines, Kingston-on-Thames, by my great-uncle, Mr. William Miller Christy, almost a hundred years ago, and that it became the parent of another offshoot which the late Mr. Joseph Smith planted at Pattiswick Hall about 1840, and from thence transplanted it, in 1865, to Woolpits, Great Saling, where it has ever since continued to bear fruit in abundance, although never allowed to encroach upon the space allotted to the other occupants of the vinery.

The fate of Valentines to-day is that of a fine country seat in course of being overwhelmed by a rapidly-rising tide of bricks and mortar, in the shape of small villas and rows of houses intended for better-class clerks and artizans. Already, some fifty acres of its spacious park have been acquired by the Local Governing Authority for use as a Public Park. Of the beautiful pleasure grounds immediately adjoining the house,\* some ten or a dozen acres, valued at over £10,000, have recently been given by Mr. Holcombe Ingleby, the present owner, to the same body, for use as Public Gardens, and they were formally dedicated to that purpose a few months since. The remaining portion of the park may ultimately be devoted also to public uses, but is, perhaps, more likely to be built upon, as the adjacent Cranbrook Park has been. The fate of the house itself is equally doubtful. Long regarded as a likely palace for the intended new Bishop of Essex, but ultimately rejected as unsuitable, the best that can be hoped for it is that it may become a Museum or other Public Institution. Failing this, it seems likely that it may even be pulled down, though still in excellent condition structurally.

---

## LEGENDS OF ESSEX.

### THE BALLADE OF SYR RYCHARD DE BOVINGDON AND FAYRE EVA.

BY ARTHUR R. VAIZEY.

I RECENTLY saw in print the enclosed verses on a local folk tale referring to Bovingdon and Bocking, and thought they might be reprinted in the *Essex Review*, where I believe they have never been referred to. I cannot tell anything of the origin of the lines.

\*For views of them, see *The Graphic*, 6 April 1907.

In the early part of the fourteenth century, Sir Richard de Bovingdon, a noble Knight, whose ancestors came over with William the Conqueror, did, in the words of the old Chronicler, 'penance for some greate wronge or myschaunce whyche hym dyd befall' and gave a portion of the lands of Bovingdon to the convent of Christ Church, Canterbury, and also to a chantry in St. Mary's Church, Bocking, formerly in the archdiocese of that city. The church here is a beautiful structure and once possessed three altars, dedicated to the Blessed Virgin, St. Nicholas, and the Holy Eucharist; it contained besides five or six chantries. Two of the richest of these were founded by William Doreward in 1362, and by Jolin, his son, thirty years later. Doreward's priest also taught children to write and read, until under the Chantry Act of 1547 the property was confiscated to the Crown, and the school discontinued.\*

St. Mary's, Bocking, was always of special interest by reason of the ancient rights formerly exercised by its "Deans Peculiar." The gooth anniversary of its foundation, 1006, was celebrated in November last. The present edifice is said to date from the reign of Edward the Third.

That part of the parish which adjoins Braintree now forms the new parish of St. Peter, this change having been made since the death in January, 1906, of the late Dean Carrington, who had held the living of Bocking since 1844, and on the appointment, and with the approval of, his successor, Dean Brownrigg, Bovingdon Hall and Durward's or Doreward's Hall, with the lands attached, constitute a very large part of the old parish of St. Mary as it now remains.

Swetely from the old chuch tower  
 The bells ring merrilie,  
 For Ladye Eva leaves her bower  
 A gentle bryde to be.

And joyous songes float through the aire,  
 The flowers bloom fresh and gay;  
 While every heart, olde, young, and faire  
 Ask blessings on this day.

But joys that earthly hopes bestowe  
 A light illusive shed,  
 As oft the fayrest flowers that growe  
 Bloom brightest o'er the dead.

\*See article on Schools by Miss C. Fell Smith in *Vict. Hist. Essex*, Vol. II., p. 552.

Albeit with sounds of high wassail  
 The wine cuppes freely flowe,  
 One eye is dim, one cheek is pale,  
 One heart is filled with woe.

Though Eva to her Sire's command  
 Hath promised to obey,  
 Her heart's affections with her hand  
 She could not give away.

Syr Rychard de Bovington forth doth ride  
 Mid shouts of revelrie,  
 To receive at church his promised bride  
 With a gallant companie.

They enter soon St. Mary's gate,  
 By the chancel steppes they stand,  
 And there the bride awhile they wait  
 A brave and noble band.

The holy priest with reverend look,  
 In cope and albe, is there,  
 To wed them by God's sacred book,  
 And bless the brydal paire.

And when the church doores opened wide  
 Pealed forth a glorious strain,  
 While up the nave was seen to glide  
 A long and glittering train.

First, robed in white, twelve maidens young  
 Came slowly two and two,  
 And as the brydal hymne thay sung,  
 Did flowers the waye bestrew.

Then Eva came with flowing veil,  
 The fayrest of them alle,  
 Thoughte drooping like a lily pale,  
 No teare her eyes let falle.

By the altar rail they placed the bryde,  
 And meekly knelt she there,  
 De Bovington was by her syde,  
 As the priest began his prayer.

When by the Churche's holie rite  
 He turned to plight his vow ;  
 Sancta Maria ! what meets his sight ?  
 Why starts Syr Richard now ?

Sancta Maria ! her lippes move not,  
 Her eyes are glazed and stille,  
 Fixed like a statue to the spect,  
 Her hand is deathly chille.

And she before the altar stone,  
 That should have been a bryde,  
 Withouten sighe, or teare, or moan,  
 Sank downe, and there she died.

They placed her colde and dead beneath,  
 In the dark vault's murky aite ;  
 The flowers that formed her brydal wreath  
 Were used to deck her bier.

For many a yeare besyde her grave  
 Was daily seen in prayer,  
 A knight who lands and money gave  
 To raise a chantry there.

## THE BURY ST. EDMUND'S FOLK PLAY.

8TH—13TH JULY, 1907.

**I**N all the Eastern Counties there is no place, not even excepting Colchester itself, so indissolubly bound up in the history of the land as this town of many towers and churches sacred to Edmund, the spotless king and martyr, whose life and death so held men's minds in thrall that, after he was murdered, the memory of him alone worked many a miracle.

The Episodes of the Folk Play are seven in number, and range from the warlike times of Queen Boadicea to the more spacious days of Queen Elizabeth. Yet Edmund, the eponymous hero of the East Anglian town itself, is the central figure around whom the whole folk play revolves. When the music is done, the kings and queens and haughty barons, the galloping chargers, and the hundreds of tinkling morris-dancers have all marched past in the final procession and have faded away, Edmund remains, a slender, white-robed figure, crowned with his yellow hair, standing upon a pedestal somewhere near the site of the very chapel where his body first rested, brooding over the ruins of the noble abbey, built as a shrine to commemorate his martyrdom. No wonder the inhabitants of Bury, inspired by the pageants of last year, were eager to engrave their own stirring and romantic history upon the minds of a far too forgetful generation. For many months they have been busily

at work preparing for the gorgeous scene which awaits visitors to Bury St. Edmund's in the second week of July, and a full rehearsal of which the writer had the pleasure of seeing on June 27th under circumstances of exceptionally fine weather and most hospitable entertainment. Everything, even to a hospital ambulance tent, has been provided for the comfort of visitors; the grand stand is covered; from every part of it an uninterrupted view may be obtained, and there are luncheon and tea tents within the grounds. All, given fine weather, bids for the complete success which the good Bury people deserve.

As to the performers, who number 2,000, their costumes have been almost entirely designed and made in the town and neighbourhood by voluntary workers. Nothing has been spared to ensure historical accuracy in every detail, and the highest expert advice has been sought and freely given. Portraits of the kings and queens are invariably followed, and costumes and armour are faithfully copied. The Master of the Pageant, Mr. Louis N. Parker, is well known as a playwright, so also is Mr. Stuart Ogilvie, of Woodbridge, who contributes Episode 1. Dr. Ward, Master of Peterhouse, has written a Latin Carmen for the Grammar School boys to sing, and the narrative choruses are the work of Mr. James Rhoades, a poet. The orchestra, reinforced by the band of the West Suffolk Regiment, consists of no less than 100 performers, the singing of the monks' chorus of fifty and the narrative chorus of the same number, representing East Anglian kings, is beyond praise. No praise can be too high, either, for the rapid mounting and skilful managing of the horses, as many as fifty being sometimes upon the scene.

The scene is the lower portion of a meadow comprised in the Abbey grounds, the river Bure winds along a green field upon the left, the ground slopes sharply up on the right, where it is more or less enclosed by trees and fragments of ruin. A long strip is thus presented, consisting of the arena immediately in front of the stand, the middle distance broken by a low wall belonging to the ancient building, and the distance, where a crowd of brightly-dressed performers is waiting, lends a splash of colour. The approach of the processions down the long slope, the furious riding of the mounted warriors, the hot gallop of a messenger in haste, and above all the winding black columns of singing monks, their robes floating in the breeze, are most

effectively stage-managed. The scene-shifters, men in close-fitting green, who seem a part of the landscape, are ceaseless in their quick untiring movements.

The play opens with Faustinus, a Roman general (impersonated by the mayor of Bury), and his family waited upon by wild-looking Iceni, with flaxen locks and proud and murmuring hearts, who cry aloud for the advent of their Queen Boadicea. She comes at last, driving her black horses in her chariot furiously, clad in black fur and crowned with an iron crown resting dark upon her long red hair. At her passionate invectives, and at the marks of the Roman rods upon her shoulders, the Britons yell with fury, rise and slay the Romans and bear away the general's corpse. Scarcely has her furious chariot disappeared before a line of white-robed acolytes and priests winds down the slope, with lighted tapers and censers, followed by King Edmund, dazzlingly fair and young, accompanied by his trusty friend, Bishop Humbert, banners, canopies, and retinue. Crowds pour into the scene. The Danish King Lothpârc has drifted to the eastern shores and Edmund saves him from death and sends him hawking with one of his servants, Bern, who traitorously murders him. For this inhospitality Bern is sent drifting to sea in Lothpârc's boat, to reappear in the next episode calling for vengeance, with Lothpârc's son Ingvar, who believes the King to have been his father's murderer. The Danes fall upon Edmund and strip him of his armour. In a long white gown they bind him to a tree, pierce him with their arrows and finally behead him with a sword, carrying off the body and hiding the fair head in some bushes of the forest. Here, directed by a voice, comes Oswyn (one of the best acted characters in the play) who finds the head in a thicket, guarded by a great grey wolf, lifts it all reverently, and fondling it she carries it away. A rough wooden shrine is set up near the spot, a sanctuary for frightened women fleeing from the Danes. Sweyn, who is pursuing one, cannot touch her, for St. Edmund's spear pierces him through the heart. Canute, who next approaches with a following of monks from Ely, gives to Bury a charter for a monastery, to be called Bedricenworth, for ever, and names Uvius its first Lord Abbot. Years pass and to Abbot Baldwin, his successor, comes Edward the Confessor, in the humble garb of a pilgrim, grants to the Abbot manors and

hundreds, and gives him power to coin money at their own mint. Baldwin, a crafty, clever, haughty abbot, begins to build the great church, holds the turbulent townsmen in the hollow of his hand, and is about to resist his rival Bishop of Thetford, when blindness falls on the interloper as he approaches St. Edmund's shrine, to plant there his pastoral staff. King Henry and with him his Queen Adela come riding up in state, a pair of handsome lordly figures on their richly caparisoned chargers, and give grants to the church. It rears itself apace, and next, in the choir stalls and miserere seats, a chapter is assembled (a particularly fine scene) to choose a new abbot. Now our history begins to land on certain ground, for here with Abbot Samson (finely impersonated by The Ven. George Hodges, Archdeacon of Sudbury and rector of St. Mary's, Bury, who is chairman of the Pageant Committee) comes the young monk Jocelyn de Brakelond, whose chronicle tells us so much of Bury's history. The times were full of usury and greed, the monks were idle and loved every pleasure, but under Abbot Samson's stern rule the Jews were protected and all the debts of the abbey paid. Next comes Cœur de Lion, careless and handsome, debonair and libertine, covets the abbot's dogs, horses, and plate, tosses him a ring, bids him bluntly mutter for him a prayer or two, rides on and laughs aloud. The dark visaged John next appears with promises of gifts, taunts the abbot on his royal state, greedily demands back the jewels his mother, Queen Eleanor, had given, swears his pet oath, 'par les dents de Dieu,' and leaves thirteen pence as his royal present. Soon returns Jocelyn from abroad with news of John's sacrilege, a mounted messenger in furious haste (a very dramatically managed interlude) brings news of the Pope's interdiction, and the good Abbot Samson's heart is broken. His gorgeous vestments are stripped off him, in the arms of the faithful Jocelyn the old man breathes his last sigh, and is borne away by his hooded monks.

Next comes Episode V., one of the most stirring of the whole play. Here is Fitzwalter in his coat of mail, head of the bold barons who, in these very grounds, met under a tree and swearing fealty one to another, put their hands upon the priceless charter of liberty, which they were to make the sullen John sign at Runnymede. The mailed figures, their esquires and pages, all



gallop furiously from the field, and are succeeded by Henry VI., and his warlike queen, he a dazzling figure in white and gold, she with a brodered cloak of royal blue and gold with rose-coloured linings, which is a dream of beauty and craftsmanship. The murder of Duke Humphrey of Gloucester, adapted from Shakespeare, with the nobles Warwick, Buckingham, etc., in gorgeous dress forms the next scene, and thence we pass to the final and most elaborate episode, Mary Tudor—who lies buried in St. Mary's Church hard by—and her resplendent courtiers coming to attend a fair.

Ladies trip across the sward to the song of madrigals and glees, the singing girls strew flowers in the way. The guilds of the town come in procession, the measures of a stately pavane are trodden by many a courtly-mannered couple, and then the morris dancers with their fluttering ribbons spread billowing over the grass, and the tap tap of their sticks and the tinkle of their thousand bells fill the air with merry laughter. The lowering sun glances across the gay figures and catches the scarlet cloaks of the boys from the newly-founded Grammar School, the herald proclaims the King's grace and favour for 'one pedagogue and one under master,' dated this 3rd of August, 1550, and the boys sing their Carmen. Queen Elizabeth appears in ruff and farthingale, the madrigal choir, monks' choir and narrative chorus, all join together in a mighty chorus in praise of Edmund, Saint and Martyr, adapted from Wagner, during which the white figure of the King appears upon the pedestal.

Then follows the National Anthem and the march past begins. The Kings and Queens are grouped in the centre and the incongruous crowd from fifteen centuries of history, circle around and around until the music droops and dies, the figures melt one by one away, the swallows swoop down upon the grass, and the folk tale is over.

---

## THE SEA-WALLS OF ESSEX.

BY GEO. E. TASKER.

**M**UCH has been heard recently of 'coast erosion,' and of the inroads of the sea on the East Coast, and the reality of the danger and loss to the places concerned is, alas! only too real. But this trouble is not peculiar to the present

day, it has been in existence for centuries, and the ingenuity of many generations, from the primitive to the present day scientific, has been taxed to cope effectually with the tremendous power and perpetual onslaught of the tides which assail our coasts and creeks. In some cases—in very many cases—the fight against the sea has been successful, but in others, despite the lavish outlay of money, the ocean still holds the mastery, and, when lashed to fury by tempest, beats with irresistible force upon the cliffs, which, already loosened by the percolating rain, are brought down, tons at a time, on the beach. Essex has had her full share of these attacks (and will continue to receive them until the end of time), as witness the destruction recently wrought to the fine eight-mile stretch of cliffs between Walton and Clacton. But it is not cliffs only that suffer, acres upon acres of low land and saltings have been swallowed up by the hungry sea, and even now many acres are covered by every tide; but there has not, happily, been a serious inroad of the sea in Essex since the flooding of Canvey Island towards the end of last century.

What this county owes to its miles of embankments and sea walls it is impossible to calculate, for some of them were constructed by those master-builders the Romans—remains of their work having been found on the embankments enclosing the marshes at Barking and Dagenham; while Canvey Island owes its reclamation from a mud flat to another nation skilled in the art of embanking, to wit, the Dutch.

These protecting sea-walls practically extend along the whole sea-board of Essex and its numerous creeks. We see them along the northern bank of the Thames to Leigh; from Foulness they extend up the Crouch to Battlesbridge—the beginning of the navigable portion of that river—thence along the other side, past Burnham and round the coast to Bradwell; from Bradwell to Maldon, and back on the other side of the Blackwater by Tollesbury (where the Great Eastern Railway have just opened a pier) to Mersea Island; thence up the Colne and back again to St. Osyth and Brightlingsea right round to Clacton. Here is the second break in this wonderful stretch of embankments, but the walls are continued again from the Naze round the Walton Backwaters and back to Dovercourt, the final length running from Parkstone for some distance up the Stour. Thus, except

for the three breaks at Southend, Clacton and Walton, and Harwich, the Essex coast is protected solely by this long continuity of sea-walls.

Has it ever occurred to readers of the *Essex Review* what the county owes to these miles of embanking, and what would be the condition of our coast if they did not exist, or if by some dire mischance they got destroyed? Their immense value is soon made apparent. Many acres of marshes bordering the Thames and the sea have been reclaimed, and the land thus recovered is exceedingly fertile, affording, perhaps, the best pasturage to be found in any part of the county. Picture the desolation that would follow such an unfortunate position as that suggested. Canvey Island—now rapidly coming into favour as a summer resort, and with a resident population—would relapse into its old condition before Croppenburgh and Vermuyden took it in hand, and would be covered by every Thames tide; it would become a huge mud-bank and a danger to navigation. Foulness would be in a similar condition. Burnham, Southminster, Tillingham, Bradwell, the whole of the Dengie Marshes, as well as Tollesbury, St. Osyth, and part of Brightlingsea, would be turned into saltings, and the rich lands won and retained at such great expense, would be given over entirely to the heron, peewit, curlew, and wild-fowl which, even now, haunt this part in great numbers, while Essex would be the poorer by many thousands of pounds annually. We have a very realistic picture of what would happen in the remains of the great breach at Dagenham, where forty acres are still covered by water owing to a break made in the river wall in 1707, which took fifteen years to repair.

It is obviously essential, therefore, that great care should be taken to preserve these valuable embankments in good condition, and for this object, Commissions exist with power to make and enforce bye-laws and levy rates for the maintenance of the sea-walls in their respective perambulations. It is right that these laws and rates should be strictly enforced, for the carelessness or neglect of one person might easily spell ruin not only to himself but to all his neighbours.

The history of embanking is full of interesting records and much has been written on the subject since the 18th century. The extracts given below will be sufficient for the purposes of

illustration. One relates to St. Osyth, and is an example of damage done which it baffled the skill of man to repair, while the other—relating to the Dengie Flats—shows what can be accomplished by the skill and ingenuity of man.

The first extract has to do with the well-known Priory at St. Osyth which forms one of the most attractive of the excursions for Clacton visitors in the summer. It is not necessary here to relate the history of St. Osyth and the Priory that bears her name, but it is worth noting that the monks of former days were not the least industrious among reclaimers of waste lands, or constructors of dykes and embankments. These recluses chose out spots away from the haunts of men, and all over the country many instances may be found where they selected fen and marsh lands for their Monasteries, and carefully reclaimed the lands, thereby adding very considerably to their endowments, *e.g.*, Westminster Abbey (built on Thorney Island), Ely, Glastonbury, our own St. Osyth, and many another.

Dugdale, in his *History of Inbanking and Draining*, 1772, thus writes of St. Osyth:—

I shall only instance one " [example of non-repairable damage owing to the expense or extent of the damage] viz., of the lands and marshes belonging to the abbey of S. Osithe's, in this county [Essex], whereof I find mention in a petition exhibited unto Robert de Braybroke, Bp. of London in the time of King Richard II. and to the Dean and Chapter of that Church, by Sir Albred de Vere, knight, who thereby showeth that whereas the monastery was situated near the sea coast, and had in it an abbot and 20 canons of the Order of St. Augustine, serving God there devoutly every day; and that the revenues thereof were through various mishaps, without their default, so diminished that a great part of their sustenance was abated, viz., in Southflete several acres of their arable land by the overflowing of the sea totally drowned. As also there and at their becarie of Coketwyk in one pasture wherein at sometimes a hundred kine and 1,000 ewe sheep might be kept, through the breach in the banks and inundation thereof, then scarce 70 kine and 800 ewes could be maintained. And moreover, that two marshes called Wyggeberghmers and Holewyke marsh in which 600 muttons might be easily kept were then through the continual tides daily overflowed that scarce 400 could be maintained. And that the watermill, situated in the town of St. Osithes and belonging to the Abbey, which had been worth XXl., was by the sea tides so spoiled that it could not be repaired under £100 charge. And lastly, that the marsh walls in that town in length 3 miles, which include a pasture for 70 kine and a thousand muttons and ewes, were so torn and broken at that time that for the preserving of the same there must be other banks made anew, and those old ones quitted so that a great proportion of the said pasturage being for that respect to be left out scarce 50 kine and 600 sheep could be there maintained. In consideration, therefore, of these losses he petitions that the church of Elmostede might be appropriated to that religious house.

The opposite illustration—that of successful enclosure—refers to Tillingham, and is taken from ‘The Times’ of April 25, 1799. It reads as follows:—

#### EMBANKMENTS IN ESSEX.

A considerable embankment of land from the sea has lately been completed on the Essex Coast, highly beneficial to the estates of the Dean and Chapter of St. Paul's, in Tillingham Parish, in that county. This embankment is a mile and a half in length, 32 feet in its base, brought off in an angular direction, 7 feet in height, to a surface of 5 feet on the top. It encloses some hundred acres of the deepest and richest soil, which is now divided by spacious dykes into several square marshes, that from this process of expeditious draining will render the whole soon fit for the plough. This great agricultural improvement has been effected under a leasehold tenure by the Rev. Mr. Bate Dudley, who some years since had the gold medal from the Arts and Sciences for a similar kind of embankment, by which he considerably augmented the Glebe of Bradwell Rectory, within the same level.

Tillingham has belonged to St. Paul's Cathedral, London, since the time of King Ethelred.

### NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

#### **New Secondary Schools.**

THE opening of a County High School for Girls at Chelmsford, on May 1st, by Sir William Anson, Warden of All Souls College, Oxford, marks a new era in the work of the County Education Committee. It is time that the claims of female education were recognised in a county so rich in early foundations where the instruction of boys in arts and learning has been carried on for at least five centuries. Especially is this important now when so colossal a share of the teaching of the nation's children falls, worthily, into the hands of women.

A handsome building has been erected by Messrs. Chancellor and Sons, on the Broomfield Road, with a frontage of 92 feet, and accommodation for 150 girls and a staff. Besides class-rooms, chemical and physical laboratories, and a luncheon-room, there is a fine assembly-room. An art-room is attached, and with excellent and practical foresight, a cooking-room, with gas stoves and a store-room attached, is an important feature. The building is well drained and ventilated, and is lit throughout with electric light. It occupies a site of three acres and is furnished with a tar-paved playground. A gymnasium will follow, it is to

be hoped. The first term opened on May 6th, with 78 scholars under Miss M. F. Vernon-Harcourt, of Girton College, Cambridge, as head mistress, with a staff of five other mistresses and an art-master, and a prosperous future is, we hope, before it.

The first governors of the school are the Rev. Canon Papillon, Miss Bartlett, Mrs. Gilmore, Mrs. Waller, Mr. F. Chancellor, Rev. J. Burgess, Mr. W. Bewers, Mr. A. R. Penuefather, C.B., and Mr. W. Dennis. The secretary is Mr. J. H. Nicholas.

**BRAINTREE.**—A secondary school, in which boys and girls are to receive co-education, was opened in the previous week at Braintree in the presence of a large gathering of persons interested in education. The site of the school was presented by Mrs. Sydney Courtauld, and was only one of the generous ways in which, before her long illness and death in 1906, she gave her strength and talents to the cause of education. Her son, Mr. W. J. Courtauld, presided at the opening ceremony, which was performed by Edward North Buxton, D.L., chairman of the Essex Education Committee. He was supported by Admiral Sir William Luard, Lady Rayleigh, Canon Brownrigg, Mr. Champion Russell, Mr. F. C. Edwards, and Canon Ingles, vice-chairman of the Governors

The school is built of red brick and stone; it has the Arms of Essex over the principal entrance. It stands upon an acre of ground, facing on the Coggeshall road, very near the junction of the Bocking, Dunmow, and Braintree roads, with a frontage of 84 feet. It has a fine assembly hall, leading into numerous class-rooms, excellent administrative offices, an industrial room and art room with north light, beside laboratories and a cooking room. Much of the furniture and fittings has been the gift of Mrs. Courtauld's two daughters and their brother. Mr. Josiah Vavasseur, a former native of Braintree, has presented £1,000 for exhibitions at the school. The head master, F. J. Weaver, M.A., and chief assistant mistress, Miss M. Wilson, M.A., B.Sc., have already entered on their duties, and a number of scholars (in which at present girls preponderate) have entered for the summer term.

**Tollesbury.** A new pier was opened in May at this busy little seaside and yachting town, which on June 8 was the scene of a lively gathering for the opening of a new marine lake,

and laying a corner stone of the new parish room. The lake has been dug out of the saltings, and is filled through a sluice which acts automatically with the ebb and flow of the tide. It has a clear shingle bottom and ranges from shallow water to nine feet. Doubtless it will be much in use for children and others learning to swim, and the entire population of this pretty village should speedily become proficient in aquatic sports. The lake was the idea of one of Tollesbury's best known and oldest residents, Dr. J. H. Salter; it was opened by Lady de Crespigny, after which a humorous speech was delivered by Sir Claude de Crespigny, who recited anecdotes of rescues from drowning in five feet of water, at which he as a 'middy' had assisted, and alluded to his subsequent swimings in every continent of the globe. The Earl of Warwick, Lord Lieutenant, as a Past Master of Essex Freemasons, the Bishop of Barking, Past Provincial Chaplain, and many other brother masons afterwards assisted in a picturesque masonic ceremony of laying a corner stone at the handsome parish room, which has been erected near the church. Dr. Salter, Deputy Grand Master of the Freemasons of Essex, laid the stone with all the elaborate masonic ritual, pouring oil and wine and strewing corn upon it, in the most impressive manner, the masons wearing full regalia, and the whole scene almost partaking of mediæval splendour. Displays of diving and life-saving were afterwards given.

**County Show.** THE Agricultural Society's Jubilee Show was held at Chelmsford on June 12th and 13th. A record attendance was chronicled, with a number of entries exceeding by nearly 100 every preceding year since the Society's foundation in 1858, when at the first show held at Chelmsford the total was 333. This year it was 1,348. The Society was founded two years after the visit of the Royal Agricultural Society to Chelmsford, in 1856, a surplus of £336 arising from this visit being the first nucleus of funds. Charles Du Cane, afterwards M.P. for the County, was its first President. The present secretary, Mr. Fred. Taylor, is only the third in the fifty years. The Society this year offered £2,125 in prizes, and the President, Sir Walter Gilbey, gave three gold cups.

**The Bishop of Colchester.** AN interesting presentation was made to the Bishop of Colchester and Mrs. Johnson on the occasion of their golden wedding on June 4, at Chelmsford. The clergy of the diocese, numbering 560, have subscribed for a golden chalice and paten, with an album and illuminated address, containing their names. This was the work of Rev. Ernest Geldart, of Great Braxted, and is beautifully executed. The handsome church vessels are copies of the chalice and paten formerly in use at St. Albans Abbey, and removed from thence at the dissolution of the Monasteries to Trinity College, Oxford, founded by Sir Thomas Pope, the King's Commissioner, to whom they pertained. The chalice bears the hall mark of 1527, and the inscription 'Calicem salutaris accipiam, et nomen Domini invocabo!' The chalice now presented to the Bishop is inscribed, in addition, as follows:—

✠ Anniversario Lmo. nuptiaru Francisci Camuloduni Epi et Emiliæ uxoris ejus: clerici diocesis Sci Albani in signu reverentis amoris d.d. die iiō Jun., MCMVII.

Translation: 'On the fiftieth anniversary of the marriage of Francis, Bishop of Colchester, and of Emily, his wife: The Clergy of the Diocese of St. Albans gave this gift as a token of their reverencing love—this 2nd Day of June, 1907.'

A portrait now being painted by A. S. Cope, A.R.A., is to be presented on behalf of the county by the Earl of Warwick, as soon as it is completed, and it is to be hoped that all interested will have the opportunity of seeing it worthily hung upon the walls of the Royal Academy of 1908. The Bishop and his wife, who was sister of that much honoured Essex worthy, Mr. J. W. Perry Watlington, of Moor Hall, Harlow, were married on June 2, 1857, and they have now spent five and twenty years in Essex. On Sunday, June 2, the Bishop performed the dedication of five beautiful windows, which he has erected in the clerestory of St. Mary's Church, Chelmsford, as a thank-offering for continued mercies.

**Bishop's Visitation.** THE Bishop of St. Albans opened his first charge to the clergy and laity of his diocese at St. Albans Cathedral on 6th May. It is just ten years since a Bishop of St. Albans met his diocese in visitation, and it is just thirty years since the diocese was founded. At its foundation it was estimated to contain a population of 752,000. To-day the population is considerably over 1,500,000.



This great increase of population has made some of the old boundaries of rural deaneries obsolete and inconvenient, the character of the county having so remarkably changed. The Bishop said that the three Archdeacons of the diocese, with the assistance of the Rural Deans, had been engaged with him for many months in a re-arrangement of rural deaneries. Although some would have preferred the old arrangements to continue, the Bishops of Colchester and Barking and he himself were absolutely agreed that for the more effective organisation of the life and work of the Diocese, these changes ought to be made. The larger areas will be more effective for conference, and the remoter country parishes will be brought into contact with the quickened life of a larger centre. He hoped there will be immediate work for the clergy in the election of a new Diocesan Conference.

The changes may be summarised as under :—

The number of Deaneries in Essex is reduced from 34 to 27.

There is no change except in name in the Barking Deaneries. The Harlow and St. Osyth Deaneries are unchanged. The Deanery of Dunmow, without the parish of Great Canfield, is transferred from the Archdeaconry of Essex to that of Colchester, which gives up to the Archdeaconry of Essex and Deanery of Maldon three benefices close to the borough of Maldon—Heybridge, Langford, Goldhanger, and Little Totham.

The Chafford Deanery is re-constructed under the name Chafford, otherwise Romford; Barstable, under the name Barstable, otherwise Brentwood; Canewdon is now Canewdon and Southend; Orsett is Orsett and Grays; Coggeshall is Coggeshall and Tey, for Marks Tey junction is its real centre. Danbury reappears under the name of Wickford, Wickford junction being the natural centre of the re-constructed Deanery. The parishes of Danbury and Sandon are transferred to their natural centre, Chelmsford. Yeldham reappears as the Deanery of Belchamp; Halstead and Hedingham, with some changes, are united into one Deanery. The Deaneries of Sampford, Mersea and Hatfield Peverel, in the Archdeaconry of Colchester; of Lambourne, Ingatestone, and Rochford, in the Archdeaconry of Essex, disappear, being merged in other Deaneries; Mersea to Colchester; Hatfield Peverel to Witham; Sampford to Saffron Walden.

**Obituaries.** ON the first of February last, there died at his London residence in Russell Square, DOCTOR BENJAMIN WINSTONE, of Ockeridge, Epping, one of the heartiest supporters of our Magazine since its first appearance. He had reached the venerable age of 87, and had lived an active, strenuous life, first in his profession, afterwards in the very successful business which he entered, as well as in his most congenial literary, archæological and philanthropic pursuits. Dr. Winstone came of Quaker origin on both sides; his father, Dr. John Winstone, carried on a successful practice in Charterhouse Square, London; his mother was a Hooper, of Tottenham. Born in London in 1819, he was educated at the well-known Friends' School at Epping, conducted by Isaac Payne, a master held in vast respect by all his old pupils, of whom Benjamin Winstone was nearly the last survivor. Mr. Septimus Warner, of Hoddesdon, Herts, his contemporary schoolfellow and almost of the same age (his four elder brothers were all at the school together), is still happily in good health.

Winstone commenced his study of medicine at St. Bartholomew's Hospital, qualified as surgeon at a very early age, and joined his father in practice. His health broke down, however, after the strain of examinations, and he was advised to take sea voyages. He obtained an appointment with the Cunard Company, and sailed on one of their first four steamers between Liverpool and Boston. He crossed the Atlantic to America in this way no less than 26 times, became thoroughly re-established in health and returned to general practice, but soon relinquished this to pursue the study of chemistry, and to enter an important ink manufacturing business in Shoe Lane, with works at Stratford. In this successful undertaking he was engaged for forty or fifty years, being joined eventually by his younger and sole surviving son.

Dr. Winstone became a member of the British Archæological Association in 1884, joined the Council, and as Vice-President invariably attended the meetings, where his sound opinions and advice were highly appreciated by his colleagues. He was a regular attender of the annual Congresses and found much agreeable recreation in these interesting gatherings. He was also a fellow of the Royal Botanical Society, of the Royal Microscopical Society, the Honourable Society of Cymmiodorion,

and the Society of Biblical Archæology. Much of his leisure was spent in the accumulation of facts concerning the local history of Epping and its direct neighbourhood, where he built himself a country house. The result was the publication of several very handsome volumes, all privately printed and distributed to his friends, viz. :—*The Ancient Chapel of St. John the Baptist at Epping*, 1885; *The Epping and Ongar Highway Trust*, 1891; *Two Seventeenth Century Sermons by Jeremiah Dyke*, edited with Introduction, 1896; *A Caveat for Archippus*, 1898; *The Origin of the name Theydon Bois*. He also contributed papers occasionally to the Archæological Journal. Mr. Winstone married, and has left a large family of daughters beside the son above-mentioned. His elder son, a barrister, died of typhoid fever contracted on a fishing holiday several years ago. A man of the most unassuming character and pretensions, Dr. Winstone's large-hearted kindness and generous readiness to impart from his own store of knowledge will long be missed.

MR. ALEXANDER WARD, J.P., of Lockers, Billericay, died there on April 23, aged fifty-five. He was second son of Mr. Henry Ward, of Gatwick, Billericay, was called to the bar at the Middle Temple in 1879, and became a magistrate for Essex in 1896. For many years secretary of the Essex Union Hunt, Mr. Ward was a keen sportsman, popular and genial. On his retirement an interesting presentation was made on Nov. 10, 1905, to him and to Mrs. Ward. He was foremost in promoting every movement of public interest in Billericay. He was director of several charities, societies, and companies, and had interested himself in the enlargement of Great Burstead Churchyard. Here he was buried on April 27. His widow, who survives, is a daughter of Major-General Sir Francis Cunningham Scott, K.C.B., K.C.M.G.

LIEUT.-COL. RICHARD SPURGEON GREEN, J.P., of Stoneylands, Dedham, died there on May 3rd from pneumonia. An old Dedham Grammar School boy, he had resided in the same town for more than twenty-five years, and was chairman of the School Governors, of the Lectureship, and of Dunton's Charity. Colonel Green was born on April 29th, 1843, obtained a commission in the Berkshire Regiment and served through the

Egyptian campaign, retiring with the rank of Lieut.-Colonel. He was a familiar figure on the local bench of magistrates, and active in encouraging all local sports and useful institutions. He was buried at Langham, of which parish he was churchwarden, on May 7th. His son, Captain J. E. Green, and daughter, the wife of Mr. William Nocton, J.P., of Langham Hall, were present at the funeral.

THE death of Mr. LAURENCE MARRIAGE, of Fringrith Hall, Blackmore, on May 7, removes from the county one of the most useful agricultural and administrative men of his kind, and one who pursued his career of public usefulness in spite of a long and gradually increasing physical incapacity. Born in 1846, at Broomfield, he was fifth son of Mr. William Marriage, miller, of Broomfield Mill, by his wife Sophia, second daughter of James Christy, of Brownings, Chelmsford. At the time of his death he had spent forty-one years in occupation of Fringrith Hall, where he held, in all, more than 1,000 acres of land in the neighbourhood, and has long been a recognised authority on farming in all its branches. A successful breeder of cart horses, he had been a frequent winner of prizes at county and other shows. He was chairman of the Ongar Board of Guardians for twelve years, and a guardian for over thirty; one of the original Aldermen of the Essex County Council, and Chairman of the Education Authority of Blackmore for over thirty years. He was buried at the Friends' Burial Ground, Chelmsford, on May 11, amid an extraordinary manifestation of respect and affection. He leaves a widow, three sons and four daughters.

MR. THOMAS FRANKLIN, auctioneer and estate agent, of Thaxted, who died there on February 22, at the age of 89, was the third son of Robert Franklin, who began business in that picturesque North Essex town in 1809. The business has long been in the hands of his son, Mr. Douglas T. Franklin, and thus a complete record of very nearly a century is accomplished.

## NOTES AND QUERIES.

**Alchemy in Essex.**—In a previous number of the *Essex Review*\* Mr. W. C. Waller has given an account of an Essex alchemist of the sixteenth century; and perhaps the story of another a hundred and twenty years earlier may be found interesting. Unfortunately, instead of the details of evidence, we have here merely the formal official record of the case.

Presentment was made by oath of twelve jurors before Thomas Rolf and his fellows, justices of the peace in the county of Essex, at Maldon on Monday† before the feast of St. Giles, 4 Henry V., that William Morton, of Newcastle-on-Tyne, ‘wolleman,’ commonly uses the art of multiplication‡ contrary to the statute, and on Thursday§ after Epiphany, 2 Henry V., came to Alan Roys, citizen and mercer, of London, and agreed that the latter should take him to the priory of Hatfield Peverel in Essex that there by his power he might make a powder called elixir, which is of such nature that a parcel of it thrown on any red melted metal such as copper, brass or bronze would make it coloured like and apparently gold, and similarly would make any white metal such as lead or tin like silver, and that William and Alan at Hatfield and elsewhere in the said county on May 4 and July 20, 4 Henry V.,¶ and at other times asserted that the metal thus coloured was true gold or silver, whereby the king’s money could be truly made; and that Alan, knowing William to be such a multiplier, on Monday|| after Epiphany, 2 Henry V., brought him to Hatfield to stay with John Repset *alias* Bepsay, monk, late prior of Hatfield, from that day for one year, and thenceforward at the cost of William and by mainprise of Alan, to the end that in the meantime he should make the powder, and the said late prior received him at the priory from the said Thursday until Tuesday\*\* before St. Laurence, 4 Henry V., and all that time he laboured there with the art of fire and with mercury, charcoal powder, ‘sakeon,’ ‘vermelion,’ ‘resalger,’ ‘vertegrees’,

\* Vol. xviii., p. 19.

† 31st August, 1416.

‡ The multiplication of gold and silver by the transmutation of other metals was prohibited by stat. 5 Henry IV., cap. 4, which was afterwards repealed by stat. 1 William and Mary, cap. 30.

§ 10th January, 1415.

¶ 1416.

|| January 7, 1415.

\*\* August 4, 1416.

'sal niter, 'sal alkale,' 'sawundiner,' vitriol, arsenic, and other things unknown to the jurors, to make the powder, and made a black matter burnt and congealed in a round glass, which he asserted to many of the king's people at divers times, and on Wednesday\* before St. Laurence, 4 Henry V., at Chelmsford, to Joan, Countess of Hereford, and Thomas Rolf, Richard Baynard and Robert D'Arcy, justices of the peace in the county, would be such a powder of elixir, and within ten weeks if he were not hindered he would make it such, so that it would have the virtue of changing red and white metals into true gold and silver, from which the king's money could be coined.

The alchemists were evidently working at mercury plating. The matter was finished in the King's Bench, † and there William produced letters patent dated at Bayeux, March 28, 6 Henry V., pardoning him for all treasons, felonies and trespasses, and was acquitted. The indictment against the monk was found insufficient. He was no doubt the John Bebsede who occurs as prior of Hatfield Peverel, in 1401, and his name suggests that he may have come from Bebside, in Northumberland, and perhaps have been already acquainted with William Morton. This is quite likely, as St. Alban's Abbey, to which the priory was dependent, had another dependent priory at Tynemouth.

—R. C. FOWLER, Witham.

**Pattens** (*E.R.* xv., 182).—Mr. Miller Christy goes rather too far when he says in his article on pattens, that they are no longer used in Essex. They are still used to a certain extent round farmhouses, and Mr. F. Smith, of Witham, for one, still sells them.—R.C.F.

[Quite a brisk trade was done in pattens and clogs, at the price of one shilling per pair, during last winter's deep snow at Maldon. They may be remnants, but they were plentiful.—Eds.]

**The Collar of SS.**—In the first half of the Fifteenth Century, or Lancastrian period, there are numerous instances of both male and female figures to be found on tombs in our churches, ornamented with this beautiful collar. The collar was adopted by Henry IV., and given by him to many of his adherents, especially to such as were personally attached to his

\* August 5, 1416.

† *Coram Rege* Roll, Trinity, 6 Henry V., 18.

court. It thus became a distinctive badge of those who supported the House of Lancaster during the Wars of the Roses. It may be noticed on the fine brass in Little Horkesley Church to Sir Thomas Swynborne, 1412; on the recumbent effigy of Richard de Vere, 11th Earl of Oxford, 1415, at Earls Colne; on the effigies of Walter Lord Fitzwalter and an unknown lady, 1430, in Little Dunmow Church, and on the brass of Sir William Pyrton, 1490, at Little Bentley. Many theories have been propounded to explain the origin and significance of the letters SS. Boutell derives it from the initial letter of the word "Souveraine," the motto of Henry IV., when Earl of Derby; others attribute it to the fact that John of Gaunt, Earl of Lancaster, was Steward of England, and the S stood for Seneschallus or Steward, but the following extract from Fabyan's Chronicle, printed by Pynson in 1516, throws a fresh light upon the subject, and is of some weight, having been written by one who was living when the collar was in use.

'In this yere also syr Henry Bolybrooke, erle of Derby, maryed the countesse daughter of Herforde, by whom he was lorde of that contry, and by hyr he had issu He'ry, that after hym was Kyng, Blaunche duche of Barré and Phylyp, that was wedded to the Kyng of Denmarke, also Thomas, Duke of Clarence, John, Duke of Bedforde, and Humfrey, Duke of Gloucetyr. And over this he (*John of Gaunt*) had of bast, which after were made legyttymat, by dame Katheryne Swynforde, iij sonnys, John, which was after Duke of Somerset, Thomas erle of Huntynghedone or Duke of Exetyr, and Henry, which was called ye ryche cardinall, theyse were named Beawforde, and the other first sonys after most wryters were named Plantagenettys, which sayd dame Katheryne Swynforde was after made countesse of Herforde, and for that name of Swynforde he, y<sup>t</sup> is to mean Syr Henry of Derby, gave the S in his colers, or liverys, both to knyghtys and esquyers.' (*Fabyan's Chronicle*, Ed. 1811, p. 533).

The collar was formed of a series of S-shaped links of latten, silver or gold, upon a fillet of blue and fastened by a clasp, most often an ornamented trefoil attached to the collar by buckles. It is found, in an early M.S. at the British Museum, around the arms of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster.

C. F. D. SPERLING.

**Witchcraft in Essex, 1592.**—Dread of witches was so firmly rooted in people's minds as to demand, and obtain, in 1563 (5 Elizabeth), the passing of a Statute against them, and, in 1604 (1 James I.), the re-affirming of the statute, with provision of the 'pains of death as a felon' against violators of it. Contemporary pamphlets, in Elizabeth's and in James's reign, are full of the subject. Actual references to it in the grave records of Courts of Law are, perhaps, not so numerous as to deprive of interest a Maldon case.

In December, 1591, Timothy Wardell was bound in £10 to give evidence at the next Maldon Sessions against Margaret, wife of John Wyseman, accused of practising 'the detestable arte of Wytcherye.' John Wyseman and James Hybbert were bound in £10 each to produce Margaret Wyseman to stand her trial.

Thereupon Wardell's wife began to crow over Mrs. Wyseman, to such an extent that Timothy Wardell was bound in £10, and John Spygurnell in £5, to secure the appearance of Lywce (Lucy) Wardell at next Sessions, and that in the interval she shall keep the peace towards Margaret Wyseman.

At the Sessions, Jan. 10, 1591-2, there was a long array of witnesses to give evidence against Margaret Wyseman, viz. :—

Timothy Wardell, John Trut, James Hynds, James Clew, Joan Hovie, John Bennet's wife, Richard Hynds, Agnes Brocear, Mary Smallewodd, Nicholas Smith, Hovie's wife, Thomas More, Lucy Wardell, widow Studde, Edward Hull.

The verdict must have been against the defendant. On January 15, 1591-2, John Wyseman (the husband), brewer; James Hibbert, yeoman; Richard Strood, joiner; and John Eastwood, barber, were bound, each in £10, that 'where [whereas] Margaret Wysman longe haith bene, and so still remayneth, greatly suspected to use the wicked arte of witchcraft, sorcerye, and charminge, to the great offence and terror of manye people, yf, therefore, Margaret Wysman, from hensforth, so crystianlye, honestlie, and orderlie, live and behave herself that shee doe not geive to any person any iuste or lawfull cause to suspect or accuse her of any such wicked practices,' the recognisances shall be void.

This was not sufficient to allay distrust and slander. On June 2, 1592, note is made, in the Sessions Book, that 'where



theare hadd bene heretofore divers speches geven foorth of the suspicioun that Margaret Wyseman, wyff of Jhon Wyseman, was a wytche, and vsed the damnable art of wytchecraft, and that Jhon Wyseman shold have reported that he hadd seene a broome in his house swype the house without any hands—he, therevpon, beinge brought before Mr. Thomas Walker one of the Quene's maiestie's baylieffs of the said borroughe, and an oythe mynistred vnto hym, in that behalfe, to shewe and declare what he had knowen, seene, and reported, tuchinge his wyff's doinge and behavioure that ways. Jhon Wyseman testefyed that he never sawe, nor perceyved, any thinge of the dealinge of his wyffe at any tyme whereby he might suspect her to be a witche in any respect. He never reported that he sawe the broome sweepe the house, alone, without hands, nor hadd any cause so to saye.'

An entry in Boreham Parish Burials Register, under date 29th July, 1593, is sufficient to indicate the tragedy that might attend such accusations :—' H: [-hanged], Mother haven suffered at borhame for witchcraft the sam day.'

A. CLARK, LL.D., Great Leighs.

---

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS.

THE following letter, which appeared in *The Daily Telegraph*, refers to Codham Hall, near Gosfield, and gives a version of an 'apparition' which our readers may believe or not, as they please.

In the Holman MSS., which is now preserved in the Colchester Castle Museum, I met with the following story. It refers to Codham Hall, in the same county, and to the son of Sir Richard Pyne, Lord Chief Justice of Ireland. Briefly the story is this :

Young Henry Pyne, on whom the Codham Hall estate was entailed, quarrelled with Theophilus Biddulph, the son and heir of Sir Theophilus Biddulph of Kent, Knight and Baronet. A duel ensued. The meeting took place at Chelsea on Saturday morning, February 28, 1712-13. Upon the morning of the duel Henry Pyne's mother, on 'waking in broad daylight,' saw his apparition at Codham, 'all bloody.' She was residing at that place with her second husband. Alarmed, she roused her husband and told him. He tried, without avail, to persuade her that she had had a vivid dream. On going downstairs, upon the stairway—a fine old oak one it used to be—and turning into a room, she saw the figure again. 'After breakfast' she was persuaded by her husband to take the air in the garden. They had just left the house when a

liveried servant galloped up and brought tidings of the fatal result of the duel. Subsequently Mr. Biddulph and the seconds were tried at the Old Bailey—the principal being convicted of manslaughter, but the seconds acquitted. Of course, as the hour at which the duel was fought is not stated, and the hour at which the news reached Codham Hall is also vague, for 'after breakfast' does not convey much, it is not possible to be very definite. Codham Hall must be at least forty-five miles from Chelsea.

The Holman MSS., from which this story is derived, was the authority on which a good deal of Morant's *History of Essex* was based. A portion of 'Hudibras' was written at Codham Hall.

C. R. B. BARRETT.

*Modern Side-Saddle Riding.* A Practical Handbook for Horsewomen. By Eva Christy. 3rd edition revised. London, Vinton and Co., Limited, 1907. Cr. 8vo., pp. 120. Price 5s. nett.

Since we reviewed this little book (*E.R.*, ix., p. 127) on its first appearance in 1900, it has met with so much success that it is now re-issued with several fresh photographs, and some amount of additional letterpress. It appears an exhaustive *vade mecum* for the feminine equestrian, who can, we are prepared to swear, think of no interrogatory whatever to which the author has not foreseen an answer. Particularly ingenious are the directions for arranging with mathematical precision the invaluable stock tie which fashion now decrees to be the correct wear. Six photographs cleverly demonstrate six positions of this complicated business, and the author's directions are issued in so emphatic a manner as to leave no room for doubt that her way of doing things is infallibly the best.

Miss Christy foresees everything, from a tight boot or a tender knee, to pins that are not, but should be, safety pins, including the two spare safety pins to be carried in the pocket in case of accident. Mounting and dismounting are thoroughly expounded (though, as we remarked before, they are still relegated to the end of the book), the paces of the horse, and the varieties of bit and bridle.

We may offer as a suggestion for the next edition of this capital and really excellently printed handbook that a chapter on riding and horsemanship in India might well be supplied, by the pen of an Anglo-Indian if necessary. It is indispensable to so many of our countrywomen in India to ride that the book might soon become extremely popular there.

*The Shirburn Ballads, 1585—1616.* Edited from the MS. by ANDREW CLARK, honorary fellow of Lincoln College. Pp. viii., 380, demy 8vo. Oxford (Clarendon Press), 1907. Price 10s. 6d. net.

The peasant ditties of England and Scotland, especially those of the border minstrels where the numerous feuds tended to fire their imagination, composed originally for music or recitation, have special characteristics which are always quaint and interesting and serve in preserving the traditions and customs of early times in a remarkable manner.

It is a long time since any addition to this peculiar ballad literature has been made at all comparable in value with the volume before us, doubtfully if since the publication of Percy's *Reliques of Early English Poetry*. These specimens of Elizabethan and Jacobean folk-song are printed from a MS. which is one of the treasures of the Earl of Macclesfield's noble library at Shirburn Castle, Oxfordshire. The collection is wonderfully varied and representative and a majority of the ballads are new; they are, as Dr. Clark says, "the folk-songs of Shakespeare's time that pass in review before us—the songs that Poor Tom sang and that Autolycus vended."

Our valued contributor and the scholarly editor of this thoroughly useful volume tells us in his introduction (p. 3), "Just before undertaking to issue these ballads, I had, by the extreme kindness of the Corporation, full access to the hitherto uncalendared and unsearched miscellaneous papers of the Essex borough of Maldon. These have supplied a number of notes, illustrative of the social conditions here alluded to." This is so, the very numerous references to the Maldon Borough records and the copious extracts given, as Dr. Clark has purposely kept to one source as far as possible to illustrate and explain the incidents recorded, almost makes this an Essex book. Anyhow it is thus made especially valuable to Essex readers.

We should mention that it contains thirty-nine illustrations reproduced from the black-letter copies. There is a full index and complete glossary. Useful footnotes correcting the numerous corruptions abound.





*From a drawing]*

*[in burnt stick.*

REV. BENJAMIN FORSTER.



THE  
ESSEX REVIEW:

*A Quarterly Journal for the County.*

---

---

No. 64.]

OCTOBER, 1907.

VOL. XVI.

---

---

THE REV. BENJAMIN FORSTER, B.D.,  
AND HIS ACCOUNT OF ROMAN  
ROADS IN NORTH ESSEX AND  
SAFFRON WALDEN.

BY JOSEPH J. GREEN.

**A**MONGST some old papers in my possession is a long letter of seven pages folio, written to his brother in 1765 by the Rev. Benjamin Forster, B.D., of the Walthamstow family of that name. He was a younger son of Thomas Forster by his wife Dorothy Furly, and was born in 1736. His great grandfather was the celebrated Benjamin Furly, of Colchester and Rotterdam (the friend and correspondent of Locke, Algernon Sidney, and the third Lord Shaftesbury), by his second wife Susanna Huis.

Benjamin Furly, who was born in 1636, just a century before his great grandson Benjamin Forster, was a younger son of John Furly, Mayor of Colchester 1638 and 1650, who died a Quaker in 1673, aged 83. Benjamin Furly, with his brother John Furly, also embraced the tenets of Quakerism, and were the authors of several pamphlets in defence of their principles. Benjamin Furly was also associated with George Fox and John Stubbs in the well-known 'Battledoor,' in 1659-60, entertained George Fox at Rotterdam, and interpreted for him abroad. He, however, renounced Quakerism in after years, and died in 1714, when a sale catalogue of his valuable library was printed.

From Benjohan, the eldest son, descended the famous literary and philanthropic family of the Forsters of Walthamstow, of

x

whom there are no less than six members commemorated in the *Dictionary of National Biography*, and from John Furly, second son to Benjamin, descended the late gifted Rev. Henry de Beltgens Gibbins, D. Litt., F.R.G.S., the economist and author, whose tragic death in Thackley old tunnel, near Bradford, through falling out of a train on the 13th of August last, at the early age of 42, is greatly to be deplored.\*

The Rev. Benjamin Forster, B.D., author of the following extremely interesting and valuable letter, was a celebrated antiquary, the friend of Gray, Mason, and Gough, who after holding several livings, died rector of Boconnoc, Broadoak, and Cherichayes, Cornwall, in 1805, aged seventy. An obituary notice in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, (†) quoting from the *Royal Cornwall Gazette*, of Dec. 7, 1805, says:—

He was a man of genius, accomplishments, learning and the finest taste ; and in him the possession of these advantages was wholly unaccompanied by that arrogance and pedantry by which the lustre of talents and learning is too frequently tarnished. His benevolence and politeness in social intercourse never permitted him to display his superiority at the expense of another's feelings or his own good breeding as a gentleman. The delicacy of his wit, the brilliancy of his fancy, his poignant humour, and that happy variety of allusion by which his conversation was distinguished will long be remembered and regretted. One who has frequently derived from him instruction and delight pays this tribute to the memory of the friend of Mason and Gray, of him whose name (but for the obscure retirement in which he was lost) would have been handed down to posterity as one of the most shining ornaments of his age and country.

There is also a sketch of Benjamin Forster in the following valuable works, viz.: *Epistolarium Forsterianum*, being a collection of antient letters from eminent men [Locke, Tillotson, Warton, Oliver Cromwell], and many Jacobite relics, preserved in the Forster family, and saved by them out of the destruction of the Border wars in 1715.' Brussels, n.d. [1852], 2vols. 8vo.; and the privately printed *Original Letters of John Locke, Algernon Sidney, and Lord Shaftesbury*, the second edition of which appeared in 1847; these books were both edited by Thomas Ignatius Maria Forster, the naturalist and astronomer, son of Thomas Furly Forster, the younger, and great nephew to Benjamin.

Now for the letter. This is dated from Chelmsford, in October 1765, and is addressed to Benjamin Forster's brother,

\* For an interesting account of his Furly ancestors from his own pen see the *Essex Review*, vol. viii., pp. 86-95 (1899).

† 1805, 11., pp. 1177 and 1237.

‘Thomas Furly Forster [the elder], merchant in Walbrook, London, a double letter.’

‘Dear Brother, I forgot to bring with me either my music book or your copy of *Or che Salvo*; if you can easily find yours I should be obliged to you for it in a letter; or if you cannot, I should be glad if you would get it wrote out at Mrs. Johnson’s, as Dr. Buxton seems to want it much:—Mrs. Johnson will find it amongst Mingotti’s songs. I shall write at the bottom of this some intelligence relating to antiquities near Chesterford, which may save my brother Edward some trouble in enquiries, if I should not be able to join him next week. I am yours affectionately, B.F.’

Miss Suky Finch (whom I have just now seen) wants to buy a quarter of a ticket, if they are not likely to be in any considerable degree cheaper than they now are, she would be much obliged to you to make the purchase for her.

On the last page of the second sheet you will find some account of your Walden Castle.

[Here follows the account of antiquities at Chesterford as follows]:—Besides the great encampment, opposite to the Crown, there certainly is a smaller one near the Church: the old wall on the right hand of the road coming from London, between the Mill and *Gardiner’s*, has been one side of it, an inconsiderable bank, on which the N. wall of the churchyard stands, another:—There is a third, towards the river, which, wherever opened, appears to be *made wall*.

Near the mill has been discovered a tessellated pavement, and the stone trough, now at the blacksmith’s, was likewise found near the mill; it was carried unopened into the house of the person who then occupied the mill, and the contents of it kept a secret, but the miller gave a handsome treat to the labourers who found it.

The name of *Borough Field* is not confined to the ground enclosed in the great encampment, but the adjacent grounds, particularly all that lies between it and the river, are comprehended in it. In the ground between the encampment and the river is the spot supposed to have been an amphitheatre. There is no bank or inequality of ground remaining, but Mr. Shepherd observed the corn to grow very thin in a circle of about eight *yards* wide, including a space of 100 *yards* diameter (as the doctor thinks, from memory, and not feet).

The traces of the streets and the entrances of the camp east and west are plainly discernible by the thinness of the corn when growing.

Near a cottage, beside the Newmarket Road, were lately discovered, in digging under the track of the walls for materials for the road, three holes, filled with blackish earth; in them



pieces of bones of animals and earthenware, and across the top of one of them was a human skeleton.

Very near the same place was found a small urn of red earth, which would contain about a pint, with a cover to it. In it were pieces of parchment with writing on them. Some of these pieces of parchment were given to Oslin, the man who kept the Crown before Gardiner, but in all probability they were destroyed; several of them are supposed to have fallen into the hands of Judge Reynolds. It is imagined that coins were found at the same time, and the man who discovered these, about 50 years ago, is still living, an ancient labouring man.

On the Ickleton side of the river is a hollow way leading to Strethall; not far from the Mill Bridge, in digging for gravel were found, near the bank, several pieces of solid gold of this form [horseshoe-shaped], and of different sizes; the largest about the thickness of a man's finger, the smallest of a wheat straw; they were sold to different goldsmiths, and the smallest of them fetched two guineas. These may possibly have been *Fibulae*.

Near the same place, two or three holes similar to those before-mentioned, with burnt earth and pieces of earthenware.

Encampments adjacent to the great one are, one, oblong and angular, at Hingeston, called the Hingeston Barrows. It is about half a mile distant from the great one. It lies on the river, the side furthest from the river is close by the road leading by the back of Mr. Vechel's house into the village. Probably one at Burton Wood, two long miles from the great encampment. A small square encampment mentioned by Stukely, near Walden:—Quere, whether the same with one close to the town, at the back of Mr. Browne, the surgeon's garden?

Ringhill you know of.

There is likewise a small camp on the Ickleton and Duxford side of the river, which I saw, but don't know how to describe the site of.

ROADS: one leading into the great encampment from the ford at the mill, the other way carrying you into the *very considerable road* from Ickleton to Strethall. This last seems to be near as perfect as when made, but does not go in a straight line. Going on this road from Ickleton southwards, you get on a rise near Ickleton, called Coplow Hill, from whence you see the road lying before you as far to Strethall, where it comes at right angles into Strethall Street, and is there blockt up by a house, but may be recovered beyond it. Strethall Street at right angles with this, likewise Roman, easily traceable into a farmyard nearly opposite to Littlebury Church, one way, to a way-post two or three miles distant from Strethall, the other.

Parallel with the road from Ickleton to Strethall, nearer the river, is a third Roman road, near as perfect as when first made. This you will easily find, as it comes out into Littlebury town.

at a place you must remember. In going down to Chesterford you will observe that at the entrance into Littlebury, instead of keeping strait on, you take a sharp turn to the right and go by the church : the strait on road is the continuation of this road I am speaking of.

Parallel still is a fourth Roman road, on the opposite side of the river from Littlebury, the present road from Walden to Stump Cross, which is at a way-post between Chesterford and Hingeston. This is as mentioned as Roman by Dr. Gall in his commentary.

The present Newmarket and Chesterford road is almost indisputably Roman.

A sixth Roman road comes from the third mentioned at right angles, crosses the present road, and goes on as far as the river—how much farther uncertain. This road goes through the village of Little Chesterford, and near it, west of the great road, there is some reason to suppose the encampment might be found, which gives name to this village.

Road the second was mentioned as leading from Strethall to a way-post. The road which there crosses it at right angles [our seventh] is the Icknild Street, which is indisputably traceable westward to Royston, but from our way-post are *two* branches eastward or north-eastward; one (marked in Warburton's map) leading along low grounds into Ickleton Street, but now almost defaced, though some marks are still to be seen near a farmhouse in some enclosures. The northern branch goes over a rising ground above Ickleton, and is still called the Port Way. Tradition says of this that it has been a great old road and the famous highway to London. The track of this road goes on (to the north of the great encampment) to an old ford over the river, but the road now in use is modern and leads to another ford (a little northward of ours), called Brockleford Bridges; however, evidence of this existence of our road shall be produced presently; it goes eastward of the river, through a little grove towards Vechell's House. As a proof of its existence where now disused and interrupted by enclosures, hear what Mr. Shepherd, the antiquarian farmer, says of it: 'Our town of Ickleton, sir, must have been a great place formerly, for below Brockleford Bridge Road is a place called *the street* (this was in the days of Mr. Shepherd's infant-antiquarianism, while he had only gratified his curiosity by looking about him, and was utterly uninstructed). Mr. Hanchett, the lord of the manor, had the curiosity to have a part of it dug into, and they discovered foundations of some kind or other there.' Now as these *foundations* were found in a bank, the course of which is a direct continuation of the line of the Port Way to the old ford, I think anybody that will be satisfied with evidence short of demonstration will allow our road to have gone here.

When I said above that the road through the camp went in a direction from *West* to *East*, I meant that it came into the camp at the side most distant from Gardiner's, and out at the side by the Cambridge Road, almost opposite to Gardiner's. (This I mention, because Dr. Gower, from looking at Warburton's map, doubts whether we are right as to our points of the compass, though I still think that we are.) However, the road coming out of the encampment opposite Gardiner's is continued in a lane somewhere near Gardiner's, leading down to the river, where it has been fordable, and where Dr. G.'s guides told him there evidently had been an old road and asked where it could lead to. The exact situation of this lane, and on which side of the Crown it lies, the Doctor cannot positively assert, as he never rode it till the last day of his being in that country, and after his attention has been engaged by many other things, but this you will easily give a more recent account of.—This is our 8th Road.

The 9th. Very near where the last road past the river is another, crossing it at right angles, still on the same side of the river, and abutting on the Parsonage House of Great Chesterford. This road is continued a considerable way eastward, and though abruptly finished at the Parsonage, there is a tradition that it was carried on to the west and crost the river, which here takes a considerable turn. Both this and the preceding are marked in Warburton's map.

10th. Between a wood called Burton Wood and the track of the 8th road, is a road, the foundations of which have in many places been laid by a water-course, and which appears to have been made with great art and labour; it crosses the 8th road in a direction about North-West, and goes on, leaving the great encampment, to the S.W. towards the river. This road is known by the name of the Cow Path. As it ascends the hill it divides into two paths, the left hand indisputably Roman, the right going to the banks in the wood. Qu[ery], whether either of them is Icknild Street.

In the very spot where Dr. Gower had told Shepherd he would find a ford, if this road had ever been continued across the river, he, in his last letter, writes the Dr. that he had accordingly found one between Chesterford and Ickleton. Burton, you will observe, is a promising name, and this road might be looked for through the wood with good hopes, especially as Mr. Pike (who has often hunted through the wood) remembers to have seen banks there, and seems to think himself he could trace out a camp there.

11th. At the same ford where this last road is supposed to have crost the river (which is a place called Dick's Mead), they have certainly discovered another road (by the dying away of the corn in a long strait track) leading towards the camp

I mentioned, called Hingston Barrows ; the breadth of this road Shepherd says they can accurately trace.

12th. The 12th is a road with a noble agger, crossing the river at Whittlesford Bridge. It is much frequented by hog jobbers and such gear.

13th. The 13th is at some distance from Chesterford (about eight miles, I suppose), crossing the Newmarket Road, and passing over Gogmagog Hills. This is only mentioned as being the most noble remain of any in the roadway, and known by the name of the *Ditch*—as the *Fosse* way.

In Abingdon Grove is a very considerable bank, but whether road or anything else remains to be determined. I myself am apt to think it one side of an encampment going down the hill from the Grove.

Another very considerable bank (or it may be a continuation of the same) is in Chesterford Park near the Manor House.

14th. A considerable Roman road goes from Walden to Linton. The agger near Linton very elevated.

Another seems to have crost it at right angles going to Radstock.

A ditch sets out from Pampisford (vulgarly Pauncer), near Chesterford, and would be worth a man's while to trace, that had already spent half a year in investigating the Rom[an] antiquities in this neighbourhood.

Near Newport Churchyard, that side of it which is farthest from the town, it is reported there is a camp.

As a proof that the roads Dr. G. fixes as Rom[an] near Ickleton are really such, Shepherd tells him that in scouring their ditches in the low grounds near Ickleton they meet with evident foundations in the direction of several of the Dr. G. roads.

This letter I have sat up till 12 o'clock writing from the doctor's verbal account. Mrs. Gower, as long as the children sat up, has been drawing coaches and churches, and fine ladies taller than the church steeples, when they are going to service, for the children, and she declares that she is the most rationally employed. Pray tell my brother Thomas [Furly Foster] that I know the Walden Castle keep and the wall on it very well, but I believe there is no foundation for his Danish story ; the castle was built, if I mistake not, by Geoffrey Magnaville, about the age of K[ing] Stephen. I cannot yet make any appointments to meet you on my return, as I dou[b]t when it will be. The Dr. presses me to stay a 3rd week, and I am too well inclined to stay of myself. I did not receive your letter telling me that your Chesterford journey was put off till we sat down to supper and then my history and antiquities of its environs were almost finished. I s[ha]ll read them when I have wrote them out, and will copy them for myself when I come [to] Wansted. I am

sincerely glad to hear my sister is so well. All here desire compliments.'

Here ends Forster's letter, which is beautifully written in a scholarly hand. It will be seen that this lengthy epistle was written some fifteen years before his death. There can be no doubt that general correspondence has sadly deteriorated since Forster's days, mainly from want of time, owing to the rush and turmoil of present-day life, but also from the reduced cost of postage and extra post-office facilities, and especially owing to the cheap press. Indeed, short hurried notes take the place of long and aforetime literary letters, which in many ways is a matter for regret.

The Dr. Gower mentioned in Forster's letter we take to be Foote Gower\* [1726?-1780], the antiquary; he was M.A. of Brasenose College, Oxford, 1750; M.D. 1757; rector of Chignall St. James, Essex, 1761-77; and published *Sketch of the Materials for a New History of Cheshire*, 1771.

The *Gentleman's Magazine* for 1780† has also some account of Dr. Gower, and states that he died at Bath, May 27. He was rector of Mashbury, co. Essex, as well as Chignall, to which place he was presented in 1761. He was licensed to unite the two livings, and took down the Mashbury Church and repaired Chignall Church in 1767. Dr. Foote Gower intended to improve Morant's *History of Essex*:—

but after having made some collections, and had several drawings taken and engraved, turned his thoughts wholly to the illustration of his native county of Chester, in whose capital his father had long practised physic, as he himself did at Chelmsford.

In 1771 he published (anonymously in a letter to Thomas Falconar, Esq.) the work mentioned above. This, he re-published with a fresh preface in 1773. In 1772 he put out proposals for the Essex History in 3 vols. folio, at a subscription price of ten guineas, the first volume to be printed in 1775—but the great cost of the undertaking, which would amount to 4,000 guineas, the difficulty of arranging the enormous mass of materials he had collected, and his numerous avocations and infirm health, prevented its execution. The account of Brazen Nose College, in the Oxford Guide, was drawn up by the Doctor when first admitted there.

\* *Dict. Nat. Biog.*, xxii., 296.

† Pp. 298-99.

I may add that Mr. Guy Maynard, the indefatigable curator of the Saffron Walden Museum, informs me that Dr. Gower made a map of some of the Roman roads in Essex, and issued a series of notes on the subject. This letter of the Rev. Benjamin Forster's is important in many ways as giving further details of the roads and antiquities of that neighbourhood, and will be of great service in the careful survey of the Chesterford—Ickleton district, which I believe Mr. Maynard is undertaking.

From the Furdy-Forster papers I am able to append a portrait of the Rev. Benjamin Forster from an original drawing in 'burnt stick,' and endorsed, apparently by himself, at the back to that effect (see Frontispiece).

---



---

## EARLY ESSEX WYKEHAMISTS.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

ON Michaelmas Day, 1386, William of Wykeham, bishop of Winchester, opened the great college which he had built at Oxford for a Warden and seventy Fellows. He intended it to be called the College of St. Mary of Winchester in Oxford, but it was promptly dubbed New College, and is still so known. Admission to New College Fellowships was had by election from Winchester School, begun by Wykeham in 1387, and completed by him in 1393. Admission to Winchester School was obtained by carefully graded preferences to Founder's kin and to certain favoured parishes and counties. Essex stands fifth on Wykeham's list of favoured counties, and certain of its parishes had the prior claim conferred on parishes in which Wykeham's foundations owned property. Probably because of the distance of the land of the East Saxons from the capital of Wessex, few Essex lads went to Winchester. Those of them who passed on to New College seem not to have thriven there, the tenure of their fellowships being cut short by untimely death, or by the desire to pursue law studies and not theology. The following list gives all the Essex names found from 1396, when the College books begin to record the parish of origin, down to 1696, and there are just forty-eight names in 300 years.

- RICHARD WILLINGALE, of Writtle, Essex, admitted 1397; vacated Fellowship 1406; graduated in Law.
- EDMUND FITZSYMOND, of 'Goddeston,' Essex, adm. 1405; retained Fellowship till death 1415; took M.A. This may be an error for Godstone, co. Surrey.
- JOHN WILLINGALE, of Writtle, adm. 1410; retained Fellowship till 1428, when he became Fellow of Winchester; took M.A.
- JOHN WAKEFIELD, of 'Myldebourne,' in Essex or Herts., adm. 1413; retained Fellowship till death 1424; took M.A.
- JOHN PARKER, of Waltham St. Cross, Essex, adm. 1414; retained Fellowship till 1430, when he was elected Fellow of Winchester; took M.A.; died 1473.
- WILLIAM FRYTH, of Takeley, Essex, adm. October 1414, but died next month.
- CHRISTOPHER BERDON, of Hornchurch, adm. 1428; died 1430.
- JOHN HAMMYS, of Havering, Essex, adm. 1430; vacated Fellowship in 1444, by succeeding to property; took B.A.
- JOHN ARKES or ARCHUS, of Chelmsford, adm. 1433, but resigned next year.
- WILLIAM GREENE, of Widdington, Essex, adm. 1435; resigned (or died) 1438.
- THOMAS HEVENINGHAM, of Writtle or Roxwell, Essex, adm. 1438, but vacated Fellowship in 1442 to take service at Court.
- JOHN BROWNE, of Abbes Roothing, Essex, adm. 1444; Law student; vacated Fellowship in 1452 to take service at Court.
- RICHARD HAYWARD, of Hornchurch, Essex; adm. 1444; vacated Fellowship in 1460; LL.D.; Master of St. Cross Hospital, Winchester.
- HENRY HARLINGE, of Newport, Essex, adm. 1446; vacated Fellowship, 1462; graduated in Law; Vicar of Writtle 1462-76.
- WILLIAM ESTON *alias* TRUMPER, of Newport, Essex, adm. 1451; vacated Fellowship, 1457; took B.A.
- JOHN FRRNDE, of Writtle, Essex, adm. 1462; vac. Fellowship, 1479; graduated in Law.
- JOHN HAWARD, of Romford, Essex, adm. 1465; vac. Fellowship, 1468; was chaplain of Fromund's chantry in Winchester Cathedral.
- ROBERT BEDYLL, of Writtle, adm. 1470; vacated Fellowship, 1471.
- THOMAS BRADFIELD, of Writtle, adm. 1471; vacated Fellowship, 1479; graduated in Law.
- JOHN GIBSON, of Ingatestone, Essex, adm. 1471; vacated Fellowship, 1476; studied Law.
- WILLIAM HERDE, of Romford, adm. 1472; died while still Fellow, 1479, and was buried in New College cloister; studied Law.
- ROBERT BRYGGES, of Waltham, Essex, adm. 1479, but resigned or died 1480.
- THOMAS BIRLEV, of Hornchurch, Essex, adm. 1484; resigned Fellowship, 1485.
- WILLIAM PERS, of Romford, Essex, adm. 1487, but went off the Fellows' list in August, 1488.
- STEPHEN COOPE, of Writtle, adm. 1489; died while still Fellow, 1492.
- JOHN LONDON, of Dunmow, Essex, adm. 1492; retained Fellowship till his death, 1508; was buried in New College Chapel, where he has a brass; Registrar of the University.

- WILLIAM PARKER**, of Colne, Essex, adm. 1497, but went off the Fellows' list in 1499.
- RICHARD CLOVYLDE**, of Benfleet, Essex, adm. 1500; retained Fellowship till death, 1507; took B.A.
- WILLIAM BRYAN**, of Essex or London, adm. 1507; off next year.
- FRANCIS TAY**, of Colchester, adm. 1512; died, while still Fellow, 1515.
- RICHARD BEDVLL**, of Writtle, adm. 1518, but resigned that year to study Law in London; had great influence with Henry VIII. and protected New College from spoliation.
- WILLIAM WISEMAN**, of Writtle, adm. 1525; but died, while still Fellow, 1528.
- JOHN CARROW**, of Romford, adm. 1530; but withdrew 1531, to study Law in London.
- JOHN MAN**, of Writtle, adm. 1531; held Fellowship till 1553; B.C.L.; Rector of Great Horwood, Bucks; died 1565.
- NICHOLAS FOX**, of Widdington, Essex, adm. 1549; expelled 1560; took M.A. The circumstances of his expulsion on religious grounds are mentioned in Strype's Annals.
- RICHARD PINCHON**, of Writtle, adm. 1549; but went off Fellows' list in 1551.
- GEORGE MAXKY**, of 'Luketon' (? Loughton), Essex, adm. 1566, but withdrew in 1568, to study Law in London.
- MATTHEW FOXE**, of Widdington, Essex, adm. 1567, but expelled, on religious grounds, 1569.
- WILLIAM STAFFORD**, of Rochford, Essex, adm. 1571; expelled 1575, for absence from College.
- ADAM HORNE**, of Walden, Essex, adm. 1573, but went off Fellows' list in 1577.
- THOMAS YONGE**, of Great Canfield, Essex, adm. 1575; resigned 1578.
- JOHN PINCHON**, of Writtle, adm. 1577; resigned 1581; took B.A.
- EDWARD WILMOTT**, of Boreham, Essex, adm. 1580; went off Fellows' list 1583; Law student.
- EDWARD TURNOUR**, of Parndon, Essex, adm. 1628; retained Fellowship till 1639; took M.A.; was Rector of Parndon; said to have emigrated to Virginia.
- STEPHEN COOKE**, of Boxted, Essex, adm. 1651; held Fellowship till 1662, when he became Fellow of Winchester.
- JOHN FARNEFOLD**, of Aldersbrooke or Oldersbrooke,\* Essex, adm. 1652; went to Virginia; afterwards benefited in the West Indies.
- RICHARD PARSONS**, of Birchanger, Essex, adm. as Founder's kin, 1657; resigned 1665, because benefited.
- ROBERT WISEMAN**, of Great Canfield, Essex, adm. 1659; resigned 1663; said in the New College books to have become 'a very great captain.'

\*This is in Little Ilford parish.—EDS.



## LAKE HOUSE, WANSTEAD FLATS.

WRITTEN AND ILLUSTRATED BY A. P. WIRE.

**I**N the neighbourhood of Wanstead, Leyton, and Forest Gate there is a public movement on foot for the purpose of saving this old house from the builder, and recently a deputation to the City Corporation asked for aid from the City Funds.



LAKE HOUSE, WANSTEAD.

Originally a kind of summer house to Wanstead House, the house and grounds have now for many years been used for tennis, cricket, beanfeasts, etc. There are very few historical associations connected with the house, except that Tom Hood resided there from 1832 to 1834 or 1835, and while there wrote 'Tylney Hall,' the 'Epping Hunt,' and some other pieces. It is thought also that the 'Song of the Shirt' was written during his residence

at Lake House, but this is not at all probable, as the ' Song ' was not published in *Punch* till 1843, two years before the death of the poet.

The house is an old timber structure of very little value architecturally, and contains only one good room. This is known as the ' Banqueting Room,' and is about 42ft. by 24ft. in size ; it is floored with oak and until quite lately the walls were covered with imitation tapestry, paintings on canvas in the style of Watteau, stretched on frames and fastened to the walls. The



LAKE HOUSE : INTERIOR.

room contained a handsome fireplace with carved wooden mantel and jamb, said to have been the work of Grinling Gibbons. This was hidden behind a wooden covering fastened to the walls, and has since been taken down and sold.

The house is called Lake House on account of the lake that used to occupy part of the grounds. In Chapman and André's Map of Essex (1777) the lake is shown as almost surrounding the house. In the six-inch ordnance map one hundred years later (1877-1882) it is shown as a small piece of water at the extreme north end of the grounds. In Tom Hood's time there was still

enough water for a boat to be used, but the water has gradually disappeared, till at the present time there is no lake at all. The illustrations which accompany these few notes of an old house likely soon to disappear, are of the garden front, the face of the house fronting the road, and the interior of the banqueting hall, of which, however, it is difficult to get a good view, owing to the lighting.

The gabled timber house of the lodge to the estate, with its approach over a wooden bridge, and its old fashioned garden



LAKE HOUSE: GARDEN VIEW.

with trim lawn and steps cut in the turf, will also go, and the crowding and overgrown trees will be swept away, for on going to press we hear that there is now no probability of either the house or grounds being saved. The builder is already at work, and houses are springing up along the newly made roads. The City Corporation, we understand, was willing to make a substantial grant, could the remainder of the large sum asked by the owners, have been raised by private subscription. (See *E.R.*, Vol. VI., p. 7, and Vol. VII., p. 213.)

## THE FOUNDING OF AN ESSEX WINDMILL.

BY MILLER CHRISTY.

**A**LL persons familiar with the rural parts of Essex twenty or thirty years ago will remember the numerous windmills which then waved their huge sails in the breeze on nearly every hill-top and piece of high ground in the county. These village windmills had formed for centuries a prominent feature in the landscape, and they differed little in appearance from those which were in use here in the Middle Ages, as is proved by drawings to be found in early illuminated manuscripts.

Until little more than a quarter of a century ago, such mills continued to supply the inhabitants of most of our villages with flour for themselves and meal for their cattle. To-day, however, they have been driven out of use so completely, by importations of flour ground in the vast mills of Minneapolis and elsewhere, that probably not a single windmill existing in Essex is now engaged in producing flour, though a few are still at work grinding meal for cattle.

The sites of many of these mills have been occupied continuously for a very long period—some certainly from Norman, and others probably from Saxon, times. Yet it must have been necessary, from time to time, as the population increased, to establish other mills on new sites; and, through the kindness of Mr. B. C. Hall, of The Lodge, Foulness, I am enabled to set forth the events which, in the year 1802, led up to the building of one such new mill in Essex—namely, that on Foulness Island.

Mr. Hall tells me that, at the date in question, the population of the island (which then numbered 396 persons, as the Census Returns of 1801 show) was reduced to great straits, owing to a difficulty in obtaining an adequate supply of flour, as no mill existed in the island. It was a time of extreme scarcity of food, and very high prices everywhere, owing to the French Wars; and, in addition to this, tradition on the island says that long-continued severe weather had prevented sufficient flour from being brought across from the mainland. In these circumstances, the islanders, naturally enough, thought of

the plan of building a mill upon their island. With this end in view, they seem to have got into communication with one John Chandler, a miller, of Southminster, who consented to build and work such a mill. First, however, it was necessary to obtain the consent of the Lord of the Manor—at that time, George, ninth Earl of Winchilsea; for the right of multure has ever been one of the most jealously-guarded of manorial rights. The manor mill was, indeed, often retained in the lord's own hands, and it was, in early days, a very valuable possession.

A copy of the petition which Chandler, supported by the leading inhabitants of the island, sent to Lord Winchilsea is in Mr. Hall's possession, and he has been good enough to lend it to me. It runs as follows:—

My Lord:—I, your Lordship's humble Petitioner, John Chandler, Miller, do hereby humbly beg, if it should meet your Lordship's Approbation, that You would condescend to grant me a piece of Ground, part of the Skirts belonging to Old Hall Farm, in Foulness Island, for the purpose of building a Mill and House thereon, for the Accommodation of the Inhabitants of Foulness Island; to be taken up by Me and my Heirs as a copyhold Estate for ever; which, if your Lordship will be graciously pleased to do, your Petitioner will use every endeavour in his power to give satisfaction to his employers, and throughout Life remain, with the truest Gratitude, your Lordship's most obliged and humble Servt.—J.C.

Southminster,

Dengy Hundred, Essex,

Feby. 22, 1802.

Frans. Bannester,

John Lodwick,

Wm. Meakins,

Wm. Potton,

Thos. Wiggins,

John Dowsett,

John Potton.

The names appended to the petition are autograph signatures—doubtless those of leading inhabitants of the island; but why these should have been written on what appears to be a mere copy of a document, not the original document itself, is by no means obvious.

Appended to the Petition is an undertaking given by Chandler, on the same date, setting forth the prices at which he

undertook to grind wheat and other grain for the inhabitants of the island :—

I, John Chandler, Miller, do hereby Agree to Grind and Dress Grist, etc., for the Inhabitants of Foulness Island on the following terms :—

Grinding and Dressing a Bushel of Wheat into Flour... 9d.  
 Grinding a Bushel of Beans, Barley, or other Grain..... 4½d.  
 But if Beans and only to be Broke ..... 3d.

The Miller shall not sell any Person's Corn if they pay him the above price for Grinding and Dressing the same; but, if any person chooses the Miller should take Toll, instead of Money, he will make it Agreeable to his Customers; and [further, the Miller] will use every means in his power to give Satisfaction to his Employers and hold himself greatly obliged to them for all Favours.

Feby. 22, 1802.

This is in the same handwriting as the Petition and is apparently also a copy. It is unsigned.

Within a month, Lord Winchilsea had acceded to Chandler's petition and granted that for which he prayed. The exact terms on which he did so are not recorded; but, on receipt of his Lordship's consent, the document under notice was completed by the addition of the following :—

March 18th, 1802.—As Lord Winchilsea has had the goodness to grant me a piece of Ground to build a Mill on, I do hereby engage to do the Grinding and Dressing at the above Prices, as long as I shall continue the Mill.—John Chandler.

The signature is evidently that of the miller himself, but the rest of the undertaking is in some other handwriting.

These formalities concluded, John Chandler no doubt at once left Southminster for Foulness Island. Apparently he did not build the mill at his own expense. Probably it was built by subscriptions of the parishioners; for I am informed by Mr. W. H. Dalton, F.G.S., a native of the island, that the cost of building it (namely £536) is entered in the Parish Registers.\* Chandler was, it seems, tenant or manager.

However this may be, the mill was built close to both Old Hall and the Church of Foulness, and there it stands to the

\* Mr. Dalton is unable to recollect in which of the various register books the record appears; but, as he rightly says, it would be most appropriate in that devoted to births!

present day. For many years, it served the needs of the islanders; but, as time went on, the fate of all such mills overtook it, and for some time past its sails have ceased to revolve. From a little distance, the building, now in its hundred and fifth year, appears to be fairly well preserved, but nearer approach shows serious dilapidations, and its final disappearance is probably near at hand.

---

## ESSEX COUNTY CRICKET IN 1907.

BY ROBERT COOK, ESSEX COUNTY C.C.

CONSIDERING that Essex are generally seen at their best on fast wickets, the result of the season for 1907 may be deemed fairly satisfactory, but had it not been for their old weakness—looseness in the field—a much better tale might have been told. At the same time, too much ought not to be made of mistakes—or what seem to be mistakes—by the men in the field. If a side is weak in batting or bowling, one is apt to be not over critical about the fielding, but when a side has run up a good score, and bowlers are doing well, dropped catches appear glaring errors and assume an importance which might not be so conspicuous if the other departments were not so good. Still, it is no use hiding the fact that the Essex fielding has not yet attained the high efficiency which supporters of our County Eleven would like to see.

Twenty-two inter-county matches were played, and of these ten were won, five drawn, and seven lost, the County finishing seventh on the championship table, in front of Kent, last year's champions. Essex twice defeated Kent, Lancashire, Sussex, and Derbyshire; and beat Gloucestershire and Northamptonshire once. On the other hand, they lost two matches to both Surrey and Yorkshire, and one to Gloucestershire, Leicestershire, and Notts, while the drawn matches were with Middlesex (twice), Notts, Leicestershire, and Northamptonshire. Two innings of over 400 were scored by Essex—436 v. Kent, and 438 v. Lancashire—but only one of their opposing clubs totalled 400 in an innings, viz., Surrey, 411, in the opening match of the season.

Mr. C. McGahey acted as captain for the first time, having succeeded Mr. F. L. Fane in that office. The latter gentleman returned from a most successful cricketing tour in South Africa before the season started, but was unable to play for the County as regularly as in the previous season. Fewer batsmen than usual reached their thousand runs, but considering the wet season, the aggregates and averages of the leading batsmen were very satisfactory. Mr. P. A. Perrin topped the list with an aggregate of 1,017 runs and an average of 35·9, Mr. C. McGahey came next with 1,092 and 34·12, and Mr. F. L. Fane was third with 830 and 33·2. Mr. J. W. H. T. Douglas, who displayed all-round qualities, and Buckenham, who at times proved a most useful batsman, each had an average of a fraction over 21 per innings. Freeman (E. J.) and S. P. Meston, a new comer, who played for Gloucestershire in the previous season, but who possesses a birth qualification for Essex, also gave an excellent account of themselves with the bat; but the Rev. F. H. Gillingham was not so successful as usual, Carpenter only played once, and Major Turner did not turn out at all. As both the latter players have been credited with a thousand runs in previous seasons, the fact that Essex did so well in batting proves what a valuable reserve of batting strength the County possesses. Five "centuries" were scored by Essex batsmen, Mr. P. A. Perrin scoring 116 v. Middlesex, and 105 v. Notts; Mr. S. P. Meston 130 v. Lancashire, Buckenham 124 v. Lancashire, and Mr. C. McGahey 108 v. Kent.

Walter Mead again headed the bowling averages, his 120 wickets at an average cost of 16 runs being a very meritorious record. Mr. Douglas was a good second, with 72 wickets taken at a cost of 20·63 per wicket, but Buckenham beat him in numbers, 94 wickets, but at the higher cost of 21·22 per wicket. Reeves occasionally rendered effective assistance, and Mr. McGahey's 'slows' accounted for 22 wickets.

For the first time in the history of the County Club a cricket week was held away from the County Ground at Leyton, Northamptonshire and Surrey being played at Southend. A substantial guarantee was given by leading residents of the Borough, and the Mayor (Councillor W. R. King) hospitably entertained the four elevens at dinner, but, I regret to state, wet weather had a serious effect upon the attendance, and the



guarantors had to be called upon for a substantial amount. There is no question about the enthusiasm of Southend cricketers, but somehow or other County cricket did not take well in the midst of the seaside season. It is most likely that Colchester will next season press the Committee of the Club for a match, or two matches, to be played in that borough. Up to the present Colchester has not possessed a ground good enough for County matches, but the Corporation have gone to considerable expense in perfecting a pitch which they claim is well fitted to satisfy the most fastidious of cricketers. Whether it will pay the Executive to arrange more matches away from the ground at Leyton is a matter which requires careful consideration, but I think there can be no doubt that the policy of allowing residents in other parts of Essex an opportunity of occasionally witnessing county matches is likely to lessen the feeling which exists in some quarters that the Essex C.C. is a metropolitan rather than Essex body. If this should happily prove the case, it may be the means of bringing in the additional members of which the Club still stands in need.

In addition to the inter-county contests, Essex played the South Africans twice, and were defeated on each occasion. Buckenham was chosen to play in several representative matches, an honour which he well deserved; and Messrs. Perrin, McGahey, Fane, and Douglas were also chosen to play in the festivals which followed the close of the County season. Messrs. Douglas and Fane were also invited to join the M.C.C. team on their American tour, but only Mr. Douglas was able to accept. He is now on the other side of the 'herring pond,' where all Essex cricketers will wish him good luck with both bat and ball, and a safe return to his native land.

---

---

## THE HISTORY OF CORN MILLING IN ESSEX.

BY WILSON MARRIAGE AND MISS C. FELL SMITH.

**C**ORN MILLING has flourished from early times in Essex, once a large corn-growing county with a well-watered and gently-undulating surface, and an extensive sea-board that facilitated importation of mill-stones from the Rhine and the

North of France. Colchester and Harwich were the chief ports of entry.\* At first a purely domestic occupation, corn-milling became, as time went on, more and more a commercial undertaking, until in the early years of the nineteenth century every stream, and almost every hill-top in the county, was planted with wind and water mills.

The archaic fashion of bruising grain between two flat stones, pursued by the early Britons, was succeeded by the Roman custom of grinding in a quern, or hand-mill having stones of a peculiarly hard kind procured mainly from Nieder Mendig, near Cologne. Fine specimens of these quern-stones, upper and lower, are to be seen in the museum at Colchester, and in private collections in the county. The hand-mill remained in use for several centuries.

In the returns of the taxation of Colchester in 1301, there is mention of a lady, Agnes Molendinaria, who possessed stones for a hand-mill (*lapides pro molis manualibus*), valued at four shillings.† An entry‡ in the court rolls of the manor of Walthamby names one John Artour, summoned on August 1, 1424, to give satisfaction for a hand-mill (*petra manualis*) and a copper removed by him from the copyhold of Everwynes, within the manor. The Colchester Museum contains a very curious old hand-mill, perhaps as late as the seventeenth century, from Great Hallingbury.§

The chief rivers of Essex (Stour, Colne, Chelmer, and Blackwater, all having water carriage to the sea), and many of their tributaries, were utilised for turning mills by our Saxon forefathers. Those breezy high grounds in north Essex around Dunmow, Stebbing, Thaxted, Saffron Walden and Chesterford, as well as high land in the neighbourhood of Hornchurch, Rayleigh and elsewhere, were all crowned with wind-mills, which were erected at less expense than water mills, the cost of the *virgæ*, or sail-yards, being considerably lower than that of a water-wheel.

An analysis of the returns of the Domesday Survey shows that, in 1086, West Ham was the chief seat of milling in Essex, and nine mills (eight of them then standing) are named as having

\* Rogers, *Hist. of Agric. and Prices*, i. (1868), 143, 510, and ii., 330-333.

† *Rot. Parl.*, i., 248.

‡ Communicated by Dr. A. Clark.

§ Presented recently by Mr. G. E. Pritchett, F.S.A.

existed there. Witham and Wethersfield on the Blackwater and Littlebury on the Cam had four each. Bardfield on the Pant (a tributary of the Blackwater), Halstead and Colne Engaine on the Colne, Newport on the Cam, Great Dunmow, Great Waltham, and Boreham on the Chelmer, Waltham Abbey on the Lea, and Feering on the Blackwater had three each; while two mills existed in not a few manors, and one in a great many more. Altogether about 225 mills (most of them, no doubt, water mills) are enumerated in the *Returns for Essex*.\*

Thus there were on the Cam and its tributaries 15 mills; on the Stour and its tributaries 21 mills; on the Colne and its tributaries 33 mills; on the Blackwater and its tributaries 51 mills; on the Chelmer and its tributaries 34 mills; on the Crouch and Roach and their tributaries 11 mills; on the Mardyke 1 mill; on the Bourne Brook 1 mill; on the Roding and its tributaries 17 mills; on the Lea and Stort and their tributaries 28 mills; on the coast or on creeks 13 mills (? tidal).†

There can be no doubt that many of the dams across the heads of small valleys, which exist still in all parts of the county, mark the sites of these Domesday mills, and that several of our existing mills occupy the sites of others—sites which have been occupied continuously, in many cases since Saxon days. A notable instance is the mill at Baythorne End, which formed part of the Birdbrook Hall Estate from the Conquest until 1779, when it was sold to Richard Fitch.‡

It is extremely interesting to find that what was probably one of the old manorial mills still exists, although in a ruinous condition, at White Notley Hall. The fact was brought to our notice by Mr. Miller Christy, to whom we are indebted for a photograph of the exterior, which forms the illustration opposite.

When seen a week or two ago on a cloudless autumn evening at sunset, this ancient mill-house formed one of the most picturesque objects possible, and the only regret was that the

\*See *Vict. Hist. Essex*, vol. i., pp. 426-698.

†The list we have compiled from Domesday is perhaps hardly interesting enough to print in full. It comprises all mills mentioned in the return as having stood recently on the manors named, although a few are stated to be no longer in existence. Thus, at Leyton, the mill is said (*loc. cit.*, p. 536) to have been taken away in King William's time. Probably even this long list does not include all mills; for, if those mentioned are laid down on a map of the county, it will be found that there are very few mills given in certain districts, as that to the east of Chelmsford (in the upper valleys of the Cam and Roding) and that to the south of the same town (in the valleys of the Wid and Ingrebourne).

‡Wright, *Hist. of Essex*, i., 618.

hour precluded a photograph of the interior, where the ancient machinery, all with wooden fittings and appliances, remains for the most part *in situ*.

The mill is situated at the outlet of the large reedy lake which partly encircles this fine old Tudor Hall; it was worked by an overshot wheel, not wooden entirely, but with iron plates. The small lean-to on the right of the picture screens the wheel from sight, but is now roofless. Unfortunately the photograph



OLD MILL AT WHITE NOTLEY.

does not show the very sharp drop in the ground, or give the impression that the mill is actually several feet below the level of the lake. The floor of the building is ruinous, but that of the upper loft, where corn was doubtless stored, is in better repair. The chain and pulley for hoisting the sacks up hangs from the roof. The horizontal wheel inside and the lower one within the pit are of iron with wooden cogs; the shaft and spindles are

entirely wooden, as is also the semi-circular removable covering of the horizontal wheel. It is the shape of half a flat cheese. There are two pairs of stones, one on either side of the interior wheels. How lately the mill was working it is hard to say, but it was known to be in constant use up to 1865 and later, for grinding cattle stuffs and meals. The building is at any rate 150 years old, and probably replaced a still earlier one.

West Ham long retained its importance as a milling centre. In the beginning of the fourteenth century, as Stowe says,\* London was supplied with bread by the bakers of Stratford, who were allowed to bring in penny loaves two ounces heavier than those baked in the city. One of the bakers, John of Stratford, in 1311, for breaking the assize in regard to weight, was drawn on a hurdle through London streets, with a fool's hood on his head and a necklace of light loaves about his neck. In *The Vision of Piers the Plowman*, there is this allusion to the Stratford bakers of 1350 :—†

Al London, I leve,  
Liketh wel my wafres ;  
And lowren whan thei lakken hem.  
It is noght long y-passed  
There was a careful commune  
Whan no cart com to towne  
With breed fro' Stratforde.

Another prominent milling centre was Waltham Abbey. In 1108, Queen Maud gave one of the corn-mills there, valued at thirty shillings annually, to the Abbot in exchange for the site of Holy Trinity, Aldgate. On September 28, 1528, just before the Reformation, the Abbot leased this mill to one James Blount, miller, for sixteen years, at a rental of £26 13s. 4d. per annum, payable quarterly, with various other reservations and conditions.‡

In feudal England the wind and water mills were important franchises belonging to the lord of the manor, who enjoyed as a rule the sole privilege of multure, or grinding corn, and levied a toll on all persons using his mill. The miller was (as Prof. Thorold Rogers points out)§ the most important lay tenant of

\* *Survey of London* (1876), p. 59.

† See Wright's edition (1832), pp. 262 and 555; also *Introd.*; p. xii. n. The poet seems to attribute the stoppage of the supply to a 'drye April,' but probably the Black Death of 1348-9 was the real cause.

‡ See Winter's *Waltham Abbey* (1888), pp. 57 and 140.

§ *Six Centuries of Work and Wages*.

the manor. The fee for grinding was fixed by the Ordinances for trade at a quart of wheat for every bushel, which was to be augmented by another bushel if the corn were fetched to the mill. Every monastery, too, had its own mill, which served usually the double purpose of controlling the sluices of the fish-ponds and grinding meal.

In Mediæval times, at Colchester (and probably elsewhere) the miller was forbidden, on pain of fine and, for a third offence, the pillory, to water or change any man's corn, or give worse for better. By the Ordinance the miller's poultry was limited to three hens and a cock, and all other grain-gluttons, such as geese, ducks, and hogs, were rigorously banished from his premises.\* One of his chief difficulties must have been the extraordinary fluctuations in the price of corn. It became necessary to fix the price of bread by a sliding scale, adjusted to the price of grain. The Assize of Bread was actually framed in the reign of Henry II., but probably existed in some form even earlier. It was very strictly enforced, recalcitrant bakers who refused to bake bread 'for common use, according to the Statute' (presumably when the price was too low) were summarily dealt with in the pillory. Bread of four or five kinds was recognised by the *assisa panis*—Wastel, Cocket of two kinds, Simnel, and Treet. The coarsest (?) made ('*de omni blado*') was twice the weight of the greater Cocket. It was regarded as vastly inferior, and certainly did not much resemble our coveted 'whole-meal' bread.

In the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, milling was carried on extensively at Chesterford, Ramsey, Dovercourt, Bardfield, Takeley, Birchanger, Hornchurch, and Writtle, on the estates belonging to New College, Oxford; and the books of accounts belonging to the College contain many interesting entries of the cost of mill-stones supplied to each of these places.†

Much information about the mills at Great Waltham at the end of the fourteenth century and beginning of the fifteenth has been collected by Dr. Andrew Clark, specially for this article, from the court rolls of the manor of Walthambury‡ Beside two

\* *The Red Paper Book of Colchester*, fo. 15; Benham: *Red Paper Book*, p. 18.

† Rogers: *Hist. of Agric. and Prices*.

‡ See *Essex Review*, xiii. (1904), p. 74 *et seq.* These rolls belong to Colone Tufnell, of Langleys.

fulling-mills—Champneys, in Little Waltham, and Prille Mill, higher up the stream—there were four corn-mills—the Great Mill or Mochel Mill (at or near the present Howe Street Mill), Mascalls or Marescalls, Berwyk's or Langley's Mill, and Little Waltham Mill. The following notes of repairs, etc., are offered as gleanings towards the local history of milling :—

The Great (or Mochel) Mill is named 16th May 1397, when John, son of John Brode, was admitted to tenancy of the cottage and curtilage near the mill. In July 1400, it is ordered to be put in repair, being *valde ruinos* in respect of its *opus aquaticum*. It was placed under repair again in May 1404, and in the autumn of 1407, when on 9th November its old timber *de fundo* and the *quisquiliae et abrasiones* (? slabs and chips) of the new timber are rated at 13s. 4d. and 2s. respectively. In the following November, the bedell is ordered to repair 'le dam'; and, on 23rd July 1410, he is to see to repairs of the roof. It is reported at this time that John Wolstan and William 'Meller' had appropriated without license three old millstones, valued at 40d., claiming that it was a 'custom' for millers to have the old stones for placing the new; the decision is not reported on the roll. On 11th May 1412, the bedell is instructed to see to the waterway under the mill. A year later, the mill-house is to be repaired with plaster and thatch, the pond and the floodgates are to be banked and mended and a new mouth is to be provided for the overflow. In December 1413, the bedell is censured for his neglect in not carrying out these restorations, which cannot have been accomplished very thoroughly even then, for in October 1415 the floodgates and thatch require fresh attention. The water wheel in 1414 needs *ruelberd*. In July 1416, the mill is reported as in thorough repair; but, in September of the same year, the floodgates and *opus terraneum* again need reparation. On 19th March 1425-6, 'Mochil mell' is reported *in debili punctu*. On 22nd September 1427, it is in need of re-thatching, presentment being repeated in the following February. In November 1429, seven oaks are felled in Littleley Park for the *scura novarum exclusarum* which are now finished. The miller's man at this time was, perhaps, one John Wolston, junior, who is reported to have removed certain fixtures—*una antica* of boards, a *collera* of iron, a *stipes* which lay inside the mill *juxta le tolhuch*, another *stipes*

called 'le hewyng-block,' a plank which lay beside 'le water dore,' and a 'wyndas'—for which, in December, he was mulcted 12d. In 1435, John Turnour, of Writtle, lessee of the Mochel Mill and Mulsham Mill, had as servant, one William Palmer, who was fonder of play than work. When left in charge of the mill, he absented himself, leaving the key in the door, with the result that two bushels of wheat-flour and various articles were stolen; and, on September 26, Turnour brought a suit in Great Waltham court-baron, claiming 7s. 8d. damages from Palmer. From this date till 1436, the Great Mill is little mentioned in the manorial rolls; but, in April 1436, one oak was felled in Apchild Park, and eight oaks in Little Park, *pro scura* of a new water wheel. In the survey of 1563, the Mochel Mill is described as a 'water myll with cotage coveryd with strawy, called Muche Mylle, with Mylle meade (1 acre, 3 roods, 23 poles), and 39 poles of pasture between the mill and the back river.' It was then let to Nycholas Rychards.

Little Waltham Mill lay south of the village, where Croxton's Mill is now. It is named frequently in the rolls as under repair. A new bridge over the river at the mill was built in November 1404, the timber for it being felled in a wood named Mumme's hegge, but much delay in carrying out the work is reported. New plaster (*daubura*) and thatch (*coopertura*) are needed in September 1407. In August 1408, fourteen oaks are felled in Mumme's hegge, the lord's wood, for the repair of the mill. In June 1411, the bedell must mend the water-wheel. In June 1415, the miller is threatened with a fine if he does not leave off keeping back the water, which was damaging the margins of the great pond. On 8th Nov. 1419, is the entry that Jeffrey Dunbed, miller, took Little Waltham water mill, with the meads and pasture formerly let with it, on a seven years' lease from Michaelmas last, at a yearly rent of eight marcs. The lord is to repair the mill; the miller to keep it in good order and to serve *bene et fideliter et dominum et patriam*. In June 1427, four oaks are felled in Apchild Park for repair of 'le cornmelle' in Little Waltham. In December 1430, the *inclusae et le melle-dame* needed repair; and two years later, in September 1432, further repairs were needed, for which five oaks were felled, four of them in Little Park. In the survey of 1563, the mill, with the waste ground belonging to it and its lane



(together 1 acre 3 poles), is stated to be let with the fields following :—Mill croft (2 acres, 1 rood), bounded east, by Little Waltham Hall, west, by Little Waltham Mill; Tanne croft (2a. 1r. 20p.), bounded west, by Derke mead, east, by Parcetts Hall croft; Derke meade (2a. 3r. 27p.), a meadow lying between, south, Mill Lane, and, north, a hoppett of meadow called Tannehope.

Of the other corn-mills at Waltham less is found entered on the rolls. Dr. Clark has been through the later rolls down to July 1455, but finds therein few entries relating to the mills—perhaps because the steward got into a habit of not noting in them property that was ‘in hand.’ It is singular also that none of the rolls contain any reference to the ancient obligation on copyholders to have their grain ground at the lord’s mill, nor to any mulct imposed on them for having it ground elsewhere. Possibly the obligation had fallen into disuse.

At Colchester there have been mills on the river Colne from very early times. Several are mentioned in the Domesday Return, one of them—that now known as East Mill—was then held by a wealthy Saxon lady named Leofleda. Four millers (*molendiaris*) belonging to the town are mentioned in the taxation returns of 1301.\* These were, doubtless, the tenants of three mills on the Colne—North Mill, Middle (or King’s) Mill, and Stokes Mill (the latter probably identical with the existing East Mill)—and of the Abbot’s Mill at Bourne Pond. All these mills continued to exist throughout the Middle Ages.† In 1489 there were two mills, one for corn and the other for fulling, at New Hythe, Colchester, and in December of that year the bailiffs and aldermen of the town were called together to consider that these mills, which had existed ‘from time out of memory,’ were broken down, to the loss of the treasurer and the inconvenience of the inhabitants. Two aldermen, Thomas Christmasse and Richard Barker, ‘to the honour of God and of the Borough’, undertook to re-build the mills at their own charge, taking a twenty years’ lease from the bailiffs and commonalty at a rent of four marks (£2 13s. 4d.), payable at Lady Day and Michaelmas. Five years later these enterprising millers received a further

\* *Rot. Parl.*, i., 248.

† The very picturesque building (see opposite page), still used as a corn-mill, which now stands at Bourne Pond, probably on the site of the Abbot’s Mill, was re-built by a member of the Lucas family in 1574, as an inscription on it states. The mill is now owned by Lord Lucas, the tenant being Mr. Pulford.

concession, in consideration of their heavy outlay. A fresh agreement was drawn up leasing the mills for twenty years to Barker alone, subject to an annuity of £1 6s. 8d. reserved for payment of Thomas Christemasse's expenses (£17 16s., or two shillings a day) in going to Westminster as burgess in the parliaments of 1488 and 1489.\* The tenant is to keep the mills in substantial repair and deliver them, at the end of twenty years, in the same good order.

Tidal mills have existed for several centuries at Walton-on-the-Naze, Dovercourt, Thorrington, St. Osyth, Clacton, Battles



ST. JOHN'S ABBEY MILL, BOURNE POND.

*Photograph by Mr. W. Gill, Colchester.*

Bridge, Rochford, West Ham (Abbey Mills), and Barking.† They can be worked, of course, only during certain states of the tide, the practice being to start them at half-ebb. The Walton Mill still stands and is a very picturesque building, but

\* *The Red Paper Book of Colchester*. Benham: *Red Paper Book*, pp. 103, 115, 127-131.

† Queen Matilda, who built the stone bridge across the Lea at Stratford after she had been nearly drowned at the fordway there, gave a water-mill called Wiggon Mill to the Abbess of Barking on condition that she should keep the bridge in repair (Dugdale: *Monasticon*, i., 1846, pp. 437, and 440-441). The mill was afterwards transferred to the Abbey of Stratford Langthorne.

is used no longer for grinding flour. Most of the others named are still used as flour-mills.

At Purfleet, too, extensive mills of a somewhat similar kind existed till about 1760, when they were bought by Government and pulled down to make room for powder-magazines. Morant, writing in 1768, says\* :—

‘ At Purfleet lately stood very large corn-mills, the property of one Mr. Fawcet, which were an annoyance to the county, by letting in the tide from the river Thames into that watercourse [the Mardyke] which runs from Bulvan through Stifford. But that nuisance is now prevented by a strong sluice, which entirely keeps out the tide.’

For the last century and a half, the chief milling centres of the county have been Chelmsford, Witham, Maldon and Colchester. Cromwell, writing in 1819 of the three first-named towns and their vicinity, says† :—

‘ Upon the banks of the Chelmer and Blackwater are numerous large corn-mills, belonging to the Messrs. Marriage, Stammers, Dunkin, Dixon, and others. These, from the great improvements in their machinery, materially contribute to supply the London Market with flour.’

Of the families mentioned, those of Stammers and Dunkin have now disappeared. The Dixons have been for generations and still are in the occupation of Wickham Mills and other mills near Witham. Members of the Marriage family have been engaged in corn-milling in Essex continuously since the end of the seventeenth century, and are still active in it. They now own and work mills in Broomfield, Springfield, Moulsham, Chelmsford, Colchester, Bury St. Edmunds, and Felixstowe Dock. Other families (which have been engaged in milling in Essex for several generations) are the Ridleys of Chelmsford, the Archers of Walton and St. Osyth, the Clovers of Halstead and elsewhere, and the Garratts of Maldon. Piggots of Maldon, Stannards of Colchester, and Strutts of Chelmsford—all names once well-known in connection with Essex milling—have now disappeared. Strutts were very prominent as millers in the Chelmsford district from about the middle of the seventeenth century to nearly

\* *Hist. of Essex*, i., 93.

† *Excursions through Essex*, i., 12.

the end of the eighteenth, occupying Springfield, Moulsham and other mills.

Within the last thirty years or so the milling trade in Essex has been revolutionized by altered circumstances. Wheat-growing in England has diminished extraordinarily, and in no county so much as in Essex. The importation of foreign wheat renders it essential to erect mills near the ports of grain entry in order to avoid cost

of land-carriage. Two very extensive mills have recently been erected at the Docks on the Essex side of in Thames in London the connection with this development, and another on the Suffolk shore of Harwich Harbour. The introduction between 1875 and 1885 of the new system of grinding by steel rollers instead of by mill-stones has also altered the industry so completely that nearly all small inland mills, whether worked by wind or water, are now closed and falling into decay.

Forty years ago no fewer than twelve windmills were in regular work within the limits of the Borough of Colchester, but the last of these was taken down in 1907. Of the few which still remain about the county nearly all turn out only meal and feeding-stuffs for the use of farmers, and scarcely one now produces flour.

The returns of the census of 1901 show 774 persons as engaged in corn-milling in Essex.



THE LAST COLCHESTER WINDMILL.

*Photograph by Edw. May, Colchester.*

## NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

**Births and Deaths in Essex.** DR. THRESH furnishes the subjoined statistics from the annual report now in preparation for Essex :—

Estimated population of the administrative county, 1906 ..	971,611
Corrected death rate for 1906, per 1,000 population ..	12·2
Birth rate .. .. .	25·8
Infantile mortality .. .. .	115

**New Lake at Wanstead Park.** ON July 6 the Mayor of West Ham (Alderman L. W. Spratt) formally opened the new Heronry Lake at Wanstead Park, which covers an area of  $12\frac{3}{4}$  acres, and in the construction of which 2,022 men have been employed. Over 61,000 cubic yards of earth and 8,000 cubic yards of ballast have been excavated, and the water is from 3ft. 6in. to 4ft. deep. One island has been increased to three times its former size, and a new island has been formed, and is called Buxton Island. The cost of the enterprise has been £10,400. More than 200 of the men engaged had to be discharged, chiefly for lack of diligence, but on the whole the work has been very satisfactorily done.

**Churches and Chapels.** BUCKHURST HILL.—A stained glass east window to the memory of Mr. and Mrs. Nathanael Powell (see *E.R.*, vol. xv., p. 15) has been placed in the church, and was dedicated at a special service conducted by the Bishop of Barking on June 15. The window bears the following inscription :—

' To the glory of God and in loving memory of Nathanael Powell, J.P., D.L., and Agnes, his wife, who resided in this parish and worshipped in this church for many years, and are buried in this churchyard. This window is the gift of their children and relations, who loved and respected them. A.D. 1907. The memory of the just is blessed.'

**HARLOW.**—At the annual parish festival, held at St. Mary Magdalen Church on July 19th, the clock which has been placed in the church tower as a memorial to Mrs. Elwell, wife of the rector, Rev. Henry Elwell, M.A., was dedicated. The clock is the gift of their eight sons, seven of whom were present at the service, the remaining son being now in British Columbia. The service was conducted by the vicar, assisted by two of his sons, who are in orders. A brass, with the following inscription, has been affixed to the north wall of the nave :—

' To the greater glory of God, and in pious memory of Athela Eliza Elwell,

who died March 13th, 1906, the clock was placed in the tower of this church by her eight sons. Trinity, 1907. Henry Elwell, M.A., vicar.'

**LEYTON.**—Another district of this fast increasing eastern suburb has been formed into a parish, and assigned to the new church of St. Paul, which was consecrated by the Bishop of St. Albans on July 20th. When completed the church will consist of a nave with five bays, double transepts and chancel, altogether seating 800 persons. It is of red brick with stone facings, the interior faced with Bath stone. The cost (£5,200) has now been almost entirely raised, and the donations include nearly £1,000 from the Barclay family; the district which surrounds the church is known as the Barclay Estate. A handsome Jacobean pulpit, bearing the names of David Livingstone and three other missionaries, has been presented by Dr. and Mrs. Harford, of Livingstone College, Leyton, and a silver communion service is the gift of the family of Rev. F. H. Gillingham (the well-known cricketer), who was the first curate-in-charge. The patronage is vested at present in the Vicar of Leyton, Rev. J. T. Inskip, who has nominated Rev. W. Aden Wright, the present curate-in-charge, as first vicar.

**CLACTON.**—A new temporary church (St. James) was formally opened on July 25th, and dedicated by the Bishop of Colchester. It will provide much-needed accommodation for some of the increasing summer population of this popular watering-place, whose Sunday worship was before most inadequately provided for. The site has been given by the trustees of the late Charles Grey Round, and the building of the larger church will be duly proceeded with. Meanwhile the present building of wood and corrugated iron provides seating for 800 people, is lighted by electric lamps, and has a good two-manual and pedal organ.

**BRADWELL-ON-SEA.**—A window has been placed in the parish church here in memory of Mr. and Mrs. John Parker. It consists of two lights, the subject treated in one is Charity, in the other, Peace. The inscription runs;—'To the glory of God and with sweet affection for devoted parents, John and Matilda Parker, this window is placed at their request.'

**BASILDON.**—A richly-coloured memorial window of three lights has been placed in the church here, commemorative of

the wife of the rector, Rev. Herbert Carpenter, who lies buried near the south wall, in which this, the first stained glass window of the church, is erected. The subject of the pictured glass is Christ blessing little children, and the inscription is as follows:—

'Erected by relatives, parishioners, and friends, in memory of Elizabeth Jane, wife of the Rev. Herbert Carpenter, rector of this parish. Entered into rest, S. Mark's Day, 1907. 'He put his hands upon them and blessed them.' St. Mark x. 16.'

It was dedicated at a special service, by the Bishop of Barking, on September 9th.

WRITTLE.—An elaborate window has been placed in this church to the memory of Lieutenant John Francis Robert Vigne, of the 13th Hussars, who died at Secunderabad of typhoid fever on September 21, 1906, aged 24, elder son of Mr. and Mrs. Vigne, of Writtle Wick. The figures represented in the window are martial saints, St. George, St. Alban, Michael the Archangel, with the words of the first and last verses of Dr. Mansell's hymn, 'Fight the good fight with all thy might.'

WETHERSFIELD.—The bi-centenary of the Congregational Church in this village was celebrated on July 29th with a series of services, at which several prominent Nonconformists attended. The preacher at the afternoon service was the Rev. C. Sylvester Horne, of Whitefield's Tabernacle, London. In the evening a large gathering was presided over by Sir Albert Spicer, who gave a stirring address on the work of congregationalism—the basis of which was self-government—in the Essex villages. The constant drifting to the cities, he said, means congested life there, yet how grateful one is for the strength which goes from the village churches to build up the towns.

The founder of Nonconformity in Wethersfield was John Coale, one of the 2,000 clergymen ejected in 1662 from the Church of England by the Act of Uniformity. The existing chapel was built in 1707 and enlarged in 1822; its size and comparative emptiness now shows how this very rural district has become depopulated through the decay of agriculture and the industries dependent upon it. It is largely owing to the efforts of the pastor, Rev. B. W. Saunders, who has spent nearly forty years in the place, that the congregation has so well held together.

John Cole, or Coale, was a native of Ipswich, educated at Cambridge, where he was chosen Fellow of Jesus College. After several years at Burwell in Cambridgeshire he was nominated vicar of Wethersfield, and settled there in 1655. He refused to take the oath of Uniformity, and preached his last sermon in the church on August 11, 1662, to such a vast number of persons as had not been seen in it for twenty years. He continued expounding the scriptures, preaching and praying, with a small congregation that gathered in his own house, until excommunicated in February or March, 1663. Dr. Calamy says in his *Account (Nonconf. Mem. ii., 223)* that Cole's successor, Mr. Pelsant, had him so much in esteem that he read aloud the sentence in church with tears in his eyes, and said it was the bitterest pill he had ever taken. Cole did not sign the *Essex Testimony* in 1657, although requested to do so by his neighbour, Giles Firmin, of Shalford; nor would he take the Engagement Oath. At length one day he was apprehended while preaching in his own house, and sent prisoner to Colchester Castle, which was the county gaol. The gaoler, it is said, showed him favour, so he was removed to Chelmsford, and kept a prisoner for eight long years, until Charles II. issued his Indulgence in 1672, when, broken in health, though still in the prime of life, Cole was liberated. He only lived a few months longer, until April 11, 1673, when he died aged only fifty-two, and was buried in the churchyard at Wethersfield, where his tombstone may still be seen.

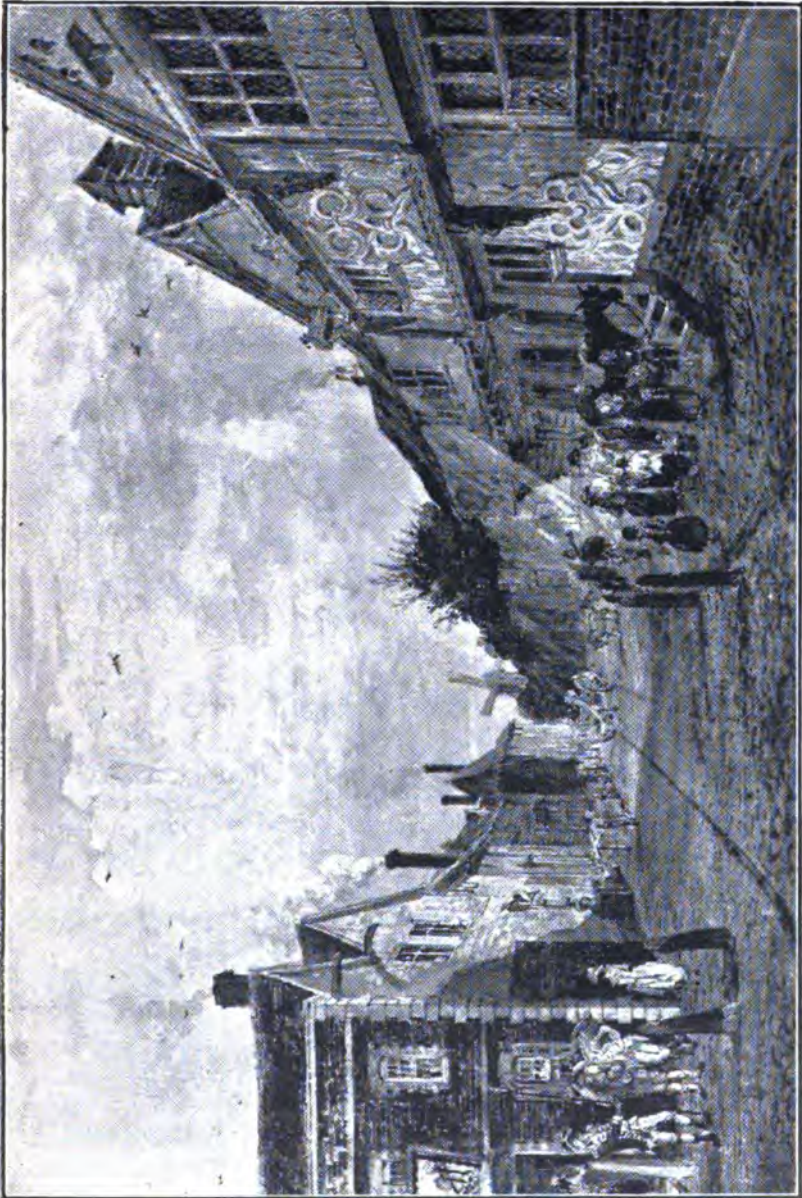
AYTHORPE RODING.—Two new windows which have been erected in this church were dedicated on 27th September, at a special service, by the Bishop of Barking. The east window is in memory of the Rev. J. A. Kershaw, rector of the parish from 1895 to 1906, and headmaster of Chelmsford Grammar School from 1877 to 1884 (see *E.R.*, xv., 95); it has been subscribed for by many of his former scholars, as well as his family and friends. It is a perpendicular window of three lights, and represents the Crucifixion, St. Mary (to whom the church is dedicated) and St. John. The west window, situated near the font and representing Christ blessing little children, is to the memory of Mr. Thomas Allaker Aldham, of Highams, Aythorpe Roding, who died in 1902, aged 82 years.



**St. John's Abbey  
Wall  
at Colchester.** DURING September the Colchester Town Council has completed the widening of the Mersea Road, Colchester, at the narrow portion leading into St. Botolph's Street.

It will be a relief to local antiquaries to know that this has been accomplished without interfering with the fine old buttressed wall of the grounds of St. John's Abbey, a wall dating probably from the 14th century. Some years ago it was actually suggested that this wall should be demolished to enable the roadway to be widened. This idea was fortunately vetoed without hesitation. The Colchester Town Council has now taken advantage of an opportunity to secure some modern property on the opposite side of the road, and by demolishing a portion of this, has effected a much needed improvement. By the courtesy of Mr. Henry Laver, F.S.A., we are able to reproduce an interesting picture of this roadway and the corner of St. Botolph's Street, Colchester, as they appeared about the year 1790. The interesting 15th century houses at the corner of the street, with their fine pargetting, were demolished about the year 1800. It will be seen that at the time of the picture there was an abundance of the renowned 'Colchester cobbles' in the highway; also that the gutter was then placed in the middle of the road. The windmill was removed at the time of the Crimean War, when the Camp was formed at Colchester. The illustration is taken from a water-colour drawing by James Dunthorne, junior, of Colchester (see *E.R.*, x., 27-35), which is now reproduced for the first time.

**Obituaries.** Major GEORGE EDWARD BANES, who represented South West Ham in Parliament for nearly twenty years, died at his residence, the Red House, Upton, on July 16, in his 79th year. He was eldest son of Mr. George Dann Banes, surveyor of iron shipbuilding to the Admiralty, and was born on February 2, 1828, educated at Chatham and Rochester High School. He served his apprenticeship with the London Dock Company, and became in turn a superintendent with the Victoria Dock Company, the General Steam Navigation Company, and general manager to the Metropolitan Railway Warehouses Company. Later he entered business as a wharfinger and bonded warehouse-keeper at the Colonial Wharves, Mark Lane.



“BOTTOLPH STREET, COLCHESTER, ESSEX.”  
*From a water-colour drawing by James Douthorne, jun., of Colchester, circa 1790.*

He had a long connection with South West Ham, and was founder of the 3rd Essex Artillery Volunteer Corps from which he retired with the rank of Major in 1876. He was a Justice of the Peace, a member of the School Board, and one of the first aldermen of the borough. A liberal-minded Conservative, he was strongly in favour of local self-government for all the countries in the Union; at the same time he was thoroughly at home with, and interested in the lot of the labouring classes in the large constituency he represented; a believer in trades unions carried on in a just and in a proper manner, and a sturdy cricketer. Returned to Westminster in 1886, he was defeated at the poll by Mr. Keir Hardie in 1892, but was again sent to Parliament in 1895, and in 1900 defeated Mr. Will Thorne. He retired in 1906, on account of failing health. Major Banes married in 1850, Mary Ann, daughter of Mr. Mathew Place, of Bromham, Beds., who survives him, in her 89th year, with a son. He was buried in the family vault in West Ham Cemetery on July 22, after a service in the parish church.

---

## NOTES AND QUERIES.

**A Yeoman's Commonplace Book** (see *E.R.*, vol. xvi., p. 78, April, 1907).—In another MS. belonging to the same collection are some notes of sermons and the weather, with extracts from poets and writers, all in copy-book hand, or printing, commenced by Nathaniel Stone on October 19, 1770, and continued by him up to 1774. The preachers whose texts are noted are John Smythies, of Fingringhoe, and Mr. Salter, of East Donyland, and a stranger, Mr. Mustard; Mr. Stevenson, Mr. Granger at Tolleshunt D'Arcy, Mr. Maxey at Tollesbury, Mr. Corsellis, Mr. Bowrey, Mr. Gillson, Mr. Fowler, who preached at the funeral of Solomon Lappage at Wivenhoe Church, and Mr. Love. A note in another writing says Nathaniel Stone's funeral sermon was preached by Mr. Love on Sunday, Oct. 24, 1784, at Fingringhoe Church. On the last page of this book Mr. Benjamin Page commenced somewhat tentatively in January, 1782, to enter a sort of diary with

his farm account; he was then encouraged to embark upon the much larger commonplace book, extracts of which Mr. Shenstone gave us in such interesting form. EDITORS.

**Ship-Building in Essex** (*E.R.*, xvi., 22).—In this connection the following papers are of interest: (1) a warrant to make a report of the shipping of Maldon in 1623-4, and (2) the report then presented:—

(1) The Burrow towne of Maldon: Warrant to the Constables of St. Mary's parish, and to the other Constables of Maldon.

From Richard Pulley, gentleman, Deputy Vice-Admirall of the County of Essex, we have letters dated 8th March:—

These are to require yow to make diligent enquiry what shippes, barks, crayers, or hoyes, are belonging to the port of Maldon, and of the several burthens of them, and with what ordynance fitted and furnished; and likewise to take a true survey and notice of all maryners and seafaring-men dwelling within the burrow from 16 yeres of age to 60.

Bring a written certificate to the Moot-hall on Thursday 11th of this month, at 9 a.m.

10th March, 1623—Thomas Hutt }  
Jeremy Pratt } Bayliffs.

Bring in your certificate the company of every vessell together.

(2) The 11 of March 1623: A Note of all the vessells of shipping, mariners and sea-faring men belonging to the burrow of Maldon.

#### SHIPPING.

One hoy, called *the Dyamund*, burthen between 30 and 40 tuns, bownd for London. In her, Richard Priestman, seafaring-man, of age about 26; Robert Hawle, about 25; one boy, about 16.

One hoy, *the Marie and John*, about 30 tun, at London. In her, Richard Peacock, seafaring-man, age about 48; Peter Friend, age about 45; Richard Spigurnell, a boy, aged about 16.

One hoy, called *the Fortune*, about 33 tun, bound for London. In it, Richard Tabor, seafaring man, betwixt 30 and 40 yeres; James Letton, of age betwixt 40 and 50; a boy about the age of 18 yeres.

One hoy, called *the Thomas*, about 20 tun. In it, John Smith, seafaring-man, age about 40; William Hubbard, of age about 40.

One hoy, called *'the Blessing*, burthen 54 tun. In it, John Medcalfe, seafaring-man, age about 53; . . . Johnson, age about 28; two boyes, ech under 14 yeres.

#### [MEN.]

EDWARD HARE, seafaring-man, dwelling here, age about 34, going to Newcastle.

PHILIP EURES, seafaring-man, dwelling here, age about 53, going to Newcastle.

EDWARD LEE, mariner, dwelling here, age about 30; now at Newcastle.

**Oatmeal Making.**—In early College accounts at Oxford the 'oat-meal score' is one of the chief items in the quarterly charges. The joint of meat was first parboiled. Then it was roasted, and slices served on bread on wooden trenchers. The broth was made into soup by being thickened with oatmeal. One day's proceedings in the Clerk of the Markets' court at Maldon is suggestive of the extent of the industry in Essex and its diffusion over the county. On November 16, 1575, no less than eight oatmeal-makers were fined for selling with short measures in Maldon market, viz., William Bradbelt and Thomas Smyth, both of Hatfield Peverel; Thomas Hopkins and Thomas Flixman, both of Writtle; Thomas Cottonne, of Keveldonne (Kelvedon); Robert Ellies, of Nottlie; John Charter, of Wittham; and . . . Clarck, of Braxted.—ANDREW CLARK, LL.D., Great Leighs.

**Mersea Island.**—I find references in the *S. P. Dom.*, 1653, etc., to grants of money for repair of a fort on this island, and information from Captain William Burrell, governor of the Island, that a house for the gunners and their assistants is urgently required, the house to be built of timber, estimated cost £100. The poor inhabitants adjacent have, he says, contributed help in the shape of turf for repairing and upholding the fort for the last four years. An order in Council for the advance of £60 was made. Can any one say where the fort was situated, and if any traces of it remain? In 1655 Capt. Burrell has officers and 57 soldiers there.

In April 1654, there is also a petition from Art. Ockley, of West Mersea, a preacher appointed by Capt. Burrell two years before, that he may be settled in his place, Mr. Woolace, the old incumbent being still alive, but the parish, which is very unhealthy, has been left six or seven years without a minister. A request of 14 parishioners and John Smith, churchwarden, that he may be confirmed their minister, is appended.—C.F.S.

**Inventories of Goods.**—The following lists seem of considerable interest, referring as they do to cheesemaking, a long extinct industry in Essex.—R. H. BROWN, Stapleford Abbots.

THE TRUE INVINTORI OF THOS. EDWARDS  
OF ——— ? IN THE COUNTIE OF ESSEX YEOMAN DESEED  
IN YEARE OF THE LORD 1617

## PRISERS OF THE INVENTORY

JOHN GOLDINHAM  
GEORGE SARLES.

## IN THE HALL.

Imprimis, 3 Tables, 7 Stooles .. .. .	xx <sup>a</sup> .
Item, 1 payer of Bellowes .. .. .	vj <sup>d</sup> .
Item, a form—a bench .. .. .	v <sup>a</sup> .
Item, a cubbert .. .. .	xviiij <sup>a</sup> .
Item, 2 chayers, 1 chest .. .. .	vj <sup>a</sup> . viij <sup>d</sup> .
Item, vj. cushions, 3 triple (?) potes, 8 spoones.. .. .	v <sup>a</sup> .
Item, 3 stone juges, 1 bible .. .. .	viiij <sup>a</sup> .
Item, 2 cobioerns, 1 payer of tonges, 1 spit, 1 griddion, 1 dripping pan .. .. .	vj <sup>a</sup> . ij <sup>d</sup> .

## IN THE PALLOR

Item, 2 fether beds and 2 bidstedels, 2 coverlets, 2 bouldsters, 1 trundle bed .. .. .	vj <sup>ll</sup> . vj <sup>a</sup> . o.
Item, 1 chest, 2 boxes, 1 little table, 1 wicker chaier, 1 ciperus huch .. .. .	xxv <sup>a</sup> .
Item, 1 hedgeger, 1 [Koliaer], 1 gun, 1 dage-sword, 2 daggers .. .. .	xxvij <sup>a</sup> . vj <sup>d</sup> .
Item, 1 bed pan, 1 hanger .. .. .	vj <sup>a</sup> . vj <sup>d</sup> .
Item, 2 andierns, 3 spittes, 1 bill .. .. .	viiij <sup>a</sup> .

## IN THE KITCIN.

Item, one hanged pann.. .. .	x <sup>a</sup> .
Item, 1 dozen of red trenchers .. .. .	xxiiij <sup>a</sup> .
Item, 1 payer of quarnes and other trenchers, 2 gallipottes ix <sup>a</sup> . viij <sup>d</sup> .	
Item, 1 chest, 1 chaphir, 1 stoole, 3 payles, 1 (crade), 1 whele, 1 firkin, 1 lader, 1 shovle, 1 mattock .. .. .	viiij <sup>a</sup> . vj <sup>d</sup> .
Item, vj. kettles, 4 brase pottes, 1 skilit, 1 scomer, 4 candle- sticks, 1 basen, 1 quart pot .. .. .	4 <sup>ll</sup> . x <sup>a</sup> . o.
Item, 1 mortar, 1 chafendich, a payer of scollis.. .. .	iiij <sup>a</sup> . d.
Item, forty peeces of pouter .. .. .	iiij <sup>ll</sup> . a.
Item, a cobbart, 1 pillion .. .. .	viiij <sup>a</sup> .

## IN THE BUTRIE.

Item, 2 crayes, 1 beare stalle, 1 boul, 1 keeler, 1 planke [2 cup dish] .. .. .	vj <sup>a</sup> . viij <sup>d</sup> .
--	---------------------------------------

## IN THE PARLOR CHAMBER.

Item, iiij. fether beds, 1 bed stedle, 2 blankets, 2 coverleds, 1 blanket, 2 trundle beds .. .. .	4 <sup>ll</sup> .
Item, 1 countertable, 1 long table, 1 chest, 1 trunck, 1 raper, 2 bowes, 1 quiver .. .. .	xxvii <sup>a</sup> .

## IN THE HALL CHAMBER AND BRUTRIE CHAMBER.

Item, 4 sem of otes .. .. .	..	xxxv <sup>ij</sup>
Item, 50 cheses, 2 firkins of butter [ ] .. ..	..	vii <sup>l</sup> x <sup>a</sup>
Item, sid saddle, vj. wedges, 3 ould iron .. ..	..	xvii <sup>ij</sup> vj <sup>d</sup>
Item, 2 chesemotes .. .. .	..	x <sup>d</sup> .
Item, 1 sem of rie, 1 saw, 1 pann, 1 com of barley .. ..	..	xxx <sup>a</sup> .
Item, x. payer of sheets [ ], pillowbers, 3 bord clothes, 1 dozen of napkins, vj. towells.. ..	..	vii <sup>l</sup> .
Item, his clothes, 1 clock, and vj <sup>a</sup> in his porse .. ..	..	3 <sup>li</sup> .

## ABROD AND THK BARNE.

Item, 1 cart, 1 tumbrell [ ], and drautties .. ..	..	3 <sup>li</sup> .
Item, 1 plow, 1 payer of harrowes .. ..	..	xvj <sup>a</sup> .
In the barn, corn, oates, rye .. ..	..	xiiij <sup>li</sup> .
Item, the hay .. ..	..	vij <sup>li</sup> .
Item, 1 fann, 1 sackk, 1 half-bushell, 1 rak .. ..	..	4 <sup>a</sup> .
Item, 2 ladders, 1 pitchfork .. ..	..	4 <sup>a</sup> .
Item, his foulls .. ..	..	viiij <sup>a</sup> .
Item, 2 hogs and 5 store pigs .. ..	..	xxx <sup>a</sup> .
Item, corn on the ground, 7 akers of rye .. ..	..	xli <sup>l</sup> x <sup>a</sup> .
Item, viij. cowes, 1 heiyfer .. ..	..	xxv <sup>ij</sup> li.
Item, 3 calves, 3 foales .. ..	..	5 <sup>li</sup> .
Item, 3 mares, 1 nagg .. ..	..	xli <sup>l</sup> x <sup>a</sup> .
Item, xxvij. ewes, 1 ram .. ..	..	xiiij <sup>li</sup> .
Item, harnes for 4 horse.. ..	..	x <sup>a</sup> .

The sum 10038<sup>li</sup>. [138] 4<sup>a</sup> 2<sup>d</sup>.

Exhibited at Colchester, 2 Jany., 1617,

ED. TILLINGHAM, Depty. Regr.

A TRUE INVENTORIE OF ALL THE GOODES OF WILLIAM  
TOLLER OF ARDLEYE LATTE DECEST, 1620.

In primes his purs and waringe parell. .. ..	..	ij <sup>li</sup>
Item in the parller 3 huches a liverie tabbell and a form prifed at .. ..	..	x <sup>a</sup> .
Item in the Halle on Coubbard on tabbel on form iii. chayers on cobiron, tramell on payer of tonges & a firpan .. ..	..	xx <sup>a</sup> .
Item in the hall chamber to bedes furnished on huch on bedsteddle .. ..	..	ij <sup>li</sup> x <sup>a</sup> .
In the milcke howes for ches and butter .. ..	..	ij <sup>li</sup> x <sup>a</sup> .
mor on chespres a churne a coull and owther vesselles .. ..	..	x <sup>a</sup> .
Item on bras pote to settells a morter on skellete .. ..	..	xv <sup>a</sup> .
Item for peutter priced .. ..	..	v <sup>a</sup> .
Item a payer of Quarnes a kneedinge trof and shellves .. ..	..	x <sup>a</sup> .
Item in the baron, for basly and for ooattes prifed mor for hay .. ..	..	ii. x <sup>a</sup> .
Item 1 stor and a cowbullocke .. ..	..	ij <sup>li</sup> .
mor for iij cowes .. ..	..	ij <sup>li</sup> x <sup>a</sup> .
mor to bullocks to <i>caulleves</i> .. ..	..	v <sup>li</sup> .
	..	ij <sup>li</sup> .

Item a mare and a cowelte .. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	ij <sup>ll</sup> vj <sup>a</sup> viij <sup>d</sup> .
Item for shepe and lambes .. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	vij <sup>ll</sup> .
Item for hogges .. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	iiij <sup>ll</sup> .
Item for gesse, hines, and dux .. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	x <sup>a</sup> .
Item a fan, working tobbes and all other lumber prised .. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	.. .. .	x <sup>a</sup> .

By us John Nun, Francis Toller, Richard Bregman

3viii<sup>ll</sup>. xvi<sup>a</sup>. viii<sup>d</sup>.

**Waltham Abbey.**—The following list of the succession of Chief Officers of the Royal Gunpowder Factory, Waltham Abbey, has been kindly forwarded me by the present superintendent, Major Sir F. L. Nathan, R.A., and seems not without interest to readers of the *Essex Review*, dating back as it does for 120 years.—MILLER CHRISTY, Chignal.

Name.	Designation.	Period as Chief Officer.	
		From.	To.
Mr. JAMES WRIGHT (1) .....	Storekeeper .....	1787	1805
Mr. H. S. MATTHEWS .....	Storekeeper .....	6-4-1805	1818
Mr. E. MIDDLETON .....	Storekeeper .....	20-1-1818	17-6*-1825
Mr. C. WILKS .....	Storekeeper .....	29-6-1825	14-10-1831
Mr. JAMES WRIGHT (2) .....	Deputy Storekeeper .....	15-10-1831	1832
Lieut.-Colonel C. T. MOODY, C.R.E. ...	"In charge of the Royal Gunpowder Manufactory"	13-10-1832	1-7-1840
Lieut.-Colonel C. T. MOODY, C.R.E. ...	Inspector of Gunpowder ...	2-7-1840	1845
Captain A. T. TULLOCH, R.A. ....	Inspector of Gunpowder ...	27-11-1845	6-1852
Major C. C. DICKSON, R.A. ....	Inspector of Gunpowder ...	6-1852	2-1854
Captain W. HENDERSON, R.A. ....	Acting Inspector of Gunpowder .....	2-1854	3-1854
Colonel W. H. ASKWITH, R.A. ....	Acting Inspector of Gunpowder .....	4-1854	1855
Colonel W. H. ASKWITH, R.A. ....	Superintendent .....	18-8-1855	26-2-1868
Colonel C. W. YOUNGHUSBAND, R.A. ...	Superintendent .....	27-2-1868	31-3-1875
Lieut.-Colonel YOUNG, R.A. ....	Superintendent .....	1-4-1875	25-5*-1875
Captain MORGAN, R.A. ....	Acting Superintendent.....	26-5-1875	28-6-1875
Colonel R. J. HAY .....	Superintendent .....	29-6-1875	30-6-1880
Colonel C. B. BRACKENBURY, R.A. ....	Superintendent .....	1-7-1880	30-8-1885
Major-General W. H. NOBLE.....	Superintendent .....	1-7-1885	17-5*-1892
Major F. W. J. BARKER, R.A. ....	Acting Superintendent.....	1-4*-1892	30-9-1892
Lieut.-Colonel W. McCLINTOCK, R.A. ....	Superintendent .....	1-10-1892	13-7-1894
Major F. L. NATHAN, R.A. ....	Acting Superintendent.....	31-5-1894	26-7-1894
Colonel J. B. ORMSBY .....	Superintendent .....	27-7-1894	20-1-1900
Major Sir F. L. NATHAN, R.A. ....	Superintendent .....	21-1-1900	

\*Date of Death.

†Appointed during General Noble's illness.

**Willow Trees in Essex.**—The following note from the *Scotsman* of September 7 has been forwarded us by a reader, and seems of considerable interest to our land-owners and farmers. The partiality of the tree is still further shown, we believe, in the county itself, where it most inhabits and thrives best in the north-western districts, extending south into the Roothings and the Epping and Ongar Hundred.—Eds.

‘The question as to the species or variety of willow tree best adapted for the manufacture of cricket bats, has been engaging



the attention of the authorities of Kew Gardens. It seems that the supplies of the best 'bat willow' have lately become seriously limited, and that prices have risen in proportion. At a sale of willow trees on Sir Walter Gilbey's estate at Sawbridgeworth in February of last year, the best 'bat willow' realised prices estimated to be equivalent to about seven shillings per cubic foot, and recently an offer of £1,500 for the best hundred willows on an estate in Essex, was declined. These prices show that there is no timber so profitable at the present time as that of the cricket 'bat willow,' but it must be the true species, as there are several kinds of willows. This point has always been obscure, and it is with a view to helping the planter to recognise the willow best suited for cricket bats, and to avoid the unsuitable ones, that the matter is now being taken up by the Kew authorities. Mr. W. J. Bean, a tree expert, of Kew Gardens, in a paper on the subject in the *Kew Bulletin*, states that he has been able to identify the willow selected as the very best one for bat-making as a pyramidal form of a variety of *salix alba*. According to Mr. John Shaw, of Nottingham, this particular species is only to be found at the present time in the counties of Essex, Hertford, and Suffolk. There are, however, two fine specimens of this tree to be seen on the banks of the lake in Kew Gardens. Mr. Bean remarks on the extraordinary fact that of all the hundreds of timbers now available from the tropical and temperate parts of the globe, the only tree yet known to produce a timber of the right quality for cricket bats is found in a few counties in England.'

**Waltham Abbey.**—This church, so interesting from its associations with English history, has been lately somewhat restored or repaired. Two years or more ago the tower was found to be in an unsafe condition, and heavy stones not unfrequently fell from the top. Also some of the nave piers were not quite so secure as was consistent with safety. To prevent injury to persons entering the church and churchyard by the tower, wooden structures were erected as a shelter, which did not add any grace to the old building. The tower, which was erected when the choir was pulled down at the surrender of the monastery, was generally considered to be an excrescence, hiding what might have been, and was intended to be, an elegant west

end. Careful examination recently, however, showed that the nave had a decided thrust to the west, and that really the tower, acting as a great buttress, had saved the building from collapse. Still, there was considerable danger of part of the roof falling in. The vicar, churchwardens and friends came to the rescue, and the repairs have now been done in such a way that everyone



WALTHAM ABBEY CHURCH.

interested in the preservation of this church as a great historic monument will be pleased with the result. It is understood that about two thousand pounds were raised and spent on this work. The photograph accompanying this note will show the alterations made in the turret of the tower, which is there represented in its restored state. I have another photograph which shows the awning erected for protection; the parapet of the tower was then without castellation—A. P. WIRE, Leytonstone.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS, &c.

*Our Fire Brigade from 1815 to 1907.* By S. Deards. Harlow, June, 1907. Pp. 16, illustrated. Price 6d.

This capital little pamphlet tells the story of the Harlow Fire Brigade for over ninety years, and it is a story well worth the telling. The author, Mr. Sam. Deards, has been captain of the brigade for more than 35 years. He it was who, in 1878, energetically enlisted the sympathies of Mr. Perry Watlington,



HARLOW FIRE BRIGADE.

Sir H. J. Selwin Ibbetson (as Lord Rookwood then was), Mr. Loftus W. Arkwright, and many others, who generously subscribed the sum of £278 to purchase a new fire engine. Since that time, up to August 1906, a total of 53 fires have been attended, particulars of which are set out in the pamphlet. The brigade now numbers fifteen members, and does duty for twelve parishes in and around Harlow, rendering assistance also to Sawbridge-worth when required. It recently won the challenge shield given to Essex Fire Brigades by Sir Thomas Dewar, and on June 26 last, nine long service medals from the National Fire

Brigades Union of the United Kingdom were presented to members, who have passed from 15 to 35 years each in the service of the corps. It is curious that precisely as the brigade was preparing on the night of August 10 last, with decorated engine and gay illuminations, to celebrate their victory of the shield, they



THE CHAMPION SHIELD.

received a call to a fire at Mark Hall. They at once started off at top speed, divesting the engine of decorations and trappings as they went, and gave valuable help in extinguishing the fire. Meanwhile the waiting crowds learned slowly that duty's call had postponed the gay procession until the following Saturday.

Through the kindness of Mr. Deards and the proprietors of *Fire and Water*, we are enabled to reproduce an illustration which appeared in that paper for September last.

Mr. A. P. Wire, of the Harrow Green School, Leytonstone, has issued in *The Practical Teacher* for August, 1907 (Nelson and Sons), some interesting autobiographical notes on his teaching career. Educated at the Royal Grammar School, Colchester he became in 1856 a pupil teacher in St. Mary's National School there, obtained three years later a Queen's Scholarship at Battersea, and a first class certificate in 1861, since which time he has been occupied in teaching, first in rural and later in suburban districts in the county. The article offers some interesting reminiscences of former educational methods, kicking of shins by the 'order monitor,' to wit; and of old schools in comparison with modern palatial school buildings, the only fault of which he finds is height, compelling little unformed children to climb long staircases several times a day.

*Tritton, the Place and the Family.* By J. HERBERT TRITTON, London, ARTHUR L. HUMPHREYS, 187, Piccadilly, 1907. 4to., pp. xiv., 331. Seventeen illustrations and a folding chart in pocket. Only 150 copies printed. A few for sale at a guinea.

In this very beautiful volume, Mr. Tritton has embodied the results of almost life-long labours upon the history of his family and its origin. During the leisure of an active life he has been accumulating at intervals a large mass of information, from which he has now made a judicious selection in the form of a book which he piously hopes will enable his successors to form some idea of 'who their forefathers were, how they obtained their name and in a measure how they lived.'

We may say at once that the narrative is and will be highly interesting to many who do not and have not borne the name of Tritton, and who are, therefore, excluded from his special dedication. We may pass over the early chapters in which Mr. Tritton attempts to trace the connection between the locality whence his family probably emanated—Treeton in Yorkshire, with the Treton, Teyton or Tretoun family of Kent, who consistently appeared in that county, and in few other parts

of England, from about 1326. A district not more than 20 miles across, near Ashford, covers the homes of the sturdy Tritton yeomen, cordwainers and farmers (it is said the earliest cherry orchard was on a Tritton farm near Great Chart). The villages of Lenham and Kennington, Charing, Throwleigh and Ospringe all had many inhabitants of the name; their ancient residence—once Tritton's Corner—at Lenham has in one of its gable ends the date 1603. About 1660, John Tritton and his son Robert, joined the Quakers whom Fox's preaching in Kent had gathered together. He gave a piece of his land in Kennington for a burial ground for the new sect, and he himself was the first to be laid in it in 1676. For many generations the family remained faithful to the Foxian tradition. From yeoman farmers they became brewers, and about 1755, by the marriage of Thomas Tritton with Henton Brown, the daughter of the Quaker banker and author, of Clapham Common and Lombard Street, began the long connection which the Trittons have held (and still hold) with banking. One of the sons of this marriage joined his grandfather's bank of Brown and Collinson, but by its failure in 1782, and his marriage with Mary, daughter of John Barclay, removed actually next door and was admitted to partnership in the substantial banking firm of Barclay, Bevan and Tritton. The young couple began their simple housekeeping over the bank in Lombard Street; happily enough, one may suppose, for Mary, on hearing of John's first failure and new start in life, is reported to have said she would rather 'lean on John Henton's arm than ride in a coach-and-four.' Their descendant adds that her belief in her husband was well-founded, for she did both! The young couple paid an annual visit to the wife's brother-in-law, Osgood Hanbury, of Holfield Grange, Coggeshall, who died a worthy quaker and lies buried in the Friends' burial ground there. Under his advice, in 1812, estates including Lyons Hall, Great Leighs, were bought in Essex, and the connection with Kent was exchanged for one with our county. This was not the first link between Essex and the Trittons, for a generation or two before, Rebecca Tritton had married Richard Courthope Sims, M.D., of Dunmow, and her mother and aunt, two widows, sisters, who, curiously enough, had married (as second wife) her father and half-brother, also retired from Kent to end their days there. Dr. Sims, son of the R. C. Sims

above-mentioned and Rebecca Tritton, became a celebrated doctor, a Fellow of the Royal Society and of the Linnean Society, and was appointed physician to the Princess Charlotte, whose early death cut short the hopes of the nation and diverted the succession to the Duke of Kent's daughter, Queen Victoria. Sims was John Henton Tritton's medical adviser, and received a handsome annual honorarium, with an extra £5 5s. od. for inoculating John Tritton, aged 3, against small-pox, in 1791.

Another glimpse of Essex affairs comes in the sprightly letters of Mrs. John Henton Tritton to her cousin, Lucy Galton, where, describing a driving tour they took in an open carriage in August 1783, after the birth of their eldest son, she says they visited Dunmow Priory, but could not qualify for the Flicht because they had not been married a year and a day; also Harwich, 'for Mr. Tritton to take a few dips in salt water.' Their grandson was Joseph Tritton, the first member of the family who resided much at Lyon's Hall, then an old-fashioned farm-house which has been since enlarged by his son, the author of the book before us. Of a deeply religious nature, Joseph Tritton inaugurated a series of ministrations among the cottagers and others there, and finally built by the roadside a little unsectarian meeting-house, where he himself frequently uttered highly polished addresses clothed with such a beauty and tenderness that 'they fell like music from his lips.' He was a devout Churchman, but in this ministry we see something of the working in him of the old quaker spirit of his ancestors. He was buried at Great Leighs in May 1887.

A word of the highest praise must be given to the very beautiful etchings and photogravures which illustrate the book. The frontispiece is from Herkomer's portrait of the author, Mr. J. Herbert Tritton, presented by the London Clearing Bankers on his retirement as hon. secretary in August 1905. Lawrence's portrait of George Tritton is also reproduced, and some pencil sketches of other members of the family. The type and get-up of the volume, which is printed on hand-made paper, is the best that could be devised. The linen cover is obviously intended to be replaced with something heavier, according to the fancy of the purchaser.

All lovers of our county, as well as people who are Essex born, will perhaps thank us for reproducing a portion of a thoroughly appreciative and enlightened article on Essex which appeared in the *Spectator* of September 28. It is ostensibly a review of Mr. Reginald A. Beckett's delightful book, *Romantic Essex*, which Messrs. Dent are now issuing in a cheaper form (2s. nett). The writer of the article begins by setting forth the unapproachable character of our Eastern terminus:—'You must suffer to reach Essex. But then the other more important question has to be faced: Is it worth suffering for? The answer to this is almost always "No." . . . We are tempted to celebrate the attractions of Essex and guarantee that they are worth suffering for by the republication in cheap form of a book called *Romantic Essex*.' Then the writer proceeds to discourse on Essex buildings in a way that shows he has the eye both of an artist and an antiquary.

Churches and houses alike were built with the materials which were ready to hand. There is much timber in the building, because Essex has few quarries. In hundreds of churches, too, you may see the relics of the Roman occupation. The Roman bricks are worked into the lower parts of the walls; flint commonly comes above the brick, and stout timbers are used not only for the roof but in the whole construction. Sometimes the spire is made entirely of wood, and we agree with Mr. Beckett that there is something beautiful and touching in the exaltation to this use of the characteristic material of the county. We might add to what he says that no wood was used so often in building as chestnut. When a beam was wanted for a house, or a roof for a church, chestnut was the wood, no doubt because of the belief that no insect takes kindly to it. The great building age of what is now rural Essex must have come immediately after the suppression of the monasteries, and you can hardly go into an Essex village without finding a Tudor house. If it be a manor-house, it may have a moat or an old monkish fishpond; and perhaps the pigeon tower, which dates from the times when the lord of the manor had his rights of pigeonry, is still standing. The old inns have a spaciousness which informs you of the well-being of agricultural Essex when they were built. Where the land is good there the inns are good also; where the land is poor the inns are built on niggard lines.

To this subject he returns at the end of his article, after a discussion upon the forests and hills of Essex. We are tempted to quote at length, because it is seldom that so intelligent an appreciation of our attractions (selfishly we long to hug them to ourselves, and suffer them never to become popularised and spoiled) issues from the London press. No exception can be taken to anything in the article, save the 'u' in Gestingthorpe, which we gladly grant for the sake of the picturesque, and



the windmills in 'every' Roding village, proved in our present issue to be now unfortunately things of the past. The article concludes with the following passage.

If, as has been said, there are no great buildings in Essex, there is still no town in England with so perfect a Roman wall as that at Colchester. . . . Roman, Norman, and Dane can be traced very easily by the names they have left in Essex even where they cannot be traced by their fortifications. The names are extraordinarily attractive. Consider the Saxon Guestingthorpe, the Norman Layer de la Haye or Tolleshunt D'Arcy, the Danish Thorpe-le-Soken, and then such odd names as Wendens Ambo and Shellow Bowells.

As an example of the out-of-the-worldness of some Essex villages take the piece of country, about twelve miles long, between Ongar and Dunmow. Here are three groups of villages known as the Rodings, the Lavers, and the Easters. It is a cornland traversed by grassy lanes, and no railway is near it. Every village has its windmill near the church. A village sometimes consists simply of church, windmill, and a farm with two or three cottages. You can walk through the lanes for miles without seeing a human being. If there are no great houses, there are some 'moated granges,' unrepaired perhaps, but at least not restored. The remoteness of a country—in the moral sense, not in the matter of measured miles—may be tested by the number of carriers who take goods and persons from village to village. Essex, then, is indeed 'remote,' for few counties have so many of those once familiar lumbering and creaking vans. Mr. Beckett says less than we should like about the coast of Essex. It is a frequent remark that the coast is 'nothing but mud.' But to every one who loves water a broken coast is a beautiful coast. The Essex coast is almost as broken as the West Coast of Scotland. The Crouch, the Blackwater, the Colne, the Stour, break it up with broad estuaries, and detach great fragments from the mainland which are islands when the tide is high. Mud is an ugly word, but the mud of Essex, with its gleaming and varied lights, particularly at sunset, is not ugly at all. There are even some people who prefer low-tide to high-tide. Then the oyster smacks loll idly on their sides, and the great glistening spaces are flecked with white gulls screaming and feeding. Plovers and curlews with their savage cries, and redshanks with their whistling note, are everywhere on the marshes and saltings. The sheep on these salt places would fetch a high price as 'pré-salé' in France; but in this simple county of Essex no one has studied his palate enough to know that a sheep fed on salt food is a particular delicacy, and it goes at the same price as its unsalted fellows. In every creek and estuary you see the brown sails of the Thames barges. These hug the coast inside the great sandbanks, while the steamers smudge the horizon with their smoke much further out to sea. The barges are one of the few remaining schools of sailing; but they are not better than the oyster-smacks and the 'sto-boats' which catch sprats. The men who navigate the 'Swins,' with their strong tides and their fatal shoals, are quick, resourceful, and daring, or they perish. When a new British yacht challenges for the America Cup, she will go to Brightlingsea for her crew. No; Essex is not dull, nor flat, nor ugly; it has a mellow sweetness of its own, a quaint diversity, and a scarcely injured aspect of antiquity, as Constable and William Morris very well knew.

THE  
ESSEX REVIEW :

AN ILLUSTRATED QUARTERLY RECORD  
OF EVERYTHING OF PERMANENT INTEREST  
IN THE COUNTY.

EDITED BY  
EDWARD A. FITCH, F.L.S.,  
AND  
MISS C. FELL SMITH.

VOLUME XVII.

*"He who recalls into existence that which has vanished enjoys a bliss like  
that of creating."*—NIEBUHR.

COLCHESTER :  
BENHAM & CO.

LONDON :  
SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, HAMILTON, KENT & Co., LTD.

1908.



# INDEX TO VOLUME XVII.

\* \* *Entries in Italics refer to Notices of Books.*

- Althams of Mark Hall in the Seventeenth Century, Some, by a Descendant, 74, 134  
 Althorne, 42  
 Beacons in Essex, 221  
 Bell, H. Soady, Family of Bell of Essex, by, 15  
 Bell of Essex, The Family of, by H. Soady Bell, 15  
 Bewers, W., Pamphlet by, 226  
 Blackmore Church, 40  
 Boreham, New Hall, 57, 121, 224  
 Bourke, Mrs. Hubert, An Old Essex Manor House, by, 211  
 Bowers Gifford, 170  
 Bow, March of the Cavaliers from, to Stratford, by G. H. Warlow, 136  
 Bradhurst, Miss Christine M. G., Verses by, 179  
 Bradhurst, Mrs., Shells in our Rivers and Ditches, by, 87  
 Browne, R. H., note by, 48  
 Cavaliers, The March of the, from Bow to Colchester, by G. H. Warlow, 186  
 Centenarian, A Reputed, 47  
 Chaseway, 174  
 Chelmsford and Bacon, 117; Chapel Jubilee, 170; Chapel Centenary, 225  
 Christy, Miller, Some Obsolete Farm Implements, by, 21  
 Clark, Rev. Andrew, LL.D., Hadleigh Rectory, by, 11; Great Leighs Registers, by, 91; Essex Territorial Force in 1608, 98; Essex Woollen Manufactures, 203; Purveyance in Essex, 213; Notes by, 46, 117, 173, 221  
 Clavering, Old Carving at, 198  
 Coast Defence 1625, 173  
 Colchester, St. Giles' Church, 41; Hospital, 38; Museum, 226  
 Collett, Henry Haines, Churchyard Cottage at Theydon Garnon, by, 18  
 Cook, Robert, obituary, 218  
 Cox, Rev. J. Charles, *The Cathedral Church and See of Essex*, by, 175  
 Croppenburgh Family, 220  
*Bedham, A History of*, by Rev. C. A. Jones, 55, 172  
 Dormer Pierce, Rev. F., Wickford, Essex and Wickford, R.I., by, 1  
 Dovercourt, 170  
 Dunmow, A Country Doctor at, in 1644, by Miss C. Fell Smith, 199  
 Earls Colne, Reputed Roman Well, note by J. A. Tregelles, 174  
 East Horndon, 171  
 Essex Antiquary, An. (I. C. Gould), 31  
 Essex Boundaries, 44  
 Essex Cathedral, 41, *The Cathedral Church and See of Essex*, by Rev. J. C. Cox, 175  
 Essex County Sports and Amateur Championships, 94  
 — Manor House, An old, by Mrs. Hubert Bourke, 211  
 — New Justices of Peace, 116  
 — Lays and Legends of the Forest of, 174; Manor House, An Old, 211  
 — Territorial Force in 1608, by Rev. Dr. Clark, 98  
 — Woollen Manufactures, by Rev. A. Clark, 203  
*Essex Review, The, Our History and Progress*, 36  
 Epping, Alms Box at All Saints' Church, by C. B. Sworder, 207  
 — St. John Baptist, 40  
 Eustace, Rev. R. H., Death, 171  
*Fanshawe, Memoirs of Ann Lady Fanshawe*, 54  
 Farm Implements, Some Obsolete, by Miller Christy, 21  
 Fell S nith, Miss C., A Country Doctor in 1544, by, 199  
 Font of Theydon Bois, Supposed Old, by A. A. West, 34  
 Gallagher, Mrs. (Alice Argente) Death of, 116  
 Gepp, Rev. E., Notes by, 45, 118, 174  
 Gerish, W. B., Note by, 173  
 Gould, I. Chalkley, F.S.A., Obituary notice of, 31  
 Gould, Miss B. M., Leaves from an Essex Still Room, by, 66  
 Gould, Miss I. L., Leaves from an Essex Still Room, by, 66  
 Great Burstead Church, 41  
 Great Leighs Registers, by Rev. A. Clark, 91  
 Great Yeldham Bells, 217  
 Green, J. J., Roger Preston, his Letter, etc., by, 132  
 Hadleigh Rectory, by Rev. A. Clark, LL.D., 11  
 Hardingham, Edward, *Lays and Legends of the Forest of Essex*, by, 174  
 Harvey, Daniel, of Wivenhoe, 47  
 Harvey, George, of Maldon, 48  
 Harvey, Captain G. H., Note by, 48  
 Harwich, 132  
 Henniker, Sir Bridges, Death, 218  
 Honeywood, Col. Philip, 225  
 Hop Cultivation, 1625, 173  
 Houblon, Lady Alice Archer, *The Houblon Family*, by, 51  
*Houblon Family, The, Its Story and Times*, by Lady Alice Archer Houblon, 51  
 James, Anthony, 172  
 Johnston, Andrew, J.P., note by, 44

- Jones, Rev. C. A., *History of Dedham*, by, 55, 172
- Kemp, Charles Fitch, Obituary, 43
- Laindon Hills, 40
- Leaves from an Essex Still Room, by I. L. and B. M. Gould, 66
- Lewer, Florence, *The Sampler*, by, 146
- Lewer, H. W., *The Flail*, by, 177; *A Book of Simples*, edited by, 223
- Lieutenancy Book for Essex, A, by Rev. A. Clark, 157
- Lincoln College, Oxford*, by Stephen A. Warner, 222
- Little Dunmow, Windmills round, 44
- Mahony, Pierce, note by, 221
- Maldon Coparcenary, A, 46; George Harvey of, 48; Church Goods, 48; All Saints Church, 217
- Mark Hall, Latton, Some Althams of, 74, 134
- Mashonaland, Bishop of, see Powell, Rev. E. N.
- Masonic Lodge, 38
- New Hall, Boreham, by M. P., 57, 121; mentioned, 224
- Otes Manor House, 211
- Owers, F. H., pamphlet by, 226
- Parry, Lieut.-Col. G. S., note by, 47
- Pemberton, Rev. J. H., *Roses, their History, Development, and Cultivation*, by, 119
- Petre, Lord, death of, 172
- Plaistow, New Church at, 40
- Powell, Rev. E. N., Gifts to, 41
- Preston, Roger, Letter of, from Harwich, 1666, by J. J. Green, 132
- Purveyance in Essex, by Dr. Clark, 213
- Quarters of the Roads, 45
- Registers, New County, 38
- Reviews of Books. *Stephen Marshall; A Forgotten Puritan*, by E. Vaughan, 49; *The Houlton Family*, by Lady Alice Archer Houlton, 51; *Memoirs of Lady Fanshawe*, 54; *History of Dedham*, by Rev. C. A. Jones, 55; *Lays and Legends of the Forest of Essex*, by E. Hardingham, 174; *The Cathedral Church and See of Essex*, by Rev. J. C. Cox, 175; *Nothing but Rose Leaves Crumpled and Sere*, 196; *Lincoln College*, by S. A. Warner, 224
- River Pollution, 39
- Romer, William, Obituary, 42
- Rose Leaves, Crumpled and Sere, Nothing but*, by C. M. G. Bradhurst, 196
- Ruck, Family of, Maldon, 117
- Rural Amenities, by Rev. E. Gepp, 118
- Rural Identities by Rev. E. Gepp, 174
- Sampler, The, by Florence Lewer, 146
- Simples, A Book of, edited by H. W. Lewer, 223
- Shells in our Rivers and Ditches, by Evangeline Bradhurst, 87
- Small Holdings, by Rev. E. Gepp, 219
- Stebbing, Church, 217
- Sworder, Charles B., The Alms Box at All Saints, Epping, by, 207
- Taylor, Dr. John, Death, 218
- Tending Bells, 40
- Theydon Bois, Supposed Old Font of, by Arthur A. West 34
- Theydon Garnon, The Churchyard Cottage at, by H. H. Collett, 18
- Thompson, Thomas, Obituary, 115
- Tregelles, J. A., note by, 174
- Vaughan, Miss E., *Stephen Marshall, A Forgotten Puritan*, by, 49
- Ware, Rev. J. H., Obituary, 43
- Warlow, G. H., March of the Cavaliers from Bow to Stratford by, 186
- Warner, Stephen A., *Lincoln College*, by, 222
- Wells, Frederick, Obituary, 171
- West, Arthur A., Supposed Old Font of Theydon Bois, by, 34
- Wickford, Essex and Wickford, R.I., by Rev. F. Dornier Pierce, 1
- Windmills round Little Dunmow, 44
- Wivenhoe, 47
- Wood, Sir Matthew, death, 218
- Worriū, Hastings, Note by, 44





WICKFORD, RHODE ISLAND.—From the Bay.



THE

# ESSEX REVIEW:

*A Quarterly Journal for the County.*

---

---

No. 65.]

JANUARY, 1908.

VOL. XVII.

---

---

## WICKFORD, ESSEX, AND WICKFORD, RHODE ISLAND, U.S.A.

BY THE REV. F. DORMER PIERCE, M.A.,

*Rector of Wickford, Essex (Fellow of the Royal Historical Society).*

IT is thought that a short account of a visit I recently paid to preach at the two-hundredth anniversary of Wickford Church, Rhode Island, U.S.A., may interest the readers of the *Essex Review*.

Wickford is one of the many parishes in New England called after the names of the old homes in the old country. It was natural that in New England, the part of America first settled by emigrants from the old country, the names of English homes and villages should predominate.

It is equally natural that, as the majority of those settlers came from the Eastern Counties, we find East Anglian names more frequent than those of places in the north and west of England. So it is that we find such names as Essex, Essex Junction and Essex County, Springfield, Danbury, Haverhill, Epping, Brentwood and Plaistow (Vermont State); Hatfield, Chelmsford, Billerica (*sic*), Dedham, Braintree, Barstable, Harwich and New Braintree (Massachusetts); Danbury and Colchester (Connecticut); and Stratford, Essex County and Langford in New York State.

How many of these were founded by inhabitants of the old Essex towns and villages it is impossible to say on this side of the Atlantic. Local history is, however, much better preserved and cared for in the States than with us, and it is probable that by making application to some of the Historical Societies, such as the Rhode Island Historical Society, the Massachusetts



Historical Society, and others, a great many interesting details of the connections of Essex with New England could be discovered. Of the connection between old and new Wickford it is possible for the present writer to speak somewhat more exactly.

On Nov. 27th, 1614, Elizabeth Read, of Wickford, was baptized in Wickford Parish Church, Essex, by the Rev. Augustine Lyndsell, Rector, and this lady is the connecting link between Old and New Wickford.

The original inhabitants of the peninsula on which Wickford, R.I., is situated were the Narragansett Indians, who for 'thirteen English coats' exchanged with some of the early Colonists a tract of land ten miles long by thirteen miles broad. The Narragansett tribe of Indians continued its corporate existence down to the year 1893, when they met for a final pow-wow in Charlestown, and Fort Ninigret, on Summit Hill, is still a mark of interest to tourists as one of the landmarks of the Red Men.

The modern village of Wickford began with a blockhouse, used as a fortress against the wily and savage natives of the new country. It was also a trading place with the Indians, and a dwelling place for Richard Smith and his family, who came from Gloucestershire in the latter years of Charles I., 'because of religious persecution.' For a while he dwelt in Taunton, Plymouth Colony, but, not finding there sufficient liberty of conscience, he purchased thirty thousand acres of land of the Narragansett Indians, and, floating timber from Taunton to a bend of the cove, about a mile to the north-west of what is now Wickford, in 1639 put up, in the thickest of the barbarians, the first house builded among the Indians of this neighbourhood. Some years later, in 1683, the blockhouse was the scene of a struggle between the Rhode Islanders and men from the United Colonies, who wished to bring the Colonists under the rule of the King's Commissioners, when the demeanour of Mr. Smith and his followers, the men of Wickford, was so fierce that the Commission had to adjourn to Boston to pursue its deliberations. Smith's blockhouse is still standing, and has much of historical and antiquarian interest to repay a visitor to it.

The successors of Richard Smith in the lands of Wickford were the Updyke family. Gysbert Opten Dyck, a bachelor from

Wessel, Germany, married Catherine, daughter of Mr. Richard Smith, on September 26, 1643, at the Dutch Church, New York, and the family is still represented in New England, in the person of Mr. Daniel Berkeley Updyke, of Boston. Representatives of the Updyke family lived in the blockhouse until 1784, and the present village of Wickford was lotted out by Mr. Lodowick Updyke in 1709. Even as late as 1777 the assembly granted a charter to the Newtown Rangers, a company doing duty at Updyke's Newtown, though the Colonial Records as far



back as 1663 say that the town for the future is to be called Wickford. How it received this name we must now enquire.

Elizabeth Read, baptized at Wickford, Essex, in 1614, whom we have described as the connecting link between old and new Wickford, emigrated to America and married Mr. John Winthrop, Governor of Connecticut, and well called 'the flower of American Puritanism.' This gentleman was the son of the famous John Winthrop, Governor of Massachusetts, and was himself a person of considerable renown. He paid a visit to England between 1633 and 1645. During this visit, or on his return to New England, he married Elizabeth Read, and

together, in 1645, they paid a visit to the lands which had been recently granted to Winthrop, near Smith's blockhouse. Here, it is said, that Mrs. Winthrop, being much struck by the resemblance between the situation of her husband's lands round the blockhouse, and that of her old home in Essex, said to her husband, 'Let us call this Wickford'; thus by an old Wickford inhabitant was the name of the ancient village of the East Saxons perpetuated in the great American Republic. Memory likes to dwell on the sweet Elizabeth Winthrop bringing into existence this new Wickford across the ocean, and being indirectly the cause of many pleasant ties between the two places.

That another origin of the name has been suggested, it must in all fairness be said. The teamsters who drew timber down to the point at the terminus of Main Street complained how bad the Ford was across the creek at night. In order to remedy the gloom, they furnished a lamp which consisted of a wick drawn through a ring and elevated to burn, the other end drawing from a vessel of oil, or grease in an open pot, which contrivance was called a Kill Devil. In time it came to be spoken of as the Ford at the Wick, and so Wickford. If this should be the true origin of the name, it would be curious, as the ancient Wic fort in Essex was almost certainly so called, as the village of the ford. Close to Wickford, R.I., is still to be seen Elizabeth's Spring, so called from Elizabeth Read drinking at it in her travels up to Connecticut, in the beginning of the country. It issues from the bank of the cove at the root of a fine old chestnut tree.

The situation of Wickford, R.I., does indeed resemble in some ways, though in other ways it is much superior to, the Wickford of the old country. It is finely placed on an arm of Narragansett Bay, just opposite the fashionable town of Newport, on a level stretch of country in Washington County, Rhode Island State. It has fine, broad streets, up to which come the arms of the bay, and the thoroughfares are well planted with shade-trees. The houses are, of course, mostly of timber, but most comfortable and commodious, and the hospitality of the people is unbounded. There are some exceedingly pretty drives in the country round, the scenery of which reminds one in many ways of the rural parts of the old country. Among the show places round

Wickford is the birthplace of Gilbert Stuart. This famous painter was born about four miles to the south-west of the village. There is still to be seen the unpretentious house, now a farmhouse, that was his birthplace. The entry in the register of Narragansett Church reads :—‘ April 11th, 1756, being Palm Sunday, Dr. McSparran read, preached, and baptized a child named Gilbert Stuart, son of Gilbert Stuart, the snuff grinder.’ Sureties, the doctor himself, Mr. Benjamin Mumford, and Mrs. Hannah Mumford. As a painter of heads, Gilbert Stuart



BIRTHPLACE OF GILBERT STUART.

occupies a foremost place among American artists, his portrait of Washington being considered the standard likeness.

We must now turn to the church life of Wickford, the immediate cause of the present writer's interest in Wickford, and the centre of the life of the place.

Situated on a green and retired spot at the end of a lane, standing solitary and comparatively useless, is a rustic and venerable building that bears the marks of age, as the Western continent counts age. Two hundred years ago this year (1907), this church was built upon another foundation, about five miles from its present site, the land being given by Lodowick

Updyke. Driving south-west from Wickford, we pass Pentazekia's Corner and come to a spot that now seems desolate indeed. But this spot was equidistant from most of the large landed proprietors scattered about Boston Neck and South Kingstown, who then made up the congregation. Previous to this, the English Churchmen had worshipped in private houses. But, earnestly desiring the priestly offices and a holy temple for the worship of God, they applied to the Bishop of London for a clergyman. The Rev. Christopher Bridge was transferred from King's Chapel, Boston, and in 1706 became the regular incumbent of St. Paul's, Narragansett.

Under his care, the church, a timber building, was built in 1707, by the voluntary offerings of the people. The church was, and still is, a plain oblong structure with curved ceiling, many windows, and a wide gallery. There was an old-fashioned wine-glass pulpit with reading-desk below. The chancel and altar were in the east, apart from the place of Common Prayer and preaching.

To the people of an English parish of to-day, even perhaps those of the modern English Wickford, the obstacles to worship in that church two centuries ago would seem almost insurmountable. Far removed from the residences, without communication except by 'driftways,' or cattle paths through the different plantations, with access only on horseback, whatever the state of the weather, with nothing but heated soap-stones, or little tin foot stoves with live coals, to make the frigid temperature endurable—who among us would face such discomforts as getting to church amid sleet and snow, and sitting to hear the long sermons of those days, with the mercury twenty or thirty degrees below zero? But our ancestors were made of hardier stuff, and supported the different rectors well by their presence and their gifts. The Rev. Mr. Bridge, the first regular rector, is spoken of as a religious and worthy man, a very fine scholar and a grave preacher. His 'performances' in the pulpit were solid, judicious and profitable. His conversation was agreeable and improving. He did not remain long in Wickford, but removed to Rye, New York. In 1717 the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel sent the Rev. William Guy as missionary over the Narragansett parish. He had been labouring in Charleston, and on the desolation of his parish by

the Yammosee Indians in 1715, he was sent to Narragansett at a salary of seventy pounds a year. The members of the Church of England in Narragansett received him with much joy. They presently provided him with a convenient house, and because it was at some distance from the church they also gave him a horse and showed him many marks of favour. He was well respected by the people, and several who lived regardless of all religion before he came began to be constant attendants at



Old Church, erected 1707. Wickford, R. I.

divine worship. In 1719 he returned to St. Andrew's Church, Charleston.

In April, 1721, the Rev. James McSparran arrived from England, and took charge of St. Paul's Church, Narragansett, which had, since the departure of Mr. Guy, been dependent upon occasional ministrations. Mr. McSparran, formerly a Congregationalist, now attached himself to the historic church, received ordination as a priest from the Archbishop, and strove to win others to that zealous devotion to the fellowship of the Church which he from this time forward showed. Dr. McSparran settled down in Wickford, and built himself a Glebe House on a beautiful site overlooking the Petaquamscote River as it wends its way to the Atlantic Ocean. In this choice spot

Dr. McSparran had rare enjoyment from the many congenial friends who came from Newport, Boston, and even Virginia, and shared the Colonial hospitality of Narragansett families. He was a great scholar and took young gentlemen to read with him.

The doctor was a man of great strength of mind and body, and was instrumental in building churches at Warwick, sixteen miles north of Wickford, and at Westerly, twenty-five miles west of Wickford, in which, as well as at New Bristol, he used to minister and visit the people. His wife, a daughter of Mr.



Interior of Old Church, erected 1707, Wickford, R. I.,

Wm. Gardiner, of Boston Neck, Narragansett, is buried in the churchyard of Christ Church, Westminster. The rector of St. Paul's was bowed down by his great loss and never really recovered the blow of her death. He died on 1st December, 1757, and was buried under the altar of St. Paul's, Narragansett, the funeral being the occasion for a great demonstration by the clergy and laity of Rhode Island. He was a man of marked ability and great devotion. On the site of the old St. Paul's, amid the desolation of the old burial ground, there has been erected a cross of white marble bearing this inscription : ' Erected in grateful memory of James McSparran, D.D.,

Missionary of the S.P.G., and Rector of this church from 1721 to his death in 1757.'

The Rev. Samuel Fayerweather was the successor to Dr. McSparran, and was sent out by the S.P.G. in 1760. He was witty enough to reprimand his parishioners in the following words for their negligence in attending church. 'You have a thousand frivolous excuses, but there is none more common with you than the plea of foul weather; but come here and you will always find Fayer weather.'

Dr. Fayerweather devoted himself greatly to the good of the negroes, being encouraged in this by the S.P.G., and especially by a sermon on the subject preached at the anniversary of the Society in 1761. The War of American Independence made great disturbance in the church life of Wickford, as elsewhere, and for a time the church was closed, and Dr. Fayerweather ministered from house to house. After his death in 1781, the church was used as barracks for the American soldiers, and no other minister was appointed by the S.P.G. until 1787. In 1800 the old church was taken down, carried to its present site, and put together again on the site given by Lodowyck Updyke in the middle of the present town. In 1817, the first Sunday School in Rhode Island was started in Wickford by the rector of St. Paul's, and soon 100 children were attending it. Amongst the treasures of St. Paul's Church is the set of Communion plate, consisting of silver chalice, paten and baptismal bason, presented by Queen Anne. The chalice and paten were used when the present writer celebrated the Blessed Sacrament in St. Paul's Church, on the occasion of the 200th anniversary of the founding of the church. Among the other rectors of St. Paul's was Bishop Thomas, the late well-known Bishop of Kansas, who died in 1895. By his wise and energetic ministrations, and by the impression of his singularly beautiful and devoted character, the church in Kansas has made good progress in numbers and spirituality. In 1847, the new church was founded in Wickford, the corner stone being laid by the Bishop of Rhode Island on 1st September, 1847. The church was consecrated on St. Paul's Day, 1848, and from that time the old church has been practically deserted. The new church has many interesting monuments to Dr. McSparran, Dr. Fayerweather, Dr. Burge, and other incumbents of St. Paul's.



There are some fine stained-glass windows and a good organ, with all the other aids to divine worship. The church is also provided with a rectory, glebe, and a guild house, and, but for some unfortunate investments, the Parish of St. Paul's would be in excellent financial condition. The condition of the Narragansett country has, of course, altered very materially from the old days of the plantations.

The prosperity of those days has given place very largely to desolation. The land is for the most part untilled, and bears a sad resemblance to the English Wickford in the number of barren acres that the parish presents. Yet the parish has many attractions, and great advantages as a residential resort. It has a station (Wickford Junction) on the New York, New Haven, and Hartford line, but is superior to its English namesake in having also an admirable trolley-car system, which brings people down from Providence. It has also a regular service of boats across to Newport. The great attraction of Wickford is, of course, the beautiful Narragansett Bay, where fishing, boating and bathing are all to be had in abundance. Wickford, R.I., likes to call itself the Venice of America. Whether it has claims to such a high title is perhaps a question, but it is certainly a delightfully quiet and pretty seaside resort. The pleasure of a few days' visit there was greatly enhanced to the present writer by the extraordinary kindness and hospitality and demonstrations of friendship when he paid his recent visit to the parish. Nothing could have been more delightful than the cordial reception the rector and laity of St. Paul's were good enough to give him; by their friendly interest in the old Wickford, and their hospitable reception, making an occasion never to be forgotten. As he stood in the pulpit of the old St. Paul's, looking round on the great congregation gathered in the gallery, where the slaves used to sit, and in the old-fashioned pews in the body of the church, other and deeper thoughts came also, in their course; thoughts of those days when, nearly three hundred years ago, 'Religion stands a tip-toe in our land, Waiting to pass to the American strand,' and of that Faith which, no longer 'a tip-toe,' is still firmly planted amongst our people at home; thoughts of the unity of spiritual life that there is between the two great branches of the Anglo-Saxon race, life coming from the same

Divine Head and nourished by the same means of grace; thoughts of the great religious problems that lie before the mighty American people, problems, some the same, but many very different from those we have to face at home; thoughts of the many lessons we can learn from them: lessons of vigorous self-help, of virile independence, of masterly energy in adapting ourselves to the growing needs of a great people, of generous almsgiving, in which English Churchmen fall far behind their American brothers; lessons of ability to adapt their forms of prayer and worship to the necessities of later times; lessons of a common unity and brotherliness amongst Church people, somewhat lacking in our English life. Thoughts also there were, of course, of what American Church life might learn from our older historic order at home, but on these it is not for me to dwell. We can each strengthen the other greatly in meeting the great problems of the future; and each instance of intercourse between the Church in England and the Church in America, whether it is on a humble scale, as that of old and new Wickford, or on a great scale like the Pan-Anglican Congress to be held in London next June, can but help us to realize our unity in the Divine Head of the Holy Catholic Church.\*

---

## HADLEIGH RECTORY, 1825—1868.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

**I**N taking note of men who have filled public offices, it is right to have regard not only to those whom success has caused to rank as worthies, but also to those who failed, often less from personal faults than from stress of adverse circumstances. The records, in these latter cases, are frequently painful and even humiliating, but generally interesting and instructive. For this reason, the inglorious fortunes of the Rev. John Mavor, sometime Rector of Hadleigh, Essex, may be faithfully set out in this *Review*, no less than the eminent services of his successor.

John Mavor was born at Woodstock, Oxfordshire, about 1786. His father, William Fordyce Mavor, was an educationalist and divine of repute, master of Woodstock School, author of a highly esteemed *English Spelling Book*, LL.D. of

\* For much of the information in this paper I am greatly indebted to Mrs. F. B. Griswold, author of the *History of Wickford, R.I.*; also to the Editor of the *Sunday Tribune*, Providence, R.I., and to the publications of the *Rhode Island Historical Society*.

distant Aberdeen, and ultimately rector of Bladon-with-Woodstock (1810 till his death in 1837). John Mavor entered Wadham College, Oxford, in June, 1802, being then in his sixteenth year, and proceeded in due course to his B.A. degree early in 1806. There was at Lincoln College a fellowship, limited to natives of Oxfordshire, the appointment to which was not vested in the College itself, but in the Bishop of Lincoln. This was vacant at the time when Mavor took his degree; interest was made with the Bishop on his behalf, and he was nominated to it on April 29, 1806. As Fellow of Lincoln he took the degrees of M.A. in 1808 and of B.D. in 1816. College tradition represents him as a man by no means destitute of parts or learning, but of a haughty, imperious temper, which would brook no opposition and listen to no remonstrance. In November, 1823, he was appointed by Lincoln College to the interesting, but ill-paid, Perpetual Curacy of Foresthill, outside Oxford, which he was allowed by the College to hold without vacating his Fellowship. It was from the Manor House of Foresthill, it will be remembered, that Milton took his first wife, Mary Powell.

About 1800 (the exact date and the purchase-money are unknown) Lincoln College had acquired the patronage of Hadleigh, Essex, which had become detached from the manor and passed into the possessions of people who had no personal interest in the parish. In the beginning of 1825 the rectory fell vacant, and the College was able to exercise for the first time its right of patronage. Mavor was appointed 9th August, 1825, and, strangely enough, was not called on to resign his other college benefice of Foresthill. This circumstance suggests very distinctly that the Fellows were willing to conclude even a disadvantageous bargain, if only it would rid them of a somewhat overbearing and turbulent colleague. The acceptance of Hadleigh, of course, involved Mavor's removal from his Fellowship.

It was an age of pluralities. Mavor's plan was to serve Hadleigh by a curate, and to reside at Foresthill, where he hoped to make a good thing by preparing pupils for ordination and for the University. With this in view he took down the whole front of the parsonage there, and rebuilt it on a much larger scale, in very good workmanship and of excellent stone. The cost was considerably more than Mavor had in

hand, and was met by borrowing money on his personal security.

Probably owing to his domineering ways, his first pupils soon left him, and no others took their place. Mavor was speedily in financial difficulties, and the usurers into whose hands he had delivered himself lodged him in the debtor's side of Oxford Castle jail, paid the small annuity required for his maintenance there, and sequestered his benefices for their own benefit. The state of things at Hadleigh was, consequently, as follows: The usurers collected every penny of rectorial income they could, and had the Sunday duties, and the marriages, christenings and burials, discharged by the meanest cleric they could hire for the least money. In a few years it became certain that the original debt, both principal and interest, had been discharged, and that the liability was kept alive only by fraudulent expedients.

Mavor was now urged to institute legal proceedings to obtain a statement and audit of accounts; but his imprisonment had, by this time, so whetted his obstinacy that he had become a monomaniac. He would neither act himself, nor allow others to act for him, but passionately protested his belief that "the arm of the Lord would be visibly stretched forth to work his deliverance." Of his prison life, there are various remembrances, some pleasing, some farcical. He was frequently visited by his Oxford contemporaries, who found his conversation sensible and even scholarly, if only they could avoid stumbling upon any allusion to the persons whom he regarded as his persecutors. He had an excellent influence on his fellow-prisoners, acting as a sort of volunteer chaplain. Blind to his own faults, he was yet able to see clearly the faults of others, to remonstrate and to reason with them. He still retained his Academical vote (being qualified by residence within the precinct of the University!), and, on occasion of contested elections, he used to be taken out on security for the time being, and led in triumph to the polling-booth. The members of Common-Room subscribed for a new suit for him every year. There was a shamefast feeling that glossy clerical black was out-of-place in a debtors' prison, and a thrifty idea that a pepper-and-salt suit would wear longer before showing signs of shabbiness. One year, accordingly, a dark

grey cloth was chosen for the accustomed gift. But Mavor would not have it. His pride was hurt, he would rather go in a thread-bare suit than accept anything else than the correctest of black broadcloth.

In 1845, the diocese of Oxford was taken charge of by a vigorous prelate, Samuel Wilberforce, and he was at once informed of the unhappy state of affairs at Foresthill. He set himself to obtain new Orders in Council, 1846, giving Bishops authority to deal with the abuses of sequestered livings, and, on June 22, 1847, pronounced that Mavor had forfeited Foresthill. Nothing was done at Hadleigh to take advantage of the new legislation, but the end of the trouble was not long delayed. Mavor was full of rage against the College tenant of Foresthill Manor, because he had taken the leading part in moving for his eviction. In his mad way, he prophesied that the vengeance of heaven would speedily fall upon his enemy. Six years afterwards, the news that this farmer had been struck down by apoplexy in the street outside the Castle so excited Mavor's frenzied brain that he also had a shock and died 6th June, 1853.

Lincoln College had, a second time, to exercise its patronage, and sought to make up for its ill-starred first choice by sending to Hadleigh one of its best and most distinguished members. The new rector, nominated 9th Dec., 1853, was the Rev. Thomas Espinelle Espin, M.A., born at Louth, in Lincolnshire, in 1824. He entered Lincoln College in 1843, was elected scholar in 1846, and in that year took a First Class in Classics. His reputation was so great that when he stood for a Lincolnshire Fellowship in March, 1849, no other candidate had courage to appear against him. He became tutor of Lincoln College in 1852, but next year accepted the rectory of Hadleigh, with which he combined the professorship of theology at Queen's College, Birmingham.

When Espin went to Hadleigh, he found the parsonage a ruin. It had stood empty during the sequestration, and proved a convenient store, from which every one who wanted a brick, a plank, or a tile, helped himself. The whole fabric, put up to auction, fetched no more than £10, and, by reason of Mavor's insolvency, no dilapidation-money was forthcoming. A new parsonage house and rectory farm buildings were now built, at a cost of over £1,600, to which Lincoln College contributed £500. The new rector's stay at Hadleigh was not prolonged. In

1868 he removed to a Cheshire rectory, became Chancellor of Chester diocese, 1873, and Chancellor of Liverpool diocese, 1880; D.D. Oxford, 1880: honorary D.C.L., Durham, 1891. Although the greater part of his life-work thus belongs to northern dioceses, Mr. Chancellor Espin's fifteen years' incumbency at Hadleigh entitles Essex to enter him on its list of authors closely connected with the county. The following are some of his numerous dissertations on points of Church law and administration:—

- (1) *Our want of clergy*, Oxford, 1863.
- (2) *The supply and training of ministers*, London, 1863.
- (3) *Clerical subscription and the Act of Uniformity*, Oxford, 1864.
- (4) *The claims of the Church upon the Universities*, London, 1866.
- (5) *Church organization in India*, London, 1877.
- (6) *The probable results of Disestablishment*, London, 1892, and frequently reprinted.
- (7) *Churchwardens: their office and duties*, London, 1888.

During Mr. Espin's incumbency Lincoln College had an offer of £2,800 for the advowson. This it accepted, and so, in 1868, its brief patronage of Hadleigh came to an end.

---

## THE FAMILY OF BELL, OF ESSEX.

BY H. SOADY BELL.

**T**HERE are several families of Bell scattered over England. The Border may be described as their home, but they are also found in Yorkshire, Lancashire, Norfolk, Gloucestershire, and Essex. The Essex family was apparently an offshoot of the Gloucester branch, the founder being one Edward Bell, of Writtle, Essex, who died there in 1576, and whose arms and pedigree are recorded in the Heralds' visitations of 1558 and 1612. In the pedigree he is stated to be the second son of Wm. Bell, of Newlande, Co. Gloucester, and to have married Margaret, daughter of John Barley, of Stapleford Abbott. By her he had three sons, William, Edward and James, and one daughter, Ann. In his will, proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury in 1576, he makes several bequests to his

servants, to the poor, and to Merton College, Oxford, £20; to Brazenose College a smaller sum. His real estate consisted of lands in Newlande, Hewittsfeilde, St. Brewells and Staunton, in the counties of Gloucester and Monmouth, and in Dixon, Monmouthshire.

*William*, the eldest son, under his father's will inherited the lands, in tail male, subject to his Uncle James's, life interest in a portion, and the widow's life interest in the rest, with remainder to the brothers and sister in tail male in succession, with remainder to William and his heirs. In his will, Edward makes no mention of any real estate in Essex, but refers to 'the manson house of my sonne (William) called Byrles, in the paryshe of Writtle.'

*Edward*, the second son, under his father's will, inherited some leasehold property in Newlande, Glouc. He appears to have lived in Gloucester, for in his will, proved in the P.C.C. in 1650, he is described as of St. Brewells, Glouc. He left all his property (personal) to his nephew John Gorges. Presumably he left neither widow nor descendants.

*James*, the third son, under his father's will became possessed of a chattel interest in a farm at 'Shutte in the Co. of Devon.'

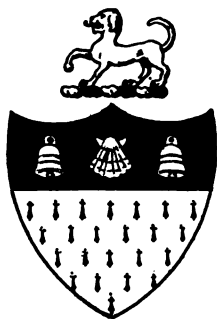
*Ann*, the only daughter, was the first of the four wives of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, of the Province of Maine. She was married to him at St. Margaret's, Westminster, on 24th February, 1589, and had by him two sons, John and Robert, and two daughters, Ellen and Honoria. She died on 26th August, 1620, and was buried at St. Sepulchre's, London.

It may then be presumed that, if this family is still represented in Essex, its members must be sought in the descendants of William, of Byrles, Writtle. The writer has been unable to trace such descendants; but in the *Gentleman's Magazine* of 1789 is an obituary notice of 'Miss Bell, aged 19, at Writtle, only child of Mr. B., of the British Library, Strand.'

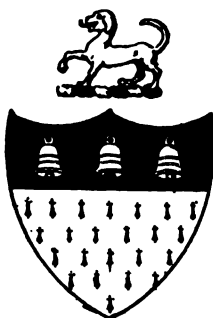
There is a brass in Writtle Church, depicting Edward Bell and Margaret, his wife, with their four children (one of which, the daughter, is now missing). There is also a foot legend and a shield, bearing the arms of Bell, impaling quarterly of nine (3, 3 and 3), 1st Barlee, 2nd Lanway, 3rd Attlee, 4th Belhouse, 5th Pateshall, 6th Waldene, 7th Breton, 8th Norwood, and 9th Peryent.

In Burke's General Armoury there are two entries under Bell (Essex) :

- (1) Ermine on a chief sable, an escallop shell between two bells argent. Crest, a Talbot passant ermine.
- (2) Ermine on a chief sable, three church bells argent.



No. 1.



No. 2.

The first is to be found in the Heralds' Visitation of 1558 ; while the last the writer has only been able to discover in a coloured sketch of the arms handed down through at least four generations of his own family. The similarity of the coats (see illustration) is sufficient to justify a conjecture that the family which bore the last was descended from that to which the first was granted.

The later family referred to, or some members of it, have lived for the last four generations at Wickford and the neighbourhood, the earliest member being Abraham Bell, who married secondly Ann Milbourn, of Great Bursted, in 1780, at Wickford, by whom he had one son, James Abraham. By his first wife, Sarah, who died in 1777, he had two sons : Abraham and Thomas, and two daughters, Mary (who married George Wyatt, of Ashingdon and Eastwood, in 1779), and Elizabeth (who married James Fairchild, of Rochford and Pitsea, in 1788). Abraham, senior, died in 1801. He had two sisters : Mary, who married Thos. Wright, of Little Bromfords, Wickford (who died in 1767), and Elizabeth, who married John Kirkham.

Of the sons of Abraham Bell :—

(1) Abraham, jun., inherited some freeholds in Nevendon and Basildon from his father. The writer has been unable to trace his descendants ; but finds in an *Essex Directory* of 1848 that an Abraham Bell was a farmer at Corringham.

(2) Thomas, of Wickford, married Sarah Archer in 1801, and died in 1835, leaving three daughters and one son :



Thomas, who married Harriet Elizabeth Abrey, of Chelmsford, and died in 1895. He owned the freehold of Beeches, Wickford, and lived there, having built the greater part of the house which stands to-day. (Beeches derives its name from the family of Beche, which is believed to have formerly lived there.) He had four sons—Thomas Best (who married Mary Soady in 1879, and had three sons and three daughters), Henry Abrey (died 1878), Walter (died s.p.), and Edwin Raynham—and two daughters, Harriet Sarah (who married Robert Norton Stevens, of Woodham Hall, Surrey) and Lucy Archer—all born at Wickford.

(3) James Abraham lived at Great Baddow. He had two sons, Jas. Wickham and Charles Alfred, and one daughter, who married — Simpson. Charles Alfred married May Bodle, and had three sons and two daughters—(1) James Alfred (who married Ellen C. Thorby, and had a son Bernard Alfred and a daughter Rosa Gertrude, who married Chas. J. Parris); (2) Charles, who married Hannah Tenant, and had one daughter, Lillian; (3) Richard, who married Fanny Stundt and had two sons, Maurice and Walter, and two daughters; (4) Mary Kirkham, who married Philip Parris; and (5) Elizabeth, who married G. Henry Aubrey, of Chelmsford.

From some old Essex Poll Books, it appears that a Levy Bell and a Giles Bell owned freeholds in Wickford in 1768. At Sible Hedingham, from 1763 to 1848, a family of Bell owned freeholds, the Christian names being Joseph, sen., Joseph, jun., George and Henry. The name is found in various parts of the county, but not continuously for any long period in any one place.

From the Wickford Parish Registers it would seem that the family did not settle in that parish till the early part of the 18th century, no mention of the name being found before 1705, when a Jane Bell was buried. There were Bells in Essex, contemporaries of Edward Bell, of the 16th century, but their existence is only learnt from their wills proved in the P.C.C.

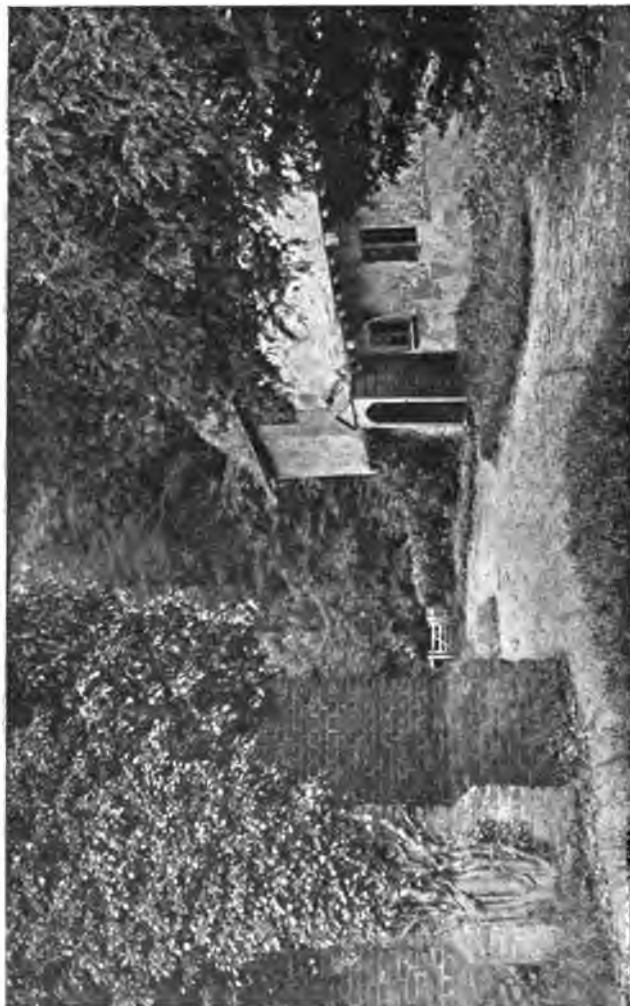
---

## THE CHURCHYARD COTTAGE AT THEYDON GARNON.

BY HENRY HAINES COLLETT.

**A**MONG the relics of bygone days which have, so far, withstood the onslaught of time and the violation of man, and which survive as concrete evidence of ancient customs and habitations, there are few structures more interesting to the student of ecclesiastical history than those known as 'clergy houses,' an excellent specimen of which is situated in the churchyard of Theydon Garnon.

The origin of these cottages (of which a few other examples survive, notably that adjoining the church at Alfriston, Sussex) is said to have been for the use of a non-resident priest in pre-



[Epping.]

CHURCHYARD COTTAGE, THEYDON GARNON.

Photo by A. T. Davis]

Reformation days, and the parvise, or chamber over the church porch, found in many parishes, in which is often a fireplace, was used for the same purpose. Ancient rectory houses also, more or

less restored, are fairly common. The services in the church of Theydon Garnon were conducted by the help of the monastic clergy of the Abbey of Waltham, about seven miles distant, in common with other churches around, notably that of All Saints', Epping, and St. Andrew's, North Weald, and the visiting priest used to sleep in the Churchyard Cottage. The visiting monks, however, were not wholly responsible for the service, for there is, within the chancel of the church, a fine brass to one William Kyrkeby, rector, who belonged to the secular order of priests; also at the commencement of the Fourteenth Century we find that Richard de Teye was in possession of all rectorial rights.

The interesting old lath and plastered cottage we are now describing is situated in the churchyard, facing the west end of the church, within a few feet of the tower. Its age is unknown; but it must be centuries old, and was formerly a one-storied building with particularly low ceilings, and probably had a thatched roof. Later on a second storey was added, the front of which is corbelled out and carried on to the ends of the beams and joists.

The cottage front, facing the churchyard, retains its old plaster covering, with diaper pattern in fair preservation, and the ends and back are covered with tarred deal weatherboarding. The roof is of steep pitch and covered with hand-made tiles, hung with pegs on rent oak laths, and it is ceiled with plaster under the level of the beams. The casement windows were glazed with leaded lights, but most of the glass is broken, and at the back of the building is an aperture through which the monks doled out bread to pilgrims. The general condition of the fabric is sound and, until a few years ago, was occupied as a dwelling-house, but it sadly needs renovation, and a movement has been on foot to raise funds for this purpose.

The Society for the Preservation of Ancient Buildings interested themselves in the matter, and at the instigation of Mr. Thackeray Turner, the secretary, Mr. Weir, an authority on the subject, was asked to make a survey and report. This gentleman estimated that £150 would suffice for the restoration of the cottage, and it is to be hoped that eventually any difficulties which present themselves may be overcome, so that the comparatively small sum of money needed may be raised

towards the preservation of what is to all antiquaries a building of the greatest interest, not so much by reason of its architectural merits, picturesque though it is, as for its association with a past chapter of ecclesiastical history.

---

## SOME OBSOLETE FARM IMPLEMENTS.

BY MILLER CHRISTY.

### *I.—INTRODUCTION.*

**F**EW of the various objects, implements and appliances which have been used by man in times past are disappearing and being forgotten so rapidly as those used by our grandparents and great-grandparents for domestic and agricultural purposes a century or so ago.

The coins of the ancient Greeks, the dress and customs of the old Romans, the weapons, armour, and architecture of the Middle Ages, have all been studied by many antiquaries and historians, and are fairly well known. Coming down to still later times, we find the art, literature, household furniture, and so forth, of Stuart and Early-Georgian days closely studied and written upon exhaustively. It is only when we come to deal with a period still nearer our own—the Pre-Victorian days of little more than a century ago—that we discover how little is known about many domestic, agricultural, and other appliances then in daily use, and how hard it is to secure really good specimens of them, especially those of minor importance. These things have passed out of use so recently, and are generally of such homely character, that they have not yet become objects of interest, and few persons have made any special study of them. It is often very hard, therefore, to obtain reliable information as to their origin, exact uses, and the dates and causes of their ultimate supersession.

Yet the minor domestic and agricultural appliances belonging to the period in question are worth studying and recording; for very few human appliances which had been in use so long went out of use so suddenly and completely. Some of them (such as the tinder-box and the flail) had been used practically

without change for many centuries—almost from the dawn of civilization. Yet these were superseded and became obsolete with extraordinary suddenness—actually within a generation; almost within a decade. They were swept away by that rapid advance in scientific knowledge which, commencing in the early years of the Nineteenth Century, soon rendered possible the construction of delicate and complicated machinery adapted to almost all domestic, agricultural, and industrial processes. This advance brought also the railway and the steamship, which effected vast improvements in means of travel and transport, and made changes which very rapidly altered all the conditions of human life. It is hardly too much to say that our domestic life to-day differs more radically from that of our grandparents and great-grandparents, who lived only three or four generations ago, than theirs differed from that of their forefathers who lived in Tudor times, ten or twelve generations earlier.

Of the purely domestic appliances used by our grandparents and great-grandparents, a few examples (often classed as 'By-gones') are to be seen in most local museums (as, for instance, at Colchester), though an extended series is rare; but of the agricultural implements and appliances of the same period, it is literally true that no one in this country has made a systematic effort to get together and preserve anything like a series, with the exception of the late General Pitt-Rivers, in his wonderful village museum at Farnham, in Dorsetshire. No doubt the unwieldy size of most agricultural implements is largely the cause of this; for it is difficult to find sufficient room to house them properly. It is, therefore, time that some effort was made to collect old and obsolete forms of these objects, so that the memory of them may be preserved for the interest and instruction of people of the present day and their descendants. Already it is too late to obtain anything like a complete series; soon it will be almost impossible to obtain even single examples, for they are disappearing very rapidly.

In such matters as this, England—so well to the front in some things—is very far behind many (if not most) other European countries. Nowhere in the kingdom have we anything in any way approaching the extensive 'Folk Museums' which exist at, for instance, Stockholm, Christiania, Copenhagen, Munich, Cologne, Berne and Basle, in which are displayed series of

objects connected with and illustrating the industries, agriculture, and domestic life of their peoples in the past. The need of such a museum in this country is very great. If there is no new Horniman of British birth ready and willing to found an institution of the kind, surely there might be found some American millionaire willing to help in the matter. However valuable public libraries may be, the supply is surely now adequate.

With some of the more interesting of the obsolete domestic appliances belonging to the period indicated, I have dealt elsewhere. Here, my object is to describe certain obsolete agricultural appliances which were in use at the same date.

Looking back, we find that a century or so ago, most farm implements were not made, as they are now, in the factories of regular agricultural implement makers, but each landowner and large farmer was accustomed to have his own farm implements made by the local smith and carpenter, according to some special model which he fancied or had himself designed. They were, in short, 'home-made,' as we say now, when scarcely anything used in the home is home-made. Consequently the number of different models then in everyday use was very large—much larger than now, when all ploughs, harrows, rolls, chaff-cutters, binders and the like are turned out by the thousand from large manufactories. Thus Arthur Young, the well-known Secretary of the Board of Agriculture, writing in 1807, figures and describes\* between twenty and thirty different kinds of plough—'that most necessary of all tools,' as he calls it—then in use in the county of Essex alone, as Mr. Western's, Mr. Ruggles', Lord Petre's, Mr. Wakefield's, and so on.

The plough, though it has lost much of its old importance in this country, is not yet obsolete here; but some other agricultural appliances, of, perhaps, equal antiquity (as the sowing-basket, the sowing sheet, the dibble, sickle, flail, barn-fan, and the shaul), have been driven altogether out of every-day use, owing to the introduction of machines (chiefly steam-driven) which perform much more rapidly and thoroughly the same operations. Thus, the flail has been displaced by a steam threshing-machine, the barn-fan and the shaul by a winnowing-machine, the sowing-basket and the dibble by a drill. In what

\* *Gen. View of the Agriculture of Essex* (1807).

follows, a few remarks are offered on each of the implements named and its uses, except the flail, which I discuss elsewhere : taking first

### II—THE CHAFF-BOX.

For most of my information in regard to this now obsolete contrivance I am indebted to Mr. Hastings Worrin, of Bourchiers, Little Dunmow, who recently acquired an excellent specimen which he has presented to the Museum at Colchester, where it may now be seen. From it, the photographs (by Mr. F. T. Norris, of Felsted) illustrating these remarks are taken.



Photo by]

(FIG. 1).

[F. T. Norris, Felsted.

AN OLD ESSEX CHAFF-BOX.

A century or so ago, a hand-worked ' chaff-box ' (such as that shown in Fig. 1) was in almost daily use on every large farm, being required for cutting hay and straw into chaff for mixing with the food of horses and cattle. It consisted (as the illustration shows) of a strong wooden trough, about four feet long by one foot broad and one foot deep, open at the top and at both ends, and set on four legs about two feet in height. In this trough the hay or straw intended to be cut into chaff was placed.

The fore end of the trough was strengthened by a facing of iron, and against this worked a large knife, about two feet long, furnished with a handle at the top and affixed at the bottom to a movable crank, which allowed of its being moved up and down with a sawing motion when the contrivance was in use for chaff-cutting. A thick block of wood (partly visible behind the knife in the illustration) was placed over the hay and straw in the trough, right at its front end and close up against the knife. This served to compress and compact the hay or straw in the trough, so that it would cut readily when the knife was thrust downwards upon it. This pressure was applied by placing a foot on, and thus depressing, the pedal seen below the trough, this pedal having attached to it a stout leather strap, the upper end of which was attached to the compression-block, which was thus pulled firmly downwards on to the mass of hay or straw. After a cut, when it was desired to shift the mass of hay or straw forward an inch or so, to allow of another cut, the pressure of the foot was taken off the pedal, thus relaxing the downward pull on the strap, when at once pedal, strap and compression-block were all raised an inch or two by the reflex action of the two bowed springy poles, or sticks (usually of hazel), which are seen affixed to the sides of the trough and projecting above its top, their forward ends reaching just over the compression-block, to which they are attached by means of strings, wires, or straps. The raising of the compression-block allowed of the whole mass of hay or straw being pushed forward as far as required. This was done by means of a short-handled fork, having four short tines, which was held in the left hand of the man operating the chaff-box. In the photograph, the fork is shown resting on the top of the hay or straw in the trough; but, unfortunately, only a part of its handle is visible.

The operation of cutting chaff by means of the chaff-box is shown in the second photograph (Fig. 2). The operator took his stand beside the trough, with his right foot on a low wooden stool and his left on the pedal, with his right hand he grasped the handle of the knife, and with his left the handle of the fork. Being thus ready to proceed, he drew the knife up to its highest position; then he thrust the fork into the mass of hay or straw, pushing this just so far forward that its forepart projected slightly beyond the front end of the trough and beneath the



cutting-edge of the knife ; next, he depressed the pedal by means of his foot, so that the strap connecting the pedal and the compression-block drew the latter down firmly upon the mass of hay or straw, thus compressing and compacting it ; finally, he gave a strong downward thrust of the knife, cutting off a length



*Photo by]*

(FIG. 2)

[*F. T. Norris, Felsted.*

**METHOD OF CUTTING CHAFF WITH THE OLD-FASHIONED CHAFF-BOX.**

of chaff an inch or so long, which fell upon the ground, and the operation was completed. Proceeding, the operator drew up his knife again ; took the pressure of his foot off the pedal, allowing the two springy poles to raise the compression-block ; pushed forward the mass of hay or straw, with the aid of the fork, so that a fresh length projected ; compressed the mass by

depressing the pedal ; and, finally, made another downward stroke with the knife, cutting off another length of chaff. This operation was repeated, of course, again and again, as fast as the operator could perform it. An expert was able to make, perhaps, fifteen or twenty cuts with the knife per minute. The photograph represents Mr. John Owers, of Brown's Farm, Little Dunmow—a fine specimen of an old-time Essex yeoman, and, until recently, the owner of the particular chaff-box illustrated—engaged in cutting chaff. It will be seen that, the pressure being on the pedal, the hay or straw is under compression and that the knife is in the middle of a cut.

One may infer from Arthur Young's words, quoted hereafter, that the operation of chaff-cutting was far from easy and that the operator had to acquire considerable knack before he could perform it both effectively and rapidly ; but no doubt much practice brought skill and speed, as usual. It appears that chaff-cutting formed a separate trade, though those who followed it were usually thatchers also. They used to go about from farm to farm, carrying the chaff-box (which was not very heavy) on their backs, and working wherever their labour was in request. My uncle, Mr. David Christy, of Patching Hall, Broomfield (where he was born in 1823), tells me that he can perfectly well remember and has employed these peripatetic chaff-cutters.

The chaff-box was driven out of use by the introduction of the more effective chaff-cutting machine, driven at first by hand and, later, often by steam-power. This retains the form of the earlier implement, so far as the trough and the legs upon which it stands are concerned ; but the compression of the hay or straw whilst being cut into chaff is effected much more simply by passing it between two rollers ; and the cutting of it into chaff is accomplished, not by means of a large straight knife moving up and down with a sawing motion, but by two or more semi-lunar knives affixed to the spokes of a revolving iron wheel.

The hand-driven chaff-cutting machine may still be seen, of course, in every gentleman's stable : that driven by steam is used constantly on every large farm. The first had come into use, apparently, by the beginning of the Eighteenth Century. Arthur Young, writing as long ago as 1805, says :—\*

\* *The Farmer's Calendar*, p. 11 (1805).

The number of engines [*i.e.*, contrivances] which have, of late years, been invented for cutting hay and straw into chaff (most of which execute their work sufficiently well) leaves no farmer in the kingdom under the necessity of using the common chaff-box, [which can be] worked by those only who have acquired the art of using it and who usually make much greater earnings than the common pay *per diem*.

Yet the old chaff-box continued to be used occasionally in Essex (and, doubtless, elsewhere) until much later, and there are many people still under sixty years of age who can recall seeing it in use on farms in this county. The last example in Essex was probably that which Mr. Hastings Worrin has just acquired and presented to the Museum at Colchester. Mr. Owers, the late owner, continued to use it within this century; and, about six winters ago, he cut with his own hand and sold four tons of chaff, beside what he used for feeding his own farm-stock. He managed, he says, to cut from twenty to twenty-five 'fans' full in a day.\* It may be doubted whether any other chaff-box was worked at so late a date, and it is practically certain that none is now in use in this county. Only a week or two ago, however, I saw, on a blacksmith's scrap-heap at Black Notley, a rusty knife which had once formed part of one.

(*To be continued.*)

---

## MERSEA ISLAND.

BY GEORGE BIDDELL.

**I**N the *Essex Review* for October last, a correspondent asks for information about the fort which once existed in Mersea (*E.R.*, vol. xvi., p. 204).

There was a blockhouse on the south-eastern extremity of the island for many years, at or near the place now known as Mersea Stone. This blockhouse is marked on three maps of Essex of the 17th century, which are in my possession. The estuary of the Colne was also guarded on the opposite or eastern shore by a fort standing on or near the site of the farmhouse in the parish of St. Osyth, which now bears the name of Blockhouse Wick. Our ancestors appear to have been alive to the danger of leaving this river open to their enemies, thus allowing them to swoop in upon the wealthy town of Colchester and the great high road leading from it to the Metropolis; and when one

\* For an account of the barn-fan, see the succeeding portion of this article.

considers the narrowness of the navigable channel of the Colne, and the fact that ships in olden time carried no protective armour, one may well conclude that these two blockhouses, if kept well manned and armed, provided an effective defence. The date of their construction is not certainly known, but it may, with good probability, be assigned to the reign of Henry VIII. This monarch paid special attention to the defences of the south-eastern coast of the kingdom, and it was in his time that a blockhouse was built at Tilbury, which was afterwards superseded by Tilbury Fort.

The following extracts from *Acts of the Privy Council of England, new ser.*, ed. John Roche Dasent, under the direction of the Master of the Rolls, are of interest in this matter. With reference to the first extract it should be remembered that in 1545 the French were preparing to make a descent upon the English coast in retaliation for the invasion of France, which Henry and his ally, the Emperor Charles, had made in the preceding year.

At a meeting of the Council on 12th May 1545:—

'Sir Thomas Darcy had two letters, one to the Erle of Oxford, signefieng thappointement of them two to have thordre of the Kinges Majesties subjectes of the Countie of Essex, certeyne hundredes allotted unto the sayd Sir Thomas for defence of the coste, and therle to back him with the power of the Shire, thother to the Lord Wentworth of the same tenour for the Shire of Suffolk.'

At a meeting on 23rd May 1546:—

'A warraunte to Thomas Fleming, Deputie of thordenance, to deliver to Sir Thomas Darcy oone last of pouldre for the Blockehouses of Colne and other[s] in Essex.'

Item; 'a warraunte to Sir John Williams, Treasourour, &c., for xx markes in preste to the said Mr. Darcy for the stocking of gones and other things there.'

Sir T. Darcy probably knew the coast well, as he was a native of Essex and dwelt near the sea, at St. Osyth Priory. Presumably also he was skilled in matters relating to artillery, being at the date of these extracts, Master of the Ordnance.

At a meeting on 28th March 1550:—

'Letters to Mr. Chester, Receyvour of ———, to pay to William Pascall, now Captain of the Myddle Bulwerk at Harwiche, from tyme to tyme the wages which William Bood, late Capitein there, had, and to be payd the same from the Feast of the Annuncyacion of Our Lady last past.

Like letters to the said Chester for John Burley, now appointed Captein of Marsey Bulwerk, wherof Raf Bucket was late Capitain.

Also like letters to the said Chester for John Hocket, now appointed Capitain of the Blockhowse of St. Osies, whereof John Cawson was lately Capitain.'

The threatened attack by the French in the reign of Henry VIII. came to nothing, and another century appears to have passed away before Mersea Fort became involved in any warlike operations. Early in June 1648, the Earl of Norwich, Lord Capel, and other Cavaliers made a dash into Essex with forces which they had hastily collected, and were followed by Lord Fairfax and a Parliamentary army in hot pursuit. Arrived at Colchester, the Royalists forced an entrance into the town, and were soon straitly besieged by their enemies. The possession of the waterway of the Colne was a matter of primary importance to both sides. Apparently, Mersea Fort was held by a garrison of Royalists, and was of sufficient strength to keep out intruders, for Captain Peacock and other commanders of some Parliamentary vessels, which were lying off Harwich, sent word to Fairfax that they would come into the Colne and co-operate with him, if they were informed that this fort was in his possession. Fairfax lost no time in despatching a force to take the fort, and they succeeded immediately in their attempt. It appears, however, that just before this took place, two ships laden with corn, and carrying several gentlemen and 56 men, who were coming to join the Royalists, had sailed over from the Kentish coast, and entered the river. These ships arrived on the 17th June. The men whom they brought landed at once, and went up to Colchester, and the same day, with great dispatch, most of the corn was unloaded into hoys and taken up to the town. The commanders of the ships at Harwich, having been apprised by Fairfax that he had got possession of the fort, sailed round to the Colne the next day and captured the two ships, with the corn which still remained in them. As regards the armament of the fort when it fell into the hands of the Parliamentarians, it may be interesting to note that it comprised two culverins, two sacres (or sakers), and a drake. The culverins were large pieces of ordnance throwing shot which probably weighed from 15 to 20 pounds; the sacres had a bore of several inches, and fired shot weighing five or six pounds; and the drake was presumably a smaller gun.

This fort appears to have been maintained in a more or less efficient condition during the naval wars which were waged between the English and Dutch in the time of the Commonwealth and the reign of Charles II., and then to have been

allowed to fall into neglect and decay. In the visits which I have made to Mersea I have not observed any ruins of it, and a gentleman who knows the island well informs me that he is not aware that any remains of it are now visible. It is quite possible, however, that a careful examination of the ground at the spot known as Mersea Stone, might reveal traces of its site.

With regard to the petition of Art. Ockley to which Miss Fell Smith refers, it appears from p. 351 of *Annals of Evangelical Non-conformity in the County of Essex*, by T. W. Davids, that Walter Okeley obtained the living of West Mersea in 1654. It is stated of him that he 'could not so much as write.' His predecessor, John Woolhouse, had been deprived of the living on a charge of all manner of wickedness, ending with the complaint that he had 'expressed great malignancy against the Parliament.' In connection with these statements, however, one should bear in mind that in the great struggle between King and Parliament, the contending parties were prone to characterise in very strong terms the ministers belonging to the ranks of their opponents.

## AN ESSEX ANTIQUARY.

MR. Isaac Chalkley Gould, F.S.A., who died at his residence, Trapp's Hill House, Loughton, on 11th October, in his sixty-second year, was a distinguished archæologist and antiquary, who took a special and deep interest in all that related to his own county.

Mr. Gould came of an old Essex family, being the second son (born 16 September 1845) of the late Mr. George Gould, of Trapp's Hill House. In early life, he became associated with the firm of E. Marlborough and Co., wholesale news-agents (founded soon after the middle of the Eighteenth Century), of the Old Bailey, and he remained a member of it many years. Later, he founded the wholesale-stationery firm of Marlborough, Gould, and Co. (an off-shoot of the above), as well as the Library Supply Company.

Like many of the old school of antiquaries, he spent much of his leisure time in walking over the country, in congenial

company, following high-ways, bye-ways, and field-paths. In this way, he acquired an intimate personal knowledge of the history, topography and physical features of the county of Essex which was, we believe, quite unrivalled. He was also a diligent collector of books relating to the county, his collection being one of the most extensive in existence. He possessed an exceptionally retentive memory, and this, together with his extraordinary local knowledge and his fine library of local books, fostered in him a deep-rooted affection for his native county and



MR. I. CHALKLEY GOULD, OF LOUGHTON (DIED 1907).

everything that concerns it—an affection which far exceeded a mere antiquarian interest in its history and topography.

In early life, he wrote and published little; but from the eighties onwards, he began to draw upon and utilize his large store of accumulated knowledge, and thenceforth, up to the time of his death, he was a frequent contributor of notes and articles to archæological publications—especially the *Transactions of the Essex Archæological Society*, the *Essex Naturalist*, the *Essex Review* (of which he was one of the proprietors), the *Journal of the British Archæological Association*, and the Essex volumes of the *Victoria History of the Counties of England*.

Apart from Essex, his chief interests lay in the study of Ancient Defensive Earthworks, of all kinds, to which he had devoted many years. It is not too much to say that, on this subject, he was recognised as the leading authority in this country, and that he leaves behind him no one as yet quite competent adequately to fill his place. On this subject, his opinion and advice were sought constantly by archæologists residing in all parts of the United Kingdom. His assistance was gladly secured by the Editors of the *Victoria History*, for whom he wrote the articles on Earthworks appearing in the volumes for Essex, Durham, Herefordshire and Kent. He revised and gave considerable help in connection with the articles on the Earthworks of the counties of Derby, Devon, Hertford, Lancaster, Leicester, Northampton, Oxford, and Shropshire. He was also largely instrumental in the formation of the Committee of the Society of Antiquaries 'For Recording Ancient Earthworks and Fortified Enclosures,' in the work of which he took so hearty an interest that for some years he acted as its Honorary Secretary and drew up the annual reports.

Many persons will remember the very active part he took, in the beginning of 1905, in organizing resistance to the plundering designs of Hertfordshire and Cambridgeshire, which counties sought to annex certain Essex parishes lying adjacent to their borders. He spared no effort on this occasion, speaking frequently at meetings and writing extensively in the public press, and his success in rousing the indignation of Essex men, and thus preserving inviolate the county boundaries as they had existed almost from the dawn of history, was ever after a matter of satisfaction to himself and others.

To a suggestion of Mr. Gould was due the formation, in the spring of 1906, of the Committee now engaged in exploring the mysterious salting-mounds, known as 'Red-hills,' found so abundantly on the marshes of the Essex coast. This body, formed originally as a joint-committee of the Essex Archæological Society and the Essex Field Club, was subsequently enlarged and now receives the support of the Society of Antiquaries and other leading English Archæological Societies. At its first meeting, it elected Mr. Gould as Chairman.

Beside being a Fellow of the Society of Antiquaries (elected 1st March 1906), Mr. Gould was a Vice-President of the Essex



Field Club and of the British Archæological Association, as well as member of the Council of the Essex Archæological Society (elected 29th February 1892).

He was of a sociable, yet retiring disposition, always ready to defer to the views of others, yet able to express by a passing remark the strong opinion and cogent reasoning of the scholar. Amid all his archæological work and study, he was an omnivorous general reader, with a special admiration for the works of George Borrow, whom he was never tired of quoting.

Of late years, serious ill-health greatly restricted the number of Mr. Gould's excursions about the county, but happy indeed was he who had his company on one of these, and could draw upon his ample fund of local knowledge. It was not till the beginning of the present year that he became a confirmed invalid, confined almost entirely to the house. Even then he never wavered in his work and studies, labouring almost to the end to complete his article on the Earthworks of Hertfordshire for the *Victoria History*, dictating when no longer able to write. When even that became impossible, he resigned himself patiently and bravely to the inevitable end. Almost in his last hours, he derived pleasure from having read to him an admirable article in the *Spectator* describing appreciatively the simple pastoral beauty of Essex (see *E.R.*, October 1907, vol. xvi., p. 215).

The funeral service, at Loughton Parish Church, on 16th October, was attended by representatives of most of the Societies with which he was connected, and by a large gathering of friends and neighbours. By his own wish, his body was cremated. The photograph from which the accompanying portrait has been reproduced is believed to be the only one of him in existence.

---

## SUPPOSED OLD FONT OF THEYDON BOIS, ESSEX.

BY ARTHUR A. WEST.

THE original drawing, of which a reduced copy is given below, was found in a portfolio of drawings and sketches of church fonts, made about the years 1840 to 1850. This one is marked as being the font of Theydon Bois, but whether correctly or not is uncertain.

The old church of Theydon Bois is described by Morant as 'of one pace with the chancel, and tiled.' There is a view of it in Ogborne's *History of Essex*. It may have been the actual church which was given by William de Bosco to the priory of Saint Bartholomew, West Smithfield, and confirmed by King Henry III. by charter, 15th June 1253. It stood on the road to Waltham Abbey, about half a mile north of Abridge. Being very small, and remote from the centre of population, it was decided in 1842 to build another church in a more central position near Theydon Green, about a mile and a half from the old site, towards Waltham Abbey.

The new church was begun in July 1843, and consecrated the 5th June 1844. Owing chiefly to defective foundations it soon showed signs of failure. Eventually it had to be pulled down, when the present church was



erected in its place, and finished in January 1851. To assist in raising the necessary funds, the old church was sold for £78, and pulled down, in or a little before 1847. Probably the old font went at the same time. It would be interesting to discover whether any part of it is now in existence, and whether this drawing is correctly described as of Theydon Bois. The present font is quite modern.

Some of the peculiarities in this old font are the quatrefoiled shape of the bowl; the rosettes along the edge of the top slab; the small nude figure at each angle; and the cherub, or winged head over the trefoiled arch on each of the four sides. Also the winged figures on the drum. The little columns at the angles, with spiral fluting, were doubtless separate stones.

Possibly some reader of the *Essex Review* may be able to throw light on the subject.

## THE ESSEX REVIEW, OUR HISTORY AND PROGRESS.

**T**HE executive body of the *ESSEX REVIEW LIMITED* having now been at work in their conduct of the Magazine for five years, it is thought that some account of progress may be interesting to subscribers and readers of the *Review*, as well as to shareholders.

As will be known to most, the *Essex Review* was founded in 1892 by Mr. Edmund Durrant, of Chelmsford, its object being 'to gather up into one publication all matters of permanent interest relating to the prosperity, history, and literature of our county. . . to conserve all materials for county history. . . and to serve generally as a record of contemporary history.' We quote from the Editorial Preface to the first volume, which has now become so scarce that its value is greatly enhanced. Under the joint editorship of Mr. Edward A. Fitch and W. H. Dalton for two years, the publication was carried on by Mr. Fitch alone until the end of 1897, when he was joined by Miss C. Fell Smith, upon whom, as county work has claimed his services more and more, an increasing share of the editorship has fallen. In 1902, shortly after Mr. Edmund Durrant's death, when it seemed as if the magazine might collapse, it was resolved by a few interested subscribers to form a small Limited Company to purchase the magazine from Mrs. Durrant, and ensure, if possible, its future maintenance. By this time its value in the county was well recognised by a certain elect number, but it did not receive, and never has received, the support such an unique organ deserves.

Fifty-five shares of £10 each were issued, and quickly subscribed for by 32 men and women who had the best interests of the county at heart, most of whom, certainly, had small hope of deriving any pecuniary gain. Initial expenses and lack of support heavily handicapped the Company for three years. At the end of 1904, it became a question whether the concern should be wound up, or drastic economies introduced and a further effort be made to secure support. The last course was tried first, and with it came the turn in fortunes. The shareholders will feel amply repaid for their time of waiting, if present hopes are realised. But it still remains for all who value the

*Review* to support it by contributing notes and articles of interest, and by soliciting fresh subscribers.

The ordinary general meeting for 1907 was held by the kindness of the Chairman, at the offices of the Essex County Council, 1, Broad Street Place, on 9th December, the Bishop of Barking in the chair. The audited accounts for 1905-6 were examined, and the following Report was unanimously adopted.

#### REPORT, 1907.

In reporting generally to the shareholders on the year's work, the Directors consider they have a decidedly hopeful outlook to place before them. The trading account for the year 1904 showed a loss of £55 os. 11d., but the trading accounts for the two following years, 1905-6, showed a profit of £54 12s. 3d. on the two years. The directors may hope, therefore, with strict economy and a lively attention to the conduct of the *Review*, that the corner of the ways is at last turned.

The Balance Sheet now shows a sum of £208 11s. 7d. on the wrong side, so that it must probably still be some years before a dividend can be declared. But the Directors hope, if the increased circulation of the last three years continues, a dividend may be even nearer than at present can be safely anticipated. They are, however, much hampered in the working of the magazine by the very large amount of subscriptions in arrear.

Since its incorporation, the company has lost seven valuable members and founders; their shares, with one exception, are held by their representatives, and none of the original shareholders has parted with his holding except through death.

---

For the information of new subscribers, we may add that the Board of Directors is composed of the same five original members elected in 1902, viz.:

Mr. W. Gurney Benham,  
Mr. Fred. Chancellor,  
Mr. Miller Christy,  
Mr. Edward A. Fitch, and  
The Bishop of Barking, Chairman.

Miss C. Fell Smith has always acted as Secretary.

## NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

**New Registers for the County.** THE figures of the new voting register for 1908 show an increase in all divisions, and are given by the Clerk of the Peace for the county as under :—

Division.	Total number of names.	Increase.	Parliamentary Electors.	Increase.
Southern or Romford .....	53,404	... 1,792	... 49,065	... 1,424
South-Western or Wal- thamstow .....	44,138	... 1,656	... 39,285	... 1,459
South-Eastern .....	25,418	... 1,305	... 22,732	... 1,169
North Eastern or Harwich	16,763	... 171	... 13,741	... 176
Mid or Chelmsford .....	14,981	... 251	... 12,539	... 254
Eastern or Maldon .....	14,326	... 360	... 11,168	... 255
Western or Epping.....	14,143	... 195	... 11,812	... 155
Northern or Saffron Wal- den .....	10,665	... 36	... 8,911	... 11
Totals.....	193,843	5,765	169,253	4,903

**Master Masonic Lodge.** A MASONIC LODGE to be called the Essex Masters Lodge, 3256, was consecrated on 27th November at Colchester. The Provincial Grand Master, Colonel Right Hon. Mark Lockwood, M.P., the Deputy Provincial Grand Master, Dr. J. H. Salter, the Very Worshipful Chaplain (Bishop of Barking), and many others were present. The Lodge was dedicated and founders' jewels presented.

**Colchester Hospital.** THE corner stone of the new children's ward was laid on 27th November with Masonic rites. Three silver trowels were presented to the stone layers—Colonel Mark Lockwood, Mrs. Deacon, of Halstead, and Mr. W. Hewitt, of Dedham. The Provincial Grand Chaplain, Bishop of Barking, offered prayer. The Chairman of the Hospital Committee, Colonel Tyssen Holroyd, proposed thanks to the Provincial Grand Master and the other Freemasons, who contributed handsome offerings on the stone.

**River Pollution.** A CONFERENCE MEETING, convened under the auspices of the Essex Field Club, was held in the Municipal Technical Institute, Stratford, on 14th Dec. 1907, the Mayor of West Ham (Councillor J. R. Moore-Smith, J.P.) in the chair at the beginning, and subsequently the president of the Essex Field Club (Mr. Miller Christy, F.L.S.), to consider the subject of 'River Pollution from the Naturalist's Point of View.' There were present naturalists, geologists, meteorologists, manufacturers, sanitary officers, and representatives of Water Boards and of County and Borough Councils. The subject was introduced by Professor R. Meldola, F.R.S. (past-president of the Chemical Society). Among the speakers were Mr. E. B. Barnard, M.P. (chairman, Works Committee, London Water Board), Mr. David Howard, J.P., F.C.S. (past-president, Society of Chemical Industry), Mr. Kent (Bishop Stortford Urban District Council), Dr. Parsons (Local Government Board), Sir Alexander Pedler, K.C.I.E., F.R.S. (hon. secretary, British Science Guild), Mr. J. Brook Pike (chemical expert, London County Council), Professor Sir William Ramsay, K.C.B., F.R.S. (president, Chemical Society, and chairman, Royal Commission on Sewage Disposal), Dr. Sanders (medical officer of health, County Borough of West Ham), Dr. Somerville (lecturer on Public Health, King's College, London), Mr. J. C. Thresh, M.D., D.Sc. (Medical Officer of Health, Essex County Council), and Mr. J. Mackworth Wood, C.E.

The following resolution was moved by Sir Alexander Pedler, F.R.S., seconded by Mr. E. B. Barnard, M.P., carried unanimously, and ordered to be transmitted to the Local Government Board and the British Science Guild :—

'That this meeting, having heard the expert testimony of many qualified speakers interested in the improvement of the state of our rivers, streams and waterways, is of opinion that legislative action is urgently needed, and would regard with satisfaction the creation of a Central Authority under Government for dealing with the general question of Water Supply throughout the Kingdom, as well as with the disposal of Sewage and of Effluents from Factories; such Central Authority to be given power to apportion expenditure on sewage treatment, or other necessary work of purification, amongst the communities deriving benefit from such expenditure.'

**Church Restorations, &c.** **BLACKMORE.**—On Oct. 22 a service was held by the Bishop of Barking to dedicate the new east wall and window which have been added to the church by an anonymous donor. The window is of three lights, representing in the centre the Crucifixion, in the north light the holy women, in the south St. John, Joseph of Arimathea, and the centurion. The oak screen has also been carried further across the aisles, forming a side-chapel, where daily service is held. This is the fourth stage of the complete restoration which has been carried out in the church under the direction of Mr. Chancellor during recent years. The dedication service was conducted by the vicar, Rev. W. Layton Petrie, a processional hymn was sung, and a confirmation service was afterwards held by the Bishop.

**PLAISTOW.**—Another new church has been erected in Hermit Road, making the 26th erected in the borough of West Ham since 1845. It is dedicated to St. Matthias, and was consecrated recently by the Bishop of St. Albans.

**LAINDON HILLS.**—A Mission Hall and Church Institute have been erected on the station side of the Hills, the rapid growth of that portion of the parish making this a very necessary adjunct to St. Mary's parish church. The nucleus of the fund was a legacy by the late rector, Rev. T. Robinson, a site was given by Mr. Isaac Levy, and other gifts have been received. The Hall was formally opened and dedicated by the Bishop of Barking at an evening service on 20th November, a social reception having been held in the afternoon by the rector, Rev. Gordon F. H. Llewellyn.

**EPPING.**—A new tower is about to be added to the church of St. John Baptist, Epping, as the gift of Mr. E. J. Wythes, J.P., of Copped Hall. The foundation stone was laid by Mrs. Wythes on Dec. 4. It bears the following inscription:—

Ad Gloriam Majorem Dei. The foundation stone of this tower, the gift of E. J. Wythes, of Copped Hall, erected 1907-8, was laid by Aline Wythes on Dec. 4, 1907. "A city set on a hill cannot be hid."

A service was afterwards held in the church, when an address was given by the Bishop of Colchester.

**TENDRING.**—A new peal of six bells has been added to the church, and was dedicated on 10 Dec. by the Bishop of St.

Albans. The four old bells, dated 1627(2), 1618, 1624 (see *E.R.* vi., 47), being worn out, were melted down and re-cast. The Cardinall family; the churchwardens, F. W. Clarke and W. Marvin Tricker; the rector, Rev. Arnold Page, and his wife, his brothers and sisters, have all contributed largely to the bells, and other restorations in the church have been joined in by almost every household in the parish, including many Wesleyans.

GREAT BURSTEAD.—St. Mary's Church, having been renovated, was reopened for service and dedicated on Dec. 12 by the Bishop of the diocese. The fine oak cross-beams of the roof have been laid bare, the oak porch has been scraped and oiled, and the tiling of the exterior attended to. A short form of evensong was read by the Vicar, Rev. J. Denton Hart, and the Bishop preached the sermon, in which he referred to the tablet inscribed with names of vicars for 600 years. The choir was augmented by an orchestra of strings, and the musical part of the service was thoroughly well carried out.

COLCHESTER.—St. Giles' Church was re-opened after re-building and restoration on Dec. 19, when the Mayor and Corporation attended in state, and the Bishop of Colchester was the preacher. The Lucas Chapel has been completely restored to its original condition by gifts from the Lucas family and others. Here the Royalists, Sir Charles Lucas and Sir George Lisle, were interred, after being shot in the Castle bailey by the Parliamentarians, on the surrender of the town at the close of the siege in 1648.

THE REV. E. N. POWELL, formerly a curate at Chelmsford, and recently vicar of St. Stephen's, Upton Park, has been nominated Bishop of Mashonaland, and on 17 Dec. was presented by the clergy and congregation of St. Stephen's with a handsome episcopal ring, a pectoral gold cross, a silver pastoral staff and other gifts. The presentation was made by the Bishop of Colchester.

ON 18 Dec. deputations from seven Essex towns claiming to be the site of the new Cathedral waited upon the Executive Committee of the Essex Bishopric Fund at the Church House, Westminster. The Bishop of St. Albans presided. The deputations were headed as follows:—Colchester, the Mayor, Mr. Wilson Marriage; Chelmsford, Canon Lake; Barking, Rev. W. Eisdell, vicar; West Ham, the Mayor and Mr. C. H.



Masterman, M.P.; Thaxted, Rev. L. S. Westall, vicar, Mr. A. P. Humphrey, and Rev. H. Symonds; Woodford, Mr. Andrew Johnston; West Ham, Sir T. Fowell Buxton. The hearing occupied five hours. A sub-committee consisting of the Bishop of St. Albans, Canon the Hon. Kenneth Gibbs, and the Hon. Richard Strutt, was afterwards appointed to prepare a statement setting out the claims of each, which is to be circulated in every parish in the county before Jan. 10, the Committee to meet again on Feb. 10, to receive replies.

**Obituaries.** THE REV. HENRY MAWSON MILLIGAN, vicar of Althorne and rector of Creeksea, died on 6th October in his ninetieth year. He was the oldest incumbent in the county, and had held the joint benefices since 1861. He was born in London on 6th November 1817, educated at Uxbridge, Eton, and St. Catherine's College, Cambridge, where he graduated in 1844. He was ordained in 1846, and held his first curacies in Warwickshire and Staffordshire. In 1848 he was appointed Headmaster of the Grammar School at Sutton Valence, Kent, belonging to the Worshipful Company of Clothworkers, where he remained fourteen years before coming to Althorne. Both the parish churches in his living were restored during his incumbency, the Vicarage of Althorne was built, and a couple of years ago he opened a new parish room in Althorne. He had been an invalid for nearly two years, and died peacefully in his sleep. He was twice married and leaves a widow and five young children. The funeral took place at Althorne on 12 October, the vicar of Tillingham, Rev. W. C. Miller, conducting the service.

MR. WILLIAM ROME, F.S.A., J.P., C.C., died on 20th October, at his residence, Creeksea Place, Burnham-on-Crouch, in his 65th year. A son of Mr. Andrew Rome, an Inspector in the Essex Constabulary, he was born at Burnham in 1842, attended the National School there, and entered the business of Sweetings, fishmongers in the city, as quite a lad. He rose to be senior partner in the firm, and for 25 years was a member of the Corporation of the City of London, Chairman of many of its Committees, and one of the initiators in the matter of the Guildhall Art Gallery Exhibitions. He qualified as J.P. for Essex in January 1903, and in 1904 was elected to represent Southminster on the Essex County Council. He was President of the Essex

Agricultural Show at Southend in 1905, a member of the Kent and Essex Sea Fisheries Committee, Fellow of numerous learned Societies, and a member of the Council of the City and Guilds of London Institute. He restored the old manor house of Creeksea (built in 1569) to much of its original condition, and filled it with valuable antiquities from many parts of the world. Mr. Rome was buried in Burnham Cemetery on 25th October.

Mr. CHARLES FITCH KEMP, who died on 31st October at his Kentish home, was an Essex man, and during the early part of his life was identified with his native county, although not resident therein. Born on 29th June 1829, at Northwick, Southminster, son of John and Mary Kemp, Mr. Fitch Kemp was educated at Ongar Grammar School, and passed thence to the East India College. Forty-three years ago he took up his residence at Hildenborough, where he acquired an estate, built a house, and became closely connected with the church, the school, institute, and cricket and Rifle Clubs of the village. He was J.P. and D.L. for Kent, president of the County Cricket Club, a true sportsman, a broad-minded Conservative, and an ideal country squire. To Mr. Fitch Kemp, the *Essex Review* owes a debt of hearty gratitude; he took in it a keen interest from the first, became a considerable shareholder when our company was formed, and has generously conducted the annual audit of accounts ever since. He was the head of one of the best known firms of chartered accountants in the city, in which two of his six sons are now partners. Another son is a master at Harrow, and there are six daughters.

The Rev. JOHN HUBERT WARE, vicar of East Ham and rural dean of Barking, died on 6th December at Minehead, Somersetshire, in his 45th year. He was a son of the Rev. J. M. Ware, of Ullingswick, Herefordshire, and was elected to a Somerset Scholarship and a Philpott Exhibition at Brasenose College, Oxford, whence he graduated in 1886. He was ordained priest in 1888 by the Bishop of Norwich (Dr. Pelham), becoming curate of Great Yarmouth, of which Archdeacon Donne was then vicar. Lord William Cecil was one of his fellow-curates. In 1892 he moved to Poplar, under the Rev. A. Chandler, now Bishop of Bloemfontein. In 1893, Brasenose College appointed him vicar of East Ham, a parish of 23,000 people. He had been rural dean since 1900.

## NOTES AND QUERIES.

**Windmills round Little Dunmow.**—In connection with articles in the last issue (*E.R.*, xvi., pp. 179-182 and 184-195), treating of the picturesque old Essex windmills, now so nearly obsolete, it may be of interest to record that, about the year 1874 or 1875, one such mill, which stood in the neighbourhood of Sawbridgeworth, was taken down, transported some twelve miles, and re-erected on Throw's Farm in this parish of Little Dunmow.

The workmen engaged in rebuilding the mill were able to see from the top of it no fewer than fourteen other windmills—namely, those at Stebbing (three),\* Lindsell,\* Rayne, Brain-tree,\* Felstead (Cock Green), Little Canfield,\* High Roothing,\* Dunmow (Town Mill), Great Easton (Mole-hill Green), Broxted, Little Saling, and Shalford.\* Moreover, yet another mill (the fifteenth) existed nearer than most of those named—in Dead-man's or Tedman's Lane, Dunmow; but it happened that this could not be seen.

The mill in question still stands, being worked for the production of meal by Messrs. Hasler and Clapham, of Dunmow; but of the fourteen others which could be seen from its top, no fewer than *eight* (those marked with an asterisk in the foregoing list) are now down altogether or are no longer working, while another has lost its sails and is worked by a gas engine. Further, not a single one of the whole lot is now engaged in grinding wheat flour.—HASTINGS WORRIN, Bouchiers, Little Dunmow.

**Essex Boundaries.**—A friend in a distant county asks me whether there exists in Essex 'a really old survey or perambulation, say, at least 200 years old.' On a farm in Castle Camps, Cambs., there is an oak in a peculiar position, which was, according to some papers in the possession of the rector, held in 1730 to be unquestionably the boundary, at the apex of an angle somewhat like this:— $\sphericalangle$  (A. oak tree), between Castle Camps in Cambs. and Bartlow hamlet in Essex. It is not a large tree, nor apparently very old, but my friend desires to find out when and how it first came to be recognised as a bond-mark in the boundary between the two counties. He believes the real boundary between the hamlet of Bartlow and the poor-law parish of Ashdon, of which, *e.g.* for land tax, it forms a part, is

by no means certainly defined, but that this difficulty affects nothing within half-a-mile of the tree he mentions.—ANDREW JOHNSTON, Woodford.

**The Quarters of the Roads.**—My work takes me about among the rustics of mid-Essex, and teaches me many strange words and expressions. The two about which I write now are well known to all who deal much with rural labourers, but they are ancient and interesting. Among my parishioners is an old man of eighty-four, bedridden from the loss of use of his limbs, but hearty—his normal meal is of bread and cheese and raw onions—and quaint exceedingly. I tell him, I never go to see him without learning something worth learning. Lately, we talked about the state of the roads in old times. We grumble at our roads now, but we of this generation little know what they were sixty years ago. ‘Why,’ he said, ‘I remember Muster F—, when he used to ride here on his donkey from Pleshey, he could touch the quarters with his feet anywhere.’ I said, ‘What do you mean by the quarters?’ ‘Why, the quarters of the road, alongside the rakes. There ain’t no quarters now, the roads are so flat.’ ‘What are the rakes?’ ‘Why, the places where the wheels go.’ ‘Didn’t they ever mend the roads?’ ‘Mend the roads! they used to put a few stones on out of the fields, and cart sticks out of the hedges and lay ‘em in the rakes.’ Imagine such a road! In the middle a depression two feet deep, or deeper, in which the horse travelled, on each side an elevation (‘quarter’), then the ‘rakes’ (wheel ruts), two feet deep, and outside the two other ‘quarters.’

Here are two good old words. Rake is an old Norse word meaning streak, track, imported into Scotland and Northern England. I wonder how it got here. You have it, I suppose, in Skager Rak, the channel between Southern Norway and Northern Denmark. The north point of Denmark is Skagen, the Scaw we call it. Quarter, in this sense, is defined in the *Oxford Dictionary* as ‘one of the four parts into which a road is divided by the horse-track and the wheel-ruts.’ The earliest instance given is ‘1767 A. Young, Lett. to People (1771) I. 445. A road . . . upon which the track may vary, without having quarters a yard high to cross.’—EDWARD GEPP, High Easter Vicarage.

**A Maldon Coparcenary.**—Maldon's 'Record Book, 1574-1661,' fol. 29, contains a well-stated instance of the complications possible when heritable property became vested in co-heiresses, and of the steps taken to simplify the question of ownership. On the death of John Browne *alias* New, and his wife Margaret, a number of detached properties in Maldon became vested in Grace, wife of Peter Jarvis, yeoman, of Maldon; Margaret, wife of William Burles, yeoman, of Maldon; and Mary, wife of John Pagett, linen-draper, of Maldon, jointly, as co-heiresses. These three, and their husbands, agreed that it was of advantage at once to terminate the coparcenary, by giving to each the individual ownership of one-third of the estate. They chose William Vernon, gentleman, Maldon; John Burles, gentleman, of Little Leighs; and John Morrys, woollen-draper, of Maldon, to effect an equitable division. On 20 February 1586-7, these three appeared before the borough court, to state the division they had made, and their method of arriving at it:—

FYRST, havinge departed, devyded, and sett foorth the same intoo three severall partes, accordinge to the nombre of the said systers and co-heires, to the good lykyng and contentation of all and everye the said parties (as well of the husbands as of the said wyves), wee did wryte the said three severall partes of all the messuages, lands, etc., in three several scrowes [scrolls], and covered the said scrowes all over with waxe and made them into three lyttyll balls, and put them all into one bonnett in an indifferent [i.e., impartial] man's hande, and ordred that the three systers should take (one after the other) one of the said three balls of waxe in the bonnett, and all such messuages, etc., as were fownde in the scrowe so inclosed within the said ball of waxe, she to have and enjoye the same in severaltie to her, her husband, and the heires of her, in full allowance for her parte of all the lands, etc.

WHEREUPON, Mary Pagett (beinge the yongest syster and co-heire) accordinge to the aunycient custome of Maldon did choose the first ball of waxe, wherein was wrapped one of the scrowes, in which was conteyned, wrytten, and sett downe, one messuage, with two curtilages, and one garden in St. Peter's parish;

SECONDLY, Margaret Burles chose one other of the balls of

wax, wherein was wrapped one other of the scrowes in which was conteyned one messuage, with a curtilage, called 'Palmer's,' in St. Peter's parish; and another messuage, with a curtilage and a garden, in St. Mary's parish; and another messuage, with a garden, called 'Collin's,' in St. Peter's parish, and a rent-charge of 6s. 8d. yearly issuing out of a parcel of land called Little Wynterslade, in All Saints' parish.

AND, LASTLY, Grace Jarvis tooke the thirde and last ball of waxe, wherein was wrapped the thirde scrowe, in which was conteyned a messuage, with a curtilage, and a garden, called 'The Checquer,' in All Saints' parish; and another messuage, with a curtilage, also in All Saints' parish, and the parcel of land (subject to above rent-charge) called Little Wynterslade.

The Court ratified these arrangements and ordered them to be engrossed in its records.—(Rev.) A. CLARK, LL.D., Great Leighs.

**A Reputed Centenarian.**—In the Burials Register of Great Leighs, vol. iii., fol. 39, is the entry:—'1731, July 9th, Peter Wingfield was buried. N.B.—He was 71 years of age, and left behind him his mother, living in Boreham, in her 106th year.' We have some means of testing this report. On 24th December, 1609, Sarah, daughter of Richard Adams, was baptised in Great Leighs. On 26th July 1632, she married Peter Wingfield, and the Peter Wingfield, who died 1731, might be her son. By 1731, however, she would have been 122 years of age. The reputed centenarian appears thus to be a step-mother, and her great age questionable.

**Daniel Harvey, of Wivenhoe.**—Daniel Harvey, Commander of the Wivenhoe Custom House cutter, was at Wivenhoe in 1768, and was buried there in 1793. His wife's name was Elizabeth. Who were her parents, and where was she married? He was not born there, nor were his two children born there. His descendants are known, but it is desired to find his parents. His arms were a chevron between three leopards' heads cabossed, which are the same as those of the Dagenham Harveys, but I have not yet been able to trace a connection. Any assistance towards that end, I should be grateful for.—G. S. PARRY (Lieut.-Colonel), 18, Hyde Gardens, Eastbourne:

**George Harvey, of Maldon.**—I am endeavouring to trace a certain George Harvey, of Maldon, and at present have only the following data upon which to work. In my possession is a copy of a Confirmation of Arms granted in 1603 to this George Harvey, from which an extract is below appended. I should be very glad to receive any information about either of the two Harveys mentioned therein or their forefathers.

To all and singular Noble and Gentilmenne . . . Wm. Derricke, Garter, principalle King of Arms of England, and William Camden, alias Clarencieux, King of Arms. . . . The Grante of, or testimonies whereof, appertaineth unto us in vntue of our offices from the Kings most excellent Majesty and His Highnesse's most noble and victorious Progenitors, whereof being solicited and by certaine reports informed that *George Harvey, now of the Towne of Maldon in the County of Essex, youngest of four sonnes of Roger Harvey, whose father for approved services to her late most excellent Princess Elizabeth, Queene of England, of famous memorie, was advanced and rewarded with Landes and Tenementes in those parts of Essex, where they have continued by many descentes and been Magistraie in good regimission and Credit, and for that the said George Harvey, having been, ny the King's Highnesse, made a Captain in the troopes now raising for the good service of his Highnesse in the Kingdom of Ireland and having produced to us his anciente Coate of Armmes heretofore assigned unto him. . . . We, the said Garter and Clarencieux, have assigned, granted and confirmed . . . unto the said George Harvey and his posterity: that shield and Coat of Arms namely:—On a shield of Gules, a bend dexter argent charged with three Trefoiles vert, and, for his crest or cognisance, a Lion proper holding in his dexter paw a Trefoil vert, fixed on a Helmet with Mantelloes and Tassels. . . . In witness whereof . . . Wee have subscribed and fastened the Seals of our offices. Given at the Office of Armmes at London, the third day of December, in the first year of the reign of our most Gracious Sovereigne Lord James Kinge of England . . . and so forth, 1603.*

Captain G. H. HARVEY, A.S.C., Woolwich.

#### MALDON CHURCH GOODS.

Omnium Sanctorum	}	JOHN COLE	}	gard.
[All Saints]				
Malden	}	JOHN BURTON	}	[Churchwardens]

They want a Comma. Cupp & a Clothe.

Comp<sup>t</sup>. [appeared] Burton gard. [churchwarden] et juratus est, & saith that Thos. Webb, late churchw<sup>dn</sup>, is gone owte of the parishe, & carried awaye the cuppe & clothe, & (it is thereupon ordered) that because they haue not used that direct means w<sup>ch</sup> lawe requireth, to recover the same cupp & clothe, the churchw<sup>dn</sup> shall call a vestry & shall make a rate & provide a cupp & cloth . . . —*Liber Actorum.* vol. 37. fol. 103; A.D. 1598.

R, H. BROWNE.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS, &c.

*Stephen Marshall, a Forgotten Essex Puritan*, by E. Vaughan.  
London: Arnold, Fairbairns and Company, Limited.  
MCMVII. Pp. 135, crown 8vo. Illustrated from photographs. Price 2s. 6d.

THIS is an account of the famous divine who was humorously called by Dean Stanley 'the Primate of the Presbyterian Church.' His position as chaplain to the Long Parliament, and as one of the most prominent members of the Westminster Assembly, brought him into the first rank of those churchmen who dissented from Laud and his innovations.

An East Anglian, born at Godmanchester, Marshall was a typical example of the poor scholar of humble birth (his father was a glover) who passed from gleaning in the fields with his sister, to Cambridge, and thence to the service of the Church. Marshall entered Emanuel College, that nursery of Puritanism; he was presented to the lectureship at Wethersfield on the death of Richard Rogers, married, while there, Susanna Castell, of Woodham Walter, and had three daughters. In 1625 he was promoted to be vicar of the adjoining parish of Finchingfield, where he remained in charge for five and twenty years. For ten of them, however, while events were stirring in London, Marshall left the large country parish chiefly in the hands of Hugh Glover (who after his death succeeded as vicar) and betook himself to the capital, where his thundering oratory was much in demand. Dorothy Osborne comments on his preaching at Westminster Abbey, and in his 'bull-like' voice, he delivered one favourite sermon, 'Curse ye Meroz' (on p. 30 'Merox') as many as fifty times. In the Abbey he was buried with great honour, at his death in 1655, only to be cast out in 'the violent extirpation' that succeeded the Restoration.

Miss Vaughan dedicates her book to the memory of her father, the Rev. Matthew Vaughan, vicar of Finchingfield for many years. It has been a labour of love to her to describe the quaint village, its handsome church, and the many manor houses and small country seats that abound in the district, and to enter into the associations of each. She has devoted herself to the study of Marshall's history in the most untiring manner, and has produced a capital little volume



of strong local interest, written with ease and in a scholarly manner, brightened here and there with a racy line or a touch of lively humour. The chief authorities for Marshall's life are an anonymous and highly vituperative pamphlet, called in high derision *The Godly Man's Legacy to the Saints on Earth*, and an answer to it, written by Marshall's friend and sometime neighbour, Giles Firmin, vicar of Shalford. One of these is to be received with much caution and with due allowance for the fierce party and polemical feeling of the times, the other, with its professed object of being a *Brief Vindication*, errs, perhaps, on the other side. Miss Vaughan has laboured among many other authorities of the period, all of whom profess stout adhesion to one side, with scant understanding the other. The committee appointed by the Parliament for inquiring into scandalous ministers was by no means inclined to underrate such enormities as bagging hops on Sundays or pitching corn on Saturday, 'at night, when it were better the minister were in his study'; but on the other hand Walker is also prone in his pro-Royalist *Sufferings of the Clergy* to attribute laxity and cruelty to his enemies, the independent and presbyterian ministers whom he never counted within the pale of the church at all. Perhaps it was hardly worth while to revive the old stories (printed once for all in the well worn pages of David's *Evangelical Nonconformity in Essex*) of drunken ministers and poaching priests; and the history of forgotten disputes and brawls in Thaxted about Parson Hall, from one of the innumerable tracts of the times, which occupies some ten pages, might have given place to some more spicy details of the adventures of Marshall's daughters, Beck and Anne, who as Pepys tells us, went on the stage and were noted for their 'mighty fine acting.' Miss Vaughan misses the point of the curious anagram adopted by the writers of that quaint pamphlet issued in 1640-1, under the name of Smectymnuus, when she prints in every case 'Smectymnus'. Marshall's were the first initials, and the last were those of William Spurstow 'double u, s,' as an old writer tells us. The 'a' in Wethersfield is archaic. The eighteen small illustrations are excellent, and the quotations and reproduced page from the town book of Finchingfield about the repair of Petches Bridge, are among the most valuable things in the volume. It is a pity there is no Index.

*The Houblon Family : Its Story and Times.* By Lady ALICE ARCHER HOUBLON. Two vols., London. Archibald Constable and Company, Ltd., 1907, pp. xi., 382; ix., 332. Price 31s. 6d.

THESE two handsome volumes, which Lady Alice Archer Houblon has filled with the history of her family, make the most delightful and interesting reading, and are packed with the stuff of history—of England at large, and of Essex in particular. At the end of the fifteenth century, one of the De Houbelons migrated from Picardy to the busy town of Lille in Flanders. The family here founded by him soon became rich and prosperous, but with thunder clouds of religious persecutions looming in the air, the grandsons of this De Houbelon were wise in crossing over to England, to found there an important and leading firm of 'Merchant Strangers,' trading with Flanders and backed by substantial funds. Other refugees joined them, became naturalised subjects, supported their own Walloon Church in Threadneedle Street, married among their own community, and strengthened the growth of puritanism in the country of their adoption. Some additional facts of residence, possessions, etc., of these brothers, Pierre and Nicholas, will, we fancy, be found in the Huguenot Society's *Index to Aliens*, shortly to appear.

During the civil wars, the representative of the family, James Houblon, was a man of great importance, closely connected with the Royal Exchange, and the negotiator of loans to the Parliament, which were acknowledged by a grant of 2,000 acres of land in Ireland. James and his five sons were all merchants, mentioned often by the convivial Pepys. When he died in 1682, nearly ninety years of age, James Houblon bore the proud title of '*Pater Bursae Londinensis.*' In his old age, he retired from city life to a country home near Wanstead, thus beginning the connection with Essex which has lasted ever since. His son Jacob, born in 1634, was the sole exception in a race of men exclusively absorbed in business, and even he was partly so engaged. He turned to the English church, became a fellow of Peterhouse, Cambridge, took orders at the Restoration, married, and became rector of Moreton, in Essex. His grandmother had been a La Motte, and one of Jacob's own sponsors was his rela'

Esther, Lady Honeywood, wife of Sir Thomas. From this Essex son, Jacob, the present representatives of the Houblon Family are descended. A beautiful miniature of him as a young man, painted by Samuel Cooper in his most highly finished style, is preserved at Hallingbury Place, and forms the frontispiece to the first volume.

Jacob ministered to his flock at Moreton for thirty-six years, died there in December 1698, aged 64, and lies buried in the chancel of the church. Another of the brothers, Sir James, built himself a house near Wanstead, called Forest House, which Lady Alice says is now an adjunct to West Ham Workhouse, used for the accommodation of old and respectable paupers. Sir John, the third brother, was Lord Mayor of London 1695; he was also a Lord of the Admiralty, and the first Governor of the newly-established Bank of England, having, as colleagues on the board, three other Houblons. These commercial princes came forward to face the financial crisis of the time, and by their energy, prudence and foresight were able to avert the imminent ruin of 1696 and 1697, and this notwithstanding the very heavy loss of property which the great fire of London had entailed on them in 1666.

Sir John had two children: Anne, who married Sir Henry Temple, created first Viscount Palmerston, and became the great grandmother of the famous statesman; and Richard, knighted by George I. in 1715. Sir Richard never married. He was the last of the merchant princes of his name. He saw approaching an industrial problem, and determined 'to carve out new duties and surroundings for those who were to follow him.' Agriculture had revived under the corn bounties, and a new race of landowners began to invade the counties. Sir Richard set his heart upon founding a race of country squires, and left his large fortune in trust for the purchase of estates to be added to land he already owned in Essex and Hertfordshire and entailed upon his first cousin's child, Jacob Houblon, who at the time of his death (1724) was aged six years.

The rector of Moreton, above mentioned, had two sons, (1) Charles, a merchant in London, who purchased Bobbingworth Hall and died young in 1711, leaving this infant son; and (2) Jacob, a parson like his father, and rector of Bobbingworth. On him devolved the guardianship of the

young Jacob (he had no child of his own) and the carrying out of the family trust. Very faithfully did he fulfil both. In 1729, Hallingbury Place was purchased; in 1735 he saw his nephew elected M.P. for Colchester, and married to the only daughter of Sir John Hynde Cotton, of Madingley, Cambs.; a year later he stood godfather by proxy to an heir—the fourth Jacob—and then he was gathered to his fathers and buried at Bobbingworth, leaving this simple will ‘I leave you my nephew J. Houblon, my sole executor.’

We cannot follow in detail the story of this family much farther, but can strongly recommend lovers of biography and history to follow it themselves in the author's most vivid narrative. She has succeeded in completing a work of the utmost importance, in which there is never a dull page, whether in the first volume, occupied as it largely is with the history of the flight from persecution abroad, and the founding of the commercial houses in a new soil; or in the second volume, where the Essex life of the Houblons is more particularly described. The chapter entitled ‘Home’ is a perfect picture of English country life in the eighteenth century; Hallingbury and its library, the surrounding forest of Hatfield Broad Oak, with its famous Doodle Oak and its rights and keepers; the estate, its farms and neighbours are each dwelt upon in turn. Of Down Hall and Matthew Prior, Lady Alice writes: ‘Tradition says that its cut alleys of hornbeam have the ancient Doodle Oak of Hatfield Forest in their line of sight; but as they are many miles apart, and Essex is *not flat* thereabouts, we will not vouch for that tale.’

Hallingbury was rebuilt after the old squire's death in 1770. It, of course, contains a store of portraits, miniatures, manuscripts, and family records upon which to draw, and the pages of these two well illustrated volumes are enlivened by many racy letters and beautiful faces. Perhaps none is more captivating than that of Mary Anne Bramston, of Skreens, who married John Archer Houblon, only son of the fourth Jacob. The story ends with the death in 1891 of their son, the Squire of the same name, so well remembered by many now living. The book is an Essex classic, worthy to rank beside Lady Verney's well-known histories of her house of Claydon, Buckinghamshire. Nowhere can we recall a volume relat-

to our county so packed with the doings of an Essex family, or showing so remarkable an insight into the economic and industrial and agricultural history of the past three centuries.

*The Memoirs of Ann Lady Fanshawe*, wife of the Right Hon. Sir Richard Fanshawe, Bart., 1600-72 reprinted from the original manuscript in the possession of Mr. Evelyn John Fanshawe, of Parsloes, with four photogravure portraits and twenty-nine other reproductions. Pp. xlii., 617, 6 sheets of pedigree, demy 8vo., London and New York (John Lane), MCMVII. Price 16s. net.

Most of our readers are doubtless well acquainted with the interesting *Memoirs* of Ann Lady Fanshawe, written by the wife of the Right Hon. Sir Richard Fanshawe, Bart., as long ago as 1676 (the latter pages have been removed and probably destroyed, so we now have only the record from 1600 to 1672), edited by Sir Harris Nicolas, and published in 1829 and 1830. This edition was printed from a copy of the original, and was known to abound with errors.

We now have quite an *edition de luxe*, fully illustrated and amply annotated, with elaborate pedigrees of the family; in fact, in the Introductory Note, the editor, Mr. H. C. Fanshawe, apologises for the undue length of the notes. These extend to no less than 336 pages of too small type, apart from the five appendices and an addenda. The great interest of this fine volume is that it relates to a prolific Derbyshire family, who have been owners of Parsloes in Dagenham, now unfortunately desolate and neglected, for nearly 300 years. The elder branch was settled at Jenkins, Barking, which Henry Fanshawe purchased in 1567, but that fine old manor house has long since disappeared, the modern house of the Manor farm occupying its site. There is not a great deal of Essex interest in the *Memoirs* themselves, although Sir Richard and Lady Fanshawe were Essex landowners, and frequently visited their cousins at Jenkins and Parsloes in this county. Sir Richard Fanshawe was the tenth child and fifth and youngest son of Sir Henry Fanshawe, whose father bought Jenkins in Essex, and Ware Park in Herts, where Sir Richard was born in June 1608. Sir Thomas Fanshawe, who lived at Jenkins, was Clerk of the Crown and Surveyor General to James I. His brother William, of Parsloes, was

Auditor of the Duchy of Lancaster. His eldest daughter married Sir Christopher Hatton, and his second, Sir Benjamin Ayloff, of Braxted. Ann Lady Fanshawe was the eldest daughter of Sir John Harrison, of Balls, Herts.

Sir Richard Fanshawe had many preferments; the authoress of the *Memoirs* tells us she lived in seven courts (p. 116), but the greater part of the memoirs relate to the years while he was ambassador to the courts of Portugal and Spain; he died at Madrid, 26th June 1666. Lady Fanshawe, who survived her husband nearly sixteen years, records the birth of six living sons and eight daughters, seventeen children are given in the pedigree; yet the memoirs were written for the edification of 'my most dear and only son.' Many journeys, with several exciting adventures, are minutely described, as are the later ceremonials while her husband was ambassador at Madrid, often the minutest details of dress are recorded.

The volume contains much varied information, personal and genealogical, of one of our oldest Essex families, and is thus of exceptional interest to Essex readers, and to all students of history. It is well got up, with thirty-nine illustrations, not of equal merit; there is an excellent Index, in which it may be observed the word 'Essex' does not occur.

*A History of Dedham.* Reprinted from *The Parish Magazine*, with appendices and a few additional chapters and paragraphs, by the Rev. Charles Alfred Jones, formerly chaplain of St. John's College, Cambridge, Vicar of Dedham and Rural Dean. Colchester: Wiles and Son, 1907. Pp. 5, 188. Crown 8vo.

THE parish magazine is often a mine of valuable local information, when it is carried on, as the Vicar of Dedham has carried on his, with contributions and aid from all sources and many hands. To reprint from past numbers in one volume all matters relating to the actual history of Dedham is an excellent thing. Mr. Jones has written many things in it himself, but the main history is from the pen of Mr. Francis M. Nichols, of Lawford Hall. Other portions, as the appendices on Matthew Newcomen and William Burkitt, who endowed the Dedham Lectureship, are by Miss C. Fell Smith. Appendix I., on the Parish Register Book of Dedham, by the Rev. Canon Tancock,

of Little Waltham, is, we think, reprinted from *The Essex Review*, but there appears no acknowledgment of this source. The account of the Grammar School, now unfortunately closed, is full, and the interesting fact is brought out that Dame Joan Clarke, who built a schoolhouse shortly before 1571, was a daughter of Stephen Dunton, clothmaker, by whose will, dated 1518, the almshouses were founded. The closing chapter on New Dedham, Massachusetts, by Rev. W. F. Cheney, Rector of a church there, is interesting.

All these valuable contributions are worth preserving in available form for reference and permanence. We cannot too highly recommend the compilation of parish histories, in however tentative and elementary a way, whether in the pages of Parish Magazines, or in more durable character, as small pamphlets or books. We, ourselves, shall be always glad to welcome to the *Essex Review*, and reprint, any such articles, or portions of books, and we shall begin in our next number with a short note on High Easter Parish in Domesday Book, from the pen of the Vicar, the Rev. Edward Gepp.

Appendix ix. of the *History of Dedham* consists of the following note on a curious inscription.

#### THE DUMB ANIMALS' PETITION.

The following is a copy of a cast-iron inscription above the door of the old Toll-gate Cottage at the foot of Gun Hill. It was written and placed there by the Rev. J. T. Hurlock, rector of Langham, who died in the year 1847:—

The Dumb Animals' Humble Petition.

Rest, driver, rest, on this steep hill,

Dumb beasts pray use with all good-will;

Goad not, scourge not with thonged whips,

Let not one curse escape your lips.

“God sees and hears.”

J. T. H. *posuit.*

The foot of this hill is a very dangerous spot for cyclists, and has of recent years been the scene of several serious accidents.







PLATE II.—THE FROST OF THE PALACE OF BEAULIEU, COMMONLY CALLED NEW HALL. 1461 Print.



THE INNER COURT.

THE  
**ESSEX REVIEW**

*A Quarterly Journal for the County.*

No. 66.]

APRIL, 1908.

VOL. XVII.

**NEW HALL, BOREHAM.**

1062—1553.

BY M. P.

**F**EW houses own a more varied record than the old Tudor mansion of New Hall, in the parish of Boreham. Such, indeed, is the historic interest associated with the place that it has been aptly called 'an epitome of English history.'

New Hall was one of the six manors into which the parish of Boreham was formerly divided (Old Hall, New Hall, Brent Hall, Porters, Culverts, and Walkfares), and its singularly inappropriate name was given to distinguish it from Old Hall, which lay nearer the church.

The manor of New Hall was given with other lands by Earl Harold, who afterwards became King, to the college of Secular Canons, which he had founded at Waltham in 1062. On account of its convenient situation almost midway between the port of Harwich and London, New Hall was frequently used as a house of entertainment for royal and distinguished persons on their way to or from the Continent. Adelais, daughter of Geoffrey, Duke of Louvain, stayed here on her way to London for her marriage to Henry I., in 1121. She is said to have written to her father that the Abbot's court at New Hall was more splendid than that of the Duke. There is a slight mistake here, either on the part of the lady, or her historian, for the Secular Canons of Waltham were governed by a Dean. His court, however, may well have been magnificent, for six manors were assigned for his support.

In 1177, Henry II. replaced the old foundation of Seculars by an Abbey of Regular Canons of St. Augustine, and New Hall, for its attractions of climate and scene, was chosen as the summer residence of 'my Lorde Abbat.'

Princess Maud, daughter of Henry H., affianced to Henry, Duke of Saxony and Bavaria, was entertained here on her way to Holland.

King John came here on his way from Dunmow, to divert his mind from an overpowering remorse. In the parish church at Little Dunmow, an alabaster memorial is still to be seen of the good and beautiful Matilda, daughter of Lord Robert Fitzwalter, who is said to have been poisoned by command of the royal profligate. Henry, a natural son of King John, obtained a grant of New Hall for a time, and led here a most disreputable life.

In 1347, John de Vere, the Lord Abbot of Waltham, entertained here, with great magnificence, Queen Philippa, wife of Edward III., after her victory over the Scots at Neville's Cross.

So much unmonastic prodigality incurred censure from Rome, and the Canons of Waltham accordingly exchanged New Hall for two manors nearer their Abbey, Copped Hall and Shingled Hall, in Epping. This exchange was effected in 1350 with Sir John de Shardelow, Knight, whose son afterwards again bartered New Hall and its appurtenances in Boreham, Springfield, Little Baddow, Little Waltham, Broomfield, and Hatfield Peverel, with Sir Henry de Coggeshall, Knight, for the manors of Bradaker in Shropham, and Holkham in Norfolk. The Coggeshalls remained in possession until 1423, when New Hall passed by marriage settlement into the hands of John de Boreham. Queen Margaret of Anjou is said to have purchased the manor by the advice of her minister, Suffolk, and to have here planned out many of her campaigns on behalf of her absent husband, Henry VI. She was visited here by her staunch ally, Cardinal Beaufort, Bishop of Winchester. After the death of her favourite minister, the Duke of Suffolk, who was murdered at sea in 1450, Margaret lost all interest in New Hall, and left it in charge of a faithful servant, Richard Alred, who was succeeded here by his son, in 1446. On the accession of Edward IV., the manor was seized as crown property by the royal usurper. At Whitsuntide, 1480, he held his court here, and New Hall became once more, for a time, a scene of disgraceful revelry on the part of the dissolute King and his courtiers.

Thomas Boteler, or Butler, Earl of Ormond, received a

grant of New Hall from Henry VII., in acknowledgment of his fidelity to the cause of Lancaster. In 1491, he was granted a license to fortify his new possession with walls and a tower, and is said to have rebuilt New Hall after the model of an ancient palace of the Kings of Ulster. He left only two daughters, of whom Margaret, the eldest, married Sir William Boleyn, of Blickling, in Norfolk, son of a former Lord Mayor of London. Their son was Sir Thomas Boleyn, who by his marriage with Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Howard, Duke of Norfolk, became the father of the notorious Anne Boleyn.

Henry VIII. acquired the manor of New Hall in the ninth year of his reign, as Camden has it, by exchange with Sir Thomas Boleyn, who had inherited it from his mother. Henry was so delighted with his new acquisition that he gave it the name of Beaulieu, which, however, it was not destined long to retain. He erected it into an Honour, and lavished on it many tokens of his taste for magnificence. He built a noble gatehouse, which with its turrets was so extensive as to form the south side of the great quadrangle, on the west side of which was the chapel, and on the east a building that has a very ecclesiastical appearance, as may be seen in the frontispiece. Over the gate were his arms carved in free-stone, supported by a dragon and a greyhound with this inscription underneath:—

Henricus rex octavus, rex inclitus armis,  
Magnanimus struxit hoc opus egregium.

The inscription is supported by a lion and a hawk. The arms and supporters, the foliage which forms the groundwork, the crowned rose, the crowned pomegranate above, and the same uncrowned below, but above all the royal crown itself, form a *chef d'œuvre* of the sculptor's art. The hatchment has been lately regilded and repainted, appropriate colours being chosen by Heralds' College. When the gateway was pulled down, the arms were removed to the interior of the great hall, now the convent chapel. The very inferior framework of arms, helmets, and trophies was added when the arms were placed in their present position. The stone dragon, now in the Park, was probably another ornament of the gate-way. It represents the historic Rouge Dragon of the Princes of Wales, so much affected by the Tudors, as commemorative of their supposed descent from King Arthur. Henry chose Beaulieu for

his summer residence, and entertained here, with one of the extravagant masquerades for which his court was famous, his wife, Katharine of Aragon, and his sister Mary, Queen Dowager



ARMS OF HENRY VIII., NOW IN THE GREAT HALL.

of France. He also kept here the Feast of St. George, 1524, in right royal style. Three years later Anne Boleyn returned to England after a questionable career at the French Court. She joined Queen Katharine's ladies, and spent the summer at

Beaulieu. Soon honours began to shower on Sir Thomas Boleyn. He was made Viscount Rochford on 8th June 1525, and soon after Knight of the Garter. On 24th January 1529, he was made Earl of Wiltshire. Having thus judiciously paved the way, Henry entered into negotiations with Sir Thomas Boleyn, concerning marriage with his daughter Anne. He, proving amenable, was rewarded with the dignity of Lord Privy Seal, 24th January 1530. After her union with the King, Anne frequently visited this palace and gave a magnificent ball here to celebrate the birth of her daughter Elizabeth in 1533.

Princess Mary Tudor, daughter of Henry VIII, by Katharine of Arragon, took up her abode at Beaulieu after separation from her mother in 1532. She lived in complete seclusion from the Court, finding her consolation in the companionship of her mother's friend, Margaret Pole. This admirable woman was the daughter of George, Duke of Clarence, who had been murdered in the Tower by his brother Edward IV. Margaret's only brother, young Edward Plantagenet, was legally murdered on account of his right to the throne by Henry VII. Queen Katharine always attributed this sanguinary deed to the instigation of her father, Ferdinand of Arragon, who had refused to give his daughter in marriage to Prince Arthur, as long as a male heir to the House of York was living. The unhappy Queen attributed her subsequent misfortunes to the fact that her marriage had been 'made in blood.' Meanwhile she strove to make Margaret all reparation by loading her with favours. Henry VII. gave her in marriage to Sir Richard Pole, his Master of Horse, by whom she had five children, the most eminent of whom was Reginald, afterwards Cardinal Pole, Margaret was named god-mother and State Governess to the young Princess Mary, having been given the title of Countess of Salisbury 1513, together with her brother's large estates in Hampshire, Wiltshire, and Essex. She was a widow when she began her sojourn at Beaulieu, a warm friend to Queen Katherine, a loyal upholder of her cause, and faithful guardian of her child. In September 1533, the Privy Council sent orders to Mary that she was to lay aside the title of Princess, and to retire to Hatfield, where the nursery of her infant sister Elizabeth was about to be established. The message was delivered to Mary at Beaulieu by Hussey, her chamberlain.

She replied with much spirit that 'she was not a little marvelled at his undertaking such a matter of high emprise as minishing from her state and dignity, she not doubting that she was the King's true daughter, born in good and lawful matrimony.' She afterwards wrote to the Privy Council to the same effect, and also to the King. This letter is signed: 'From your manor of



STONE DRAGON, NOW IN THE PARK.

Beaulieu. October 2. By your most humble daughter, Mary, Princess.'

In 1534, an Act of Parliament was passed, declaring Henry's marriage with Katherine null and void, that with Anne Boleyn lawful and valid; the King's issue by the first marriage was excluded from succession to the throne, that by the second entitled to inherit. The Royal Commissioners then visited Beaulieu, and dispersed Mary's household, which consisted of 160 persons. She was separated from her faithful Lady Gover-

ness, and sent to Hunsdon, as an attendant to her infant sister. Katherine of Arragon died at Kimbolton on 7th January 1536, and Anne Boleyn was executed four months later. After the King's marriage with Jane Seymour, the Princess was allowed to return to Beaulieu, and in the summer of 1538 she sent presents of 'quails and cucumbs' from her favourite palace to Queen Jane.

In 1540, Anne of Cleves was conducted hither by Thomas Cromwell, Earl of Essex, on her way to London for her marriage with Henry VIII., and in the following year Mary received yet another sorrow in the tidings of the death of her devoted Governess, Margaret Pole, who was inhumanly executed on Tower Hill, by command of Henry VIII., out of his hatred for her son, the Cardinal, Reginald Pole.

In the reign of her brother Edward VI., Mary continued to reside at Beaulieu. During his minority, she was much interfered with by the Privy Council, concerning her religion. The Emperor Charles V., her cousin, threatened to declare war with England if this continued, and in the summer of 1550 he sent ships to hover off the east coast, to be ready, in case his remonstrances were not heeded, to convey Mary to the protection of his sister, the Queen of Hungary. New Hall is only nine miles from Maldon on the Blackwater, and it was feared that Mary would make her escape by this port. The Privy Council then tried to persuade Mary that the air of Essex was not good for her. She replied that all her household were in good health, and though she had been ill herself, this was to be attributed to the fall of the leaf, when she rarely escaped an attack of illness. The complaint urged against Mary at court was that she would not have Mass with closed doors, but allowed the country folk to come to her chapel. By royal invitation Mary rode to London from Wanstead, where she was staying in the spring of 1551, to interview her brother and the Lords of his council in person. Mary there protested that her soul was God's, and she would neither change her faith, nor dissemble her opinion. She was told that the King did not constrain her faith, but insisted that she should obey like a subject and not rule like a sovereign. As Mary remained inflexible, offering to lay her head on the block rather than submit, Cranmer decided that 'Though to give license to sin, was sin, yet to suffer and wink at it for a time



might be borne, so all haste possible were used.' Edward then yielded, but in tears, and the brother and sister parted amicably next day. Mary returned to Beaulieu, where she was allowed to have her Mass, without further molestation.

It is an interesting fact that one of Mary's last guests at Beaulieu, was the celebrated Lady Jane Grey, who was here in the summer of 1552.

On the evening of 6th July, 1553, Edward VI. died at Greenwich. Mary received the news at Hunsdon, where she was then staying, and immediately rode to Kenninghall in Norfolk, and thence to Framlingham, where she was joined by over 30,000 men. On her progress to London, she slept at Beaulieu, as far as we know for the last time, probably on the night of the second of August, 1553.

The only memorials of Mary's residence at New Hall found here by the present owners were some of the old chapel benches, and some pewter tankards marked with a portcullis not crowned. In the Boreham Register an entry of the year 1562 runs thus: 'Betteris Apryes landeres to Queen Mary.' It is thought that some of the beautiful trees in the grounds may have been planted in her time, as she had much taste in that way.

With regard to souvenirs of Anne Boleyn, a drawing and description are given in the *Essex Review* of April, 1901, of a plaster panel fixed in a summer house at Sheepcote Farm, Little Waltham. The armorial bears the badge of Anne Boleyn. 'A stump of a tree couped and eradicated (or), thereon a falcon (arg), crowned with a royal crown and holding a sceptre (ppr), before him, a bunch of flowers with both red and white roses issuing from the stump.' We shall have occasion to allude again to this interesting relic later on. Sheepcote Farm is within two miles of New Hall, and the panel may easily have been removed thither when parts of the old mansion were destroyed. Another farm in the neighbourhood of New Hall, called Bull's Lodge (a corruption of Boleyn's Lodge), was originally part of the Park.

The beautiful painted window, now in St. Margaret's Church, Westminster, was for about two hundred years in the chapel of New Hall. There are many discrepancies in the various accounts of this work of art. The most probable story is that it was intended as a present to Henry VII. for his chapel at Westminster, from the magistrates of Dort in Holland.

Henry VII. died before the completion of the window, and Henry VIII. either gave or sold it to the Canons of Waltham Abbey. At the dissolution of the monasteries it was transferred to Beaulieu, as New Hall was then called, and here it remained until the Civil War. Then, to preserve it from the destructive fanaticism of the Puritans, it was buried underground. At the Restoration, it was replaced in the Chapel by George Monck, Duke of Albemarle, and there it remained until Mr. Olmius, afterwards the first Lord Waltham, sold it to Mr. Conyers, of Coptball, for £50. In 1758, it was purchased from him by the parishioners of St. Margaret's, Westminster, for 400 guineas. The window represents the Crucifixion, with the thieves on either side of Our Saviour, not nailed but tied to their crosses, and, above them, saints and angels holding the instruments of the passion. The side-lights are occupied by portraits of Henry VII. and his Queen, Elizabeth of York, copied from original pictures sent to Dort for the purpose. Over the King is the picture of St. George, and above him a white rose within a red one. Over the Queen stands St. Catherine, and in a panel above her is a pomegranate vert on a field or, the arms of Granada, to denote the descent of York and Lancaster from the royal families of Spain, by the marriages of John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, and his brother Edmond, Duke of York. It has also been said that the window was intended to be commemorative of the marriage of Prince Arthur with Katherine of Arragon.

In Caraccioli's *Anecdotes of New Hall*, a pamphlet published at Chelmsford, probably about the middle of the eighteenth century, from which many of the preceding details have been taken, a list is given of splendid paintings which were formerly at New Hall. Whether the collection was begun by Henry VIII., the Butlers, or the Boleyns, is uncertain. The chief pictures were:—

Apollo as the Sun : in chariot drawn by four horses. The same god in company with Thetis with sundry animals symbolising him.

On the walls of the saloon, painted in fresco, were the nine Muses, supposed to be painted by Holbein.

In a bed-chamber, was a picture of Hymen with chaplet of roses.

In a gallery, the genealogy of heathen deities.

In the Druid's Grove, were six druids, long hair, beards, etc.

In Queen Anne Boleyn's chamber, a picture of Alexander and Apelles.

In dining-room, a large picture of Henry Picard, Lord Mayor of London, complimenting the Prince of Wales, when he brought King John a prisoner to the Tower. This picture was in the collection of Philip Howard, Earl of Arandel. A statue of Caractacus, in the vestibule, also belonged to the same earl.

In the labyrinth was a statue of Minos, Judge of Hell.

In other parts of grounds there were statues of Harpocrates, the Parcae and Nemesis.

This valuable collection of statues and paintings underwent the fate of so many others that were, says the Italian author, 'defaced and mutilated by fanaticism, superstition and savage barbarity.'

*(To be continued.)*

## LEAVES FROM AN ESSEX STILL-ROOM.

BY ISABEL LUCY GOULD AND BEATRICE MARY GOULD.

THERE has lately come into our possession, from our uncle, the late Mr. I. Chalkley Gould, a manuscript which we have every reason to believe is the still-room book of an old Essex home. The writing, which is on vellum, appears to be, with the exception of a page or two, all in one hand, a beautifully neat one, as may be seen in our illustration, which shows it about three-quarters of the original size. The character of the writing and the recipes date it back to the early days of the eighteenth century, and finishing about the close of that century. It is, of course, impossible to fix an arbitrary date as to its commencement, or to the latter portion of it, but roughly speaking, we believe it to embrace the period mentioned.

There are 532 recipes in the volume, neatly indexed; the binding is in green vellum, with slight decoration in gold. The book has evidently been rebound in later days, as the fore edge has been trimmed down to the script, and there are remains of

To make a Pinway Cake.

Take 4 pound of flour 10 eggs but 5 mix'd a pint of ale yeast and half a pint of cream a quarter of a pint of sack or rye water half a pound of currany can. Is half a pound of sugar half a pound of butter some yem half an ounce of mace and cinnamon. Let your flour be dred very well then mix it with sugar currans and yeast that your egg very well yeast and sack together let your cream boys and mix your butter in it then temper your ale up it, band half an hour to rise bake it in a paper coffin.

To make a very good Cake.

Take 6 pound of flower a pound of currans a quart of cream of the new kind one pound of a stone mander and with water 20 eggs with the whites one quart of cream 2 pound of butter a pound of sack 2 ounces of mace nutmeg and cinnamon half a pint of sack beat your almonds with yem water and a quart of ale yeast rise your flour 2 days and currents then mix them together with the yem and seasons mind smalls of at your hole and egg and put altogether let your cream bond then mix your butter in it the other is very well together then put your flour in the middle of the paper and let the paper rise. Bake and the cream amongst and mix them very well together very well then put in and rub the oven is yet put it into a paper coffin and bake it.

earlier silk in the sewing. It deals, like so many of these books of that period, not only with recipes for the preservation of meat and fruit, but with remedies for the many ills that flesh is heir to; the prevention of disease; the making of perfumes, and the doctoring of animals. The housewife, or the housekeeper, in those days was indeed called to be not only proficient in needlework, but upon her was placed the onerous duty of providing remedies for the ailments of her entire household; for superintending the making of innumerable preserves from the garden; for confectionery; for those delicate perfumes, 'the outward expression of the hidden essence,' which since the discovery of coal tar has become almost a lost art. In addition there was the making of cordials and wines, which were not only fine in flavour, but had that piquancy of bouquet which is denied to us in much of the wholesale manufactured wine of to-day.

Every provision was made for what we now designate 'first aid,' and the manuscript has several remedies for wounds, 'deep wounds or wounds through the body, or wounds made with an invenomed weapon or Sinews prickt,' for 'Sinews strain' in man or beast, and others appertaining to their welfare. Even with all this knowledge, the housekeeper's education was not complete. The good lady had to preserve to the best of her ability, or, as it is quaintly termed, to 'refresh,' carpets, pictures, hangings, gold lace, and other 'Lares and Penates' of the house. The knowledge could not have been lightly achieved, and perhaps it was this necessity and these accomplishments which made the wife really the mistress of her household, and indispensable to her husband.

From the well-worn appearance of the vellum binding, this particular 'simpling book' must have been much utilised, and a valued and treasured heirloom. Refreshing, in these days of doubt, are many of the remedies, in their quaintness, directness, and simplicity of expression, some of them leaving nothing to be desired in their unflinching and unhesitating methods of cure.

Are you deaf? You need not consult an aurist, but 'put grounde ivy, one leafe into each ear, rowle it up but not too hard, put it in fresh mornings and evenings.'

Are you nervously inclined? The following remedy for hysterics, entitled 'Hysterick Electuary, The Lady Gerrard's Rec<sup>t</sup>,' should have been efficacious:

' Venice treacle, half an ounce ; bitony flowers, rosemary flowers, and burrage flowers, of each half an ounce ; amber in powder, half an ounce ; castor in fine powder, one dram ; let these be incorporated in a stone mortar with as much sirrop of piony as will make a stiff electuary. Let ye patient at the full and change of the moon, at going to rest, take the quantity of a nutmeg, in 3 small pills, and drink after it a Small draught of posset, made with white wine, with a root of single piony boyled in it ; and for 3 mornings after, use no other breakfast but a draught of the Same posset. Hereby are cured both old and young of convulsions, Hystericks, Vapours, fits and falling sickness.'

The nostrum for the prevention and cure of plague shows a catholic taste in the use of herbs, as the following, entitled ' The Plague Water,' depicts :—

' Take Rue, Agrimony, Calandine, Sage, Wormwoode, Balme, Feaver-Iur, Mugwort, Tournetil, Marygold flowers, Cowslip flowers, Pansie flower, leaves and all, Cardius, Angelicoe, Dragons, Pimpernel, Rosemary, Scordium, Purplewort, Burnet, Enulcampane roots of each of these half a pound shred small, then take Anniseeds, Carraway, Coriander, Cardaimome, of each these two ounces bruised, bruise alsoe your Enulcampane roots, then steep all these in an earthen pot in two quarts of white wine and a gallon of ye best canary, mixing them well in ye liquor, to let it stand till ye next day, then distill it in an ordinary still close stopd whilst it steeps and whilst you still it, stirring it when you putt it into ye still, for keep it for your use. Ye Lady Downs adds wood sorril a good quantity, roots of Indian sneakweed, 1 pound, burdock roots 3lb.'

Was my lady in low spirits, or suffering from ' the vapours,' the still-room could be called upon for a restorative entitled ' The Lady Button's Melancholy Water ' :—

' Take of wall gilly flowers 4 handfulls, of rosemary flowers 3 handfulls, of Damaske Rose leaves and cowslip flowers a like quantity, of burrage and bugglos flowers, of each 2 handfulls, a like quantity of primroses and clove jilly flowers, balme leaves and pinks, of each 6 handfulls ; of marygolds 2 handfulls ; of cinnamon grossly beaten half an ounce ; 2 nutmegs ; 3 pennyworth of English saffron ; 2 orange peels ; 4 ounces of blew figs ; steep them in Sack enough to cover them, and as you add flowers, add Sack ; when you have gotten them all together, distill them in a cold still, and cover them in the still with sack, and when all is drawn off you must put into your water before you use it, 6 ounces of white Sugar Candie, it must be stilled with a soft fire, or your water will be ye smaller. It is good for any heaviness of spirits.'

It is difficult to realise in these days how absolutely dependent for supplies from its own sources were the manor, the hall, and the cottage. The forest, the field, the garden, and the live stock must have been a source of anxiety as to their yield from season to season. Means of communication with neighbouring towns were poor, the circulation of money was indifferent, so those who lived in rural districts, like beleaguered soldiers, were thrown upon their own resources.

Passing from the pages devoted to the remedies for the various ailments of mankind, we strike a happier vein in those wherein many strange recipes are given for the making of wines and cordials. Those who are readers of the famous diary of Pepys will remember his mention of that 'most brave drink cooled in ice,' Metheglin, of which he partook at 'the Backestayes, Whitehall.' We wonder if it was made of the same ingredients as is recorded in these 'Leaves':—

'Take 12 quarts of honey to 12 gallons and a pottle of water, and a fagott of these following herbs: sweet bryer, sweet marjerrom, rosemary and muskecovise, of each a small handfull and boyle them in the water and honey all the time it boyles, and that must be a full hour, keep scumming it clean, then take a bag of these following spices, nutmegs, cloves, mace, and cinament, a quarter of an ounce of each, but most of nutmegs, tie them up in a bag with a ballet in it that may cause it to sink into the middle of your liquor as it boyles, and let it boyle above a quarter of an hour, then take it out and take out the herbs and spices and set some a cooling, and when as cool as wort, put in about half a pint of ale barm, and when cool enough and that it hath gott a good head, turn it up as you do ale, or other liquors, and when it hath done working, hang in again the same bag of spices as you took out into your barrell. Stope it up, till it be clear and then bottle it up.'

Another favourite beverage which, we believe, did not go out of favour till almost modern times, was Syllabub. This drink was evidently partaken of during the early years of the seventeenth century, as James Howell, in his *Familiar Letters* (1625), mentions it in writing to a friend, 'I pray leave the snutty Ayr of London and come hitherto breath sweter, wher you may pluck a Rose, and drink a Cilibub.'

The following was the composition of an Essex 'silliebube':—

'Take a pint of white wine, a pint of morning's cream, and a quarter of a pound of sugar, and put them in a bason and beat them well together, till it come to a froth, then pour it into a Syllabub pot, and milk a sufficient quantity of milk upon it, and Let it stand in a cole place till night, for the longer it stands, so it grows not sour, the clearer the drink will be, and the firmer ye curd.'

We presume that French brandy must have been expensive in England during the early part of the eighteenth century, as among the recipes we notice there is one 'To make Counterfeit Nants Wine':—

'Take 12 pounds of Mailiga raizons, and steep them in 8 gallons of water about 10 days, then barrell up the liquor, and put to it the juice of elder berrys. Set it in some warm place that it may work, and when tis fine, bottle it up and drink it half a year old; half the quantity of fresh raizons put to the first, and half the quantity of juice, will make a smaller sort of wine, and may be drank in a little time.'

Punch came into fashion late in the seventeenth century, and was a favourite drink down to the close of the eighteenth and early nineteenth century. If the details of the following was the usual beverage, it must have indeed been potent :—

‘ To make Milke Punch ’ :—

‘ Take five quarts of brandy, eight quarts of water, and two of new milke ; four dozens of lemons, three nutmegs, a pound and a halfe of double refined sugar ; pare one dozen of the lemons very thin, leaving none of the white, infuse the parings in some of the brandy about three hours with the nutmegs grated, dissolve the sugar in water before you putt it into the brandy, squeeze in the lemons and let all the ingredients be mixed together, then put them all into a bag of thick flannel and let it run without stirring, let about a quart run out, then put it into the bag againe, and so repeat it till it is fine.’

Some of the specifics to improve the personal appearance were doubtless as efficacious in their application as many of the vaunted remedies that are so much in vogue to-day. The following is entitled ‘ An Excellent Water to clear the Hands and Face ’ :—

‘ Take a quart of fair water, a pint of white wine, the juice of 4 lemons, put into these bean blossoms, white lilly blossoms, a handfull of them all, put them amongst the wine and water and put into four wild daisie roots, 4 marsh mallow roots, and 2 or 3 bunches of wild tansie, as much of semitary, the weight of 2 pence in camphor, put all these together in an earthen pot. Set the pot in warm ashes all night, then in the morning strain it through a piece of white cotten clean washt, and put it into a narrow mouth’d glass. Set the glass in the sun 3 or 4 days in the heat of the Sun if there be any redness or pimples in the face, take the white dung of a hen and so steep in that water all one night, then strain it again through the cloth, wash your face with this water evening and morning. if you wash your hands with any of this water put thereto 3 or 4 bruised almonds, this is ye most excellent water that was ever made to clear hands and face withall. Probatum est.’

Sage was largely utilised in our forefathers’ times, and its medicinal and remedial qualities were well known. Spenser speaks of ‘ the wholesome saulge,’ and we all remember the old couplet

‘ He that would live for aye  
Must eat sage in May.’

So we notice its presence even in a salutary, ‘ water to make the breath sweet.’

‘ Take the powder of Sage, the powder of winter Savery, and the powder of sweet marjerom, the powder of cloves and mace, a little nutmeg, a little musk steeped in the juice of lemons, and white wine, drink all these together, a spoonfull at a time, evening and morning, with the juice of lemons amongst it.’

The making of perfumes was one of those old world delights which more than anything bring before us the days of powdered



wigs and hooped petticoats; Surely the scent of the rose still remains when we read how to make 'A excellent Pommander,' 'A perfume to burne,' 'To Perfume Gloves,' 'Perfume for Linnen,' 'To Perfume bedding,' and many others. One example will suffice: 'A excellent Pommander':—

'Take half an ounce of benjamin, half an ounce of damasse rose leaves, a quarter of an ounce of storax, beat these very small Severally, then sift them, and mingle the powder, then take Some gumdragon steep'd in rose water 24 hours; and make it into a stiff past, then take 4 grains of ambergreese, 4 grains of musk, and 2 of civet, grind these together with a little juice of lemon till they are dissolved, then anoint the hand with essence of jessamie or roses, and work the past well with the musk and amber, if it be too limber, put in powder of roses, if too stiff a little rose water, then weigh them of an equal weight, and rowle them up in your hand, but while they are wet, make holes through them with bodkin, dry them betwixt 2 papers.'

Does not Shakespeare speak of—

'A liquid prisoner, pent in walls of glass,

Beauty's effect with beauty were bereft.

Nor it, nor no remembrance what it was.

But flowers distilled though they with winter meet

Lose but their show, their substance still lies sweet.'

From the garden were culled sweet-scented plants which were utilized for making 'sweete waters,' perfumed powders, and perfumed waters. The following is a distillation of the last mentioned:—

'Take a gallon of spring water, a handfull of lavender flowers, and as many pinks, 3 handfull of damaske roses, as much sweet marjerum, the peels of 6 oranges, 12 cloves, bruise all these and put to them an ounce of orriss powder, 4 ounces of benjamin powdered; put all in a rose stille, and draw off the first quart by itself, and then a pint, you may draw after another water from the lees which will serve for present use, but not keep, put into your quart bottle 12 pennyworth of muske, and into your pint bottle 6 pennyworth tyed up in a piece of sersnet, and a little ginger sliced very fair, about as much as will lay on a half-crown, 2 or 3 spoonfulls will sweeten a bason of water. Stop it close.'

A large number of recipes are given for the making and preserving of comestibles, but space forbids us giving more than two extracts. The following titles, however, will indicate the variety contained in this book:—

'To make Fruit Biskit,' 'To pot venison to keep all the year,' 'To make clear cakes of Quinces,' 'To make Paste of Peaches,' 'To make a Quakeing Pudding,' 'To make little cakes,' 'To make Bean Cakes,' 'Angelicoe Cakes,' 'To Souce Figg,' 'To make a Flesh Cheese,' 'The Lady Seymour's way to coller Beef,' 'To make Muskedyne Cumfits,' 'To preserve

Grapes, Barberries, or Gooseberrys,' 'To Dry Apricocks,' 'Angellot Cheese,' 'To Dress Soales a fine Way,' 'Pickle for Brawn to last a quarter of a Year,' 'To pickle Brown Buds,' 'To make Gimboles.'

A quaint method of pickling, called 'To Souce Pigg,' reads strange in these days :—

'Cutt your pigg into 4 collers of a side, take 12 cloves, 4 leaves of large mace, 2 nuttmegs; shred, then strew all these on the collers; with a little salt, rowle them up hard and bind them close, and boyle them 4 hours, and when tis almost boyleu, put in a faggot of sweet herbs, and half a pint of vinegar.'

'To make a Carrot pudding' :—

'To the crum of 2 penny loaf and grate it, and half as much grated carrot, and 6 eggs, put four whites, and some sugar, and half a nutmeg, a little salt; mix it with a pint and a half of cream and you must put into the oven; melt a quarter of a pound or better of fresh butter, put a little rose water, 2 or 3 spoonfulls of sack, then put it into the oven in a dish, and let it stand half an hour; the oven must not be to hot. Stop it a little.'

A large number of recipes are given for preserving fruit, but those that read most strangely to us in these days are devoted to human ills. In addition to those already mentioned, there are remedies 'For the Palsie'; 'To keep the Skin from breaking where ye Dead Palsie is'; 'For the Biteing of a Madd Dog'; 'For a Poisoned Dog'; 'An Electuary for the Green Sickness, or pain in ye stomach'; 'An Excellent Powder to cure defective memorie, Giddiness in ye Head, or any other Distemper in ye Brain'; 'For a Sinew strain in man or beast'; 'For Flegme when it sticks that it cannot come up'; 'For the Scurvy.'

There are also preparations 'To Destroy Moths in Chairs and Stools, and to refresh ye colour'; 'To Scoure and refresh the colour of cloth carpets, silk curtains, or any stuff that is stain'd or soil'd'; 'To Scour and refresh ye colour of Gold and Silver Lace or Fringe'; 'To dress and Order thin and old Bed-tikes, to make ym keep in their Feathers.'

Even the art of treating the diseases of domestic animals is not overlooked, and we have recipes 'For the Farcy in a Horse,' 'To Cure the Grease in a Horse,' and others.

History has given us few records of the home life that obtained in England during the period of this volume, beyond a few memoirs, books of recipes, occasional notes, needlework, or a diary, that have been handed down to us. Yet how much of the life of a woman must have been devoted to the vari-

interests and incidents attaching to the all-absorbing duties which from day to day bound her to the home. To us in these days, when quick transit places in our hands all that we require within a few hours, it is almost impossible to realise the difficulties that must have arisen in the domestic portion of the household even less than a century ago; the failure of this or that crop of fruit, vegetables, corn, or other causes, which prevented the storing up of a plentiful supply of provisions against 'the rainy day.' If only the walls of some old still-rooms could speak, what strange stories they would reveal! As we linger over the well-worn vellum pages of this book, the atmosphere, the environment, of these homes come back to us, like the fragrant scent from some old pot-pourri jar. Memories beget memories, and we live once more in those days, when life was not so strenuous, and when the real charm of home was more deeply appreciated.

---

## SOME ALTHAMS OF MARK HALL IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

CONTRIBUTED BY A DESCENDANT.

**O**N the wall of Latton Church, near Harlow, in Essex, is a monument with this inscription:—

'1640. To the sacred memory of Edward Altham, Esq., who married Elizabeth, the youngest daughter and co-heir of John Barne, of Willsdon, in ye county of Middlesex, Esq. The said Edward deceased ye 8th day of April 1605. The said Elizabeth deceased ye 7th of Jan. 1621; they had issue, Sir James Altham,\* who married Elizabeth, the daughter of Sir Francis Barrington, knt. and bart.,† by whom he had issue Joan, since married to Oliver St. John, Esq.—Sir James died the 15th day of July 1610; Sir Edward Altham,‡ who married Joan, daughter of Sir John Leventhorp, knt. and bart.; Captain Emanuel Altham, who died at East India, An. Dom. 1635; Mary Altham, married to Ralph Hawtrey, late of Riselip, in the county of Middlesex, esq. The said Sir Edward Altham and Joan, his wife, lived happily together twenty-two years, and had issue James, married to Alice, daughter and heir of Sir John Spencer, bart.; Edward, John, Leventhorp, Edward, Emanuel;

\* Knighted at Whitehall, Jan. 9, 1609-10.

† Cr. 29 June 1611.

‡ Knighted at Royston, March 27, 1612-13.

Joan, married to Thomas Smith, Esq.; Elizabeth; Mary, married to William Halton, Esq.; Bridgett; the said Sir Edward Altham died May 28, 1632. The said Joan'

Here the inscription ends, the date of Lady Altham's death never having been added.

The Altham family had been at Mark Hall, in the parish of Latton, since the year 1562.

'Elizabeth, the daughter of Sir Francis Barrington,' by his wife Joan, daughter of Sir Henry Cromwell, of Hinchinbrook, came from Barrington Hall, Hatfield Broad Oak, Essex.

'Joan, the daughter of Sir John Leventhorp, knt. and bart.,' was from Shingey, *i.e.*, Shingle Hall, Sawbridgeworth, Herts.

Alice, daughter of Sir John Spencer, formerly had her home at Offley Place, Herts.

Joan, married to Sir Thomas Smith, Esq. (created a baronet Nov. 28, 1661), went to Horham Hall, Thaxted, Essex; thence the family removed to Hill Hall, near Epping.

Mary, married to William Halton, Esq., lived with her husband, who was made a baronet 10th Sept. 1642, at Little Sampford, Essex, on the estate he had purchased from Sir Edward Green, paying his fine for ingress, in 1640.

Bridgett, unmarried when the above inscription was written, afterwards married Sir Peter Tyrrell, bart., of Hanslope, Bucks.

The first person on the above monument of whom I am able to write is Joan, Lady Altham, wife of Sir Edward Altham, knight, and daughter of Sir John Leventhorpe, first baronet, by his wife Joan, daughter of Sir John Brograve, knight of Hemells, Attorney General of Lancaster. She was a lady with royal blood in her veins, flowing to her in three lines, in which she was 12th, 13th, and 16th in descent from Edward I. Left a widow in the year 1632, she devoted herself entirely to her large family of children, saw them pass out into the world, and watched their fortunes all through the Civil War. From the many letters I possess, she appears to have lived at Mark Hall, not only during the twenty-two happy years of her married life, but also during the early part of her widowhood, up to the year 1638, when, after her eldest son's marriage, she left for Feltwell in Norfolk. And even then she was constantly staying with one or other of her married children. Her letters are generally

dated either from Feltwell, Horham Hall, Little Sampford or Mark Hall. She writes that she loves Mark Hall more than any other place. She was a woman of keen business habits, a



MARK HALL IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.  
(From a Water Colour Sketch.)

devout Christian, and a most loving mother. 'Her ladyship,' as they called her, was indeed the centre and bond of union to the family. Leventhorp, for instance, when 17 years of age, writing to her from abroad, says, 'Though I am afar off, yet shall I not forget your many motherly cares of me.' John, from

Sidney College, Cambridge, anxious himself to change his College, and think of another profession than the one he had proposed for himself, having sounded his mother and found she disapproved, at once writes that the subject shall never be mentioned again. The two younger sons are at Mark Hall with her, and she writes to John at Cambridge, 'Could you bring some pretty civil young scollar downe with you that would be willing, for his diet this summer time, to teach your two brothers, who else I am afraid will much loose there time, by reason Mr. Denn\* hath given over scole, finding himself not fitt to discharge that and his other business.' Edward, troubled with all the new opinions in religion, is bent on becoming a Roman Catholic, and his devoted mother requests the Bishop of Exeter (Ralph Brownrigg) who had been over him as Master at St. Catherine College, Cambridge, to write and try to keep him back. Emanuel is dreadfully extravagant, and she is much distressed, taking counsel with her eldest son.

There are letters from Mary Hawtrey to her sister-in-law, Joan Altham. Before Joan has become a widow, Mary Hawtrey writes to her from Riselip, in Middlesex, as to a misunderstanding that had arisen between Sir Edward Altham and his nephew by marriage, Oliver St. John. Mr. Hawtrey, Mr. Bankes (son-in-law to the Hawtreys), and Sir Thomas Leventhorpe on the one side, and Sir Gilbert Gerrard on the other, who had married Mary Barrington, do their best for the settlement of the trouble. Mary Hawtrey speaks of her 'nephew St. John's real desire of a peaceable end.' This Oliver St. John became afterwards a strong partisan on the side of the Parliament against the King. 'Things must go worse before they go better,' was his comment on the dissolution of the Short Parliament of 1640. He took a prominent part in the Commons on the trial of Strafford. In 1650 he was sent by Parliament with a 'stately embassy to the Hague,' with a view to union between England and Holland. We may believe that through the good offices of the relations of the two affectionate sisters-in-law, the family difference between uncle and nephew was settled. Oliver St. John was appointed Solicitor-General by the King (1641), and

\*There were two vicars of Latton named Thomas Denne:—The first presented 18 June, 1600, left to become rector of Netteswell before 1634 and died there 1640; the second held the living (which was in the Althams gift), from 1632 to his death in 1680 or 1681. He was succeeded by Michael Altham, M.A.—Eds.

later, by the Commons, Lord Chief Justice of the Common Pleas (1648). By two of his three marriages he seems to have been of kin to Oliver Cromwell. His first wife was, as we have seen, Joan Altham, whose grandmother, Lady Barrington, was Cromwell's aunt.

After the death of Sir Edward Altham, the correspondence between the sisters-in-law is continued. Mary Hawtrey hears that her nephew, James Altham, is ill with the small-pox, and writes to Lady Altham, praying that

'The Lord will still continue your comfort that you have in him and in all the rest, which I besech God preserve from this infection. You have the benefit of a spacious house, which in such a time is very convenient.'

The 'plague' is around Riselip, and 'not far from us, almost as nere as laten hall is to you, in a place where many poor people live—9 are dead.'

Then comes upon the scene, a most interesting person, Mary Bankes, the daughter of the Hawtreys. There are several of her letters to her aunt Joan, who stood godmother to one of her children. She reports in one letter, the death of her beloved father, Ralph Hawtrey. In another, she says, 'I must congratulate my cosen Altham his safe recovery out of that unwelcom sicknes he was lately in.' In a third, she writes, 'It hath pleased his Ma<sup>tie</sup> to call Mr. Bankes from the place he was in to another, in the passage to which by the accustomed manner he is to be called Sargaint; the solemnity of it this day was performed, and in memory of it he desiens your ladyship (as doth others of his loving freinds) to honor him with the wearing of a ring.' 'Mr. Bankes' later became Lord Chief Justice of Common Pleas to King Charles I., and this Lady Bankes, his wife, was afterwards known as the heroine of Corfe Castle. In *Highways and Byways in Dorset*, Sir Frederick Treves has described how Corfe Castle was, in the year 1643, in the possession of Sir John Bankes; how he was absent with King Charles at York; and how, when attacked by the soldiers of the Parliament, under Sir Walter Erle, the castle held out under the leadership of this brave woman from May till August. 'A demy cannon, a culverin, two sakers, and other ordnance' played upon the place 'both from the church tower and the adjacent hills,' yet she never yielded an inch. The last device of the assailants, Sir Frederick tells us, was the hiring of some hundred and fifty

'vinous' mariners to scale the walls, £20 being offered to the first man that should get in. All was to no purpose, and the siege had to be abandoned. There are no actual references to this memorable siege in the letters. John Altham says in a letter to his brother, 6 April 1639, 'My Lady Bankes desires her love may be remembered to you and your Lady.' Three and a half years after the siege, Joan Altham writes to her son James from London, 'My Lady Bankes and my nephew and



Photo by]

LATTON CHURCH.

[Miss E. Rolleston.

nieces remember themselves kindly to you, and they were all sorry your occasions would not let them enjoy your company. We were very kindly and finely entertained, and none but our own company.'

There is also a letter from Lady Bankes to her cousin James Altham, dated Riselip, 9 July, 1653, as to the sounding of a certain Lady Butler in regard to the marriage of her son, Lady Bankes having thought of him as a possible suitor for the hand of Mary Altham, the only child of James and Alice Altham. The young man 'desired a year or two more of freedom to himself,' but Lady Butler wished with all her heart to renew the 'ancient friendship' with the Altham family. Thus it appears that this



heroine of the civil war had by no means lost the common instincts of womanhood.

Lady Bankes died 11th April 1661, and was buried at Riselip Church, Middlesex, where there is an inscription, on white marble, in the chancel to her memory. Sir John Bankes died at Oxford in 1644, and was buried in the cathedral, Christ Church.

James Altham seems to have become the master of Mark Hall about 1636. He lived at first the life of an ordinary country gentleman, *e.g.*, he wants some bounds, and one John Watts procures from Mr. Sadler a hound of the name of Mounter and two puppies. He writes to Sir W. Masham at Otes, High Laver, who had become the second husband of his aunt, Elizabeth Altham, *née* Barrington, as to the felling of some trees on Thornwood Common, 'which,' he says,

'As you were informed, were annoyances to the road. They were anciently set there as marks to distinguish the parishes of Latton and Weald, and, as I am able to prove, have been so reputed to be for above 60 years, till of late years the inhabitants of Weald, for what advantage I know not, desiring to alter the bounds of their parish, have cut them up (as they pretend at your command), and placed another, and made a way there where never was any before, which being a great prejudice to my enheritance, I pulled up, with an intent to place trees there, to supply the offices of those which were taken away. For this we are presented at the Quarter Sessions. . . . I crave that Weald men may mend their own ways and not encroach upon my enheritance.'

By 1638, John Altham, the third son, is established as a counsellor at Gray's Inn, and letters pass between the two brothers. John keeps sending him the news of the day. On 7th March he writes, 'The news we now discourse upon is of the old subject, Scotland. The King [Charles I.] is resolved to go on March 27. The household goes away on Monday next. My Lord of Leicester is coming out of France, the cause is unknown.' There had been several duels, *e.g.*, Robert Paintons against a sectarian captain of Gray's Inn. 'Mr. Charles Cotton killed Sir John Hunt in the Strand.' On 20th January 1639, he reports, 'My Lord Finch\* is for certain Lord Keeper, and Secretary Cooke is remitted to his office.' Finch as Chief Justice in 1638 had given judgment in the Hampden Ship Money Case. In another letter, John says,

\*Afterwards Earl of Nottingham, and husband of Lady Essex Rich, of Lees.

'There is a rumour of the taking of Aberdeen.' . . 'I have here sent you the articles which the commissioners for the Covenanters did present to the King. The King's answer I have not seen, but have heard the relation of it to be, first, he answers that the acts of the assembly shall not be confirmed at the parliament, but before the parliament there shall be another assembly, when if the same acts be concluded upon, then the parliament shall confirm them. The 2nd is granted, the 3rd is granted, upon condition they disband their men and peaceably surrender all their forts and castles, and four is assured with a complement. . . It is generally reported that the King is now at Edinburgh, where he was received with great joy and acclamations.'

The Scots had demanded:—1. The abolition of the Court of High Commission. 2. The withdrawal of the Books of Canons and Common Prayer. 3. A free Parliament. 4. A free General Assembly. It looks as if John Altham's four points referred to these.

James Altham now becomes mixed up with public affairs. A Commission of Forests had been appointed, and were exacting money from landowners for their encroachments on Crown Lands. James Altham on 13 Feb., 1639, writes to his brother, John:—

'I heare from Dr. Ofhobstowe (who had it from Mr. Jaggard) that myself and some others that were in Commission about Hatfield Forest are in the Starre Chamber, for what I know not, but would willingly learne. Therefore, I pray let mee entreat you to goe to him, for he is now in London, and know of him uppon what grounds he reported it. And if you find it to be so, I pray repair to Mr. Cockshott, and informe yourself as well as you can, whoe they are that are our adversaries, and what the greatest charge in the List is, and whether it be best for me to answer with the rest jointly, or by myself,' etc.

There are more letters of interest as to Scotland, but space forbids extracts. Here is a short extract from the loyal Thomas Smith, of Horham Hall, to his brother-in-law, John Altham.

'His Majesty can no waies hinder, but our minds will bring us up to London this next week, unless he be graciously pleased to alter his day in going to the Parliament, which if there be any alteration, I desire you to let me know.'

In 1642, the Civil War broke out, and there are few letters for three years. James Altham was, we know not where, quite likely fighting for the King. Certainly he was fined £500\*

\* *Cal. St. Pap. Dom. Com. for Comp.*, p. 879, where he is said to have been in the King's Quarters, but did not bear arms.—Evs.

by a Committee of Parliament for being a 'Delinquent,' and was made a Knight of the Bath at the Restoration for the part he had taken. Fuller in his *Worthies of England* (1662) makes mention of him, 'He addeth with his accomplished civility to the honor of his ancestors.' But the following letter from his wife, Alice Altham, to her brother-in-law John, the counsellor, written from London 12 Dec., 1643, shows what the wife of a loyal Cavalier had to go through :—

'Most Deere Brother, the thancks that is due to you for your care of mee and mine cannot be expressed in this peece of paper, but I hope you will doe me that writt to be liath of my ambition to desarve it from you. I have sent you sir thomas barringtown leter which I desire you to seale and send by John Cass, if you think it will doe any good, for I would doe anything to gitt that litell allowance settled which is aloted mee by the higher powers, that soe I might goe to my deere Husband, but if it cannot be don very spedly I shall very hardly be persuaded to stay, for I have not hard from him this five weeks, nor if I stay heare I am not like to doe so not douting of y<sup>r</sup> care to gitt that litell settled which they think fitt to alowe mee, I rest your sistr and sarvant AA.'

If Alice Altham was troubled at receiving no letter from her husband for five weeks, equally so was James at receiving nothing from her. He writes to her a month later, 12th Jan., 1644, from some town, he does not say where :—

'My dearest. To the many letters I have sent thee, I have at last received an answer. I cannot believe I have been soe much neglected, or forgotten, but that thou hast writt more, though I have been soe unfortunate as to receive but one, tis possible mine might fall under y<sup>e</sup> same fate y<sup>t</sup> I beelieve y<sup>e</sup> have if they have, I confesse wee have both cause to lament y<sup>e</sup> sad obstructions of these times in y<sup>t</sup> particular as well as in many other.' He finds his 'reputation wounded by a hand so neare' him. 'I am confident,' he says, 'noe passion durst cast a preiudice uppon mee. . . . My design of seeing thee must yett a while be suspended.' He ends with a touching reference to their only child. 'I sent soe large a remembrance to little blacke eyes in my last, that I question whether they bee all delivered yett, therefore now I shall send her nothing but my blessing.'

In March 1644, Lady Altham was at Mark Hall. She writes to her son John, at Gray's Inn, on the 26th of that month, as to his brother Emanuel's extravagances. He had been writing to her for money. She adds an interesting piece of information about Latton.

' All ye newes heare is y<sup>t</sup> the crosse on our steeple is taken downe, and ye sanct belly [sanctus belfry] also taken away and all our treyned bands warned to goe w<sup>th</sup> all speed to Walden, but what to doe or whethere to goe is not yet knowne w<sup>th</sup> us.'

Edward Altham, another son, intended to be ordained, and at one time was not without hope that his eldest brother would present him to the parish of Buckland, in Hertfordshire, of which he was the patron. He had not yet become a Roman Catholic, and had been studying abroad. He writes on 24th Sept. 1644, to his brother James :—

' I trust I shall never be taunted with the foule corruption of the vulgar that boast of a spirit and yet senceless ; that teach and yet untaught ; and that pray and yet not understand. These are the locusts that trouble our Church and will destroy it, if God calles not a strong winde to dissipate them.'

The fourth son, Leventhorp, who was, I believe, apprenticed to a wine merchant at Rouen, speaks in a letter written from that place, 3rd March 1645, of his joy at hearing of the continuance of her ladyship's health, and preservation in the 'troublous and distracted days, the which God in His mercy continue to you and all the reste of our neare and deare ffreindes w<sup>th</sup> you ; and in his good tyme convert these daies of moorninge and affliction into daies of joy.'

I have a letter dated Gray's Inn, 24th July, 1645 (?) (there is a little doubt as to the last figure, but I gather from the contemporary history that it must be 5), from one P. Mayeer to John Altham, who was then staying at Mark Hall, which seems to tell of Altham money having been devoted to the king's cause.

' I received by your servant £40 the 10th of this presente monthe ; the same day I paide Lieutenante Hayles tenn poundes, whiche hee desired mee to pay him for his Cap<sup>t</sup>s use . . . and I have sente the other thirty poundes by bill of exchange to Cap<sup>t</sup> Bantry for his use, and I have requested him to see itt paide where hee owethe the same. . . . I am sorry if you and your ffamily bee out of charity w<sup>th</sup> mee, I knowe noe just cause, unlesse y<sup>r</sup> brother takes itt ill I lost his Caveilers cloake. I am ready to restore him any satisfaction for itt. . . . There are soe many victories, that I professe truly I knowe not howe to remember them. This afternoone order came from y<sup>e</sup> Maior to have all the Bells runge for ioy of Bridgewater beinge taken, and just this minute the talke is that pte of Basinge is taken—all is taken. You see how God fights for his.'

The last words would seem to be Mayeer's report of the talk of London, and not to be his own sentiments.

In June 1647, there was a pause in the Civil War, and much dissension between the Army and the Parliament. On June 25th the Army was in full march on London. Cromwell (who since the war had tried to mediate between the two) had now been driven to seek refuge with the Army, for the Parliament had fallen furiously upon him. The Army had in 'an Humble Representation' declared they only wanted the Peace of the kingdom, and no interference with the settling of the Presbyterian Government. It was with a view to peace that they demanded the expulsion of eleven members from the Commons, with Holles at their head, whom the soldiers charged with stirring up strife between the Army and the Parliament, and with a design of renewing the Civil War. After fruitless negotiations, the terror of the Londoners forced the eleven members to withdraw, and the Houses named Commissioners to treat on the questions at issue. Here is a contemporary letter from John Altham, the counsellor, on this matter, written to his brother James, who was now once more at Mark Hall. It is dated 26 June 1647.

'Sr, ye last night soe soone almost as I parted from you I did receive a note from y<sup>e</sup> Lady Wortly that Mr. Deereham is come to towne and shall stay till thursday next. Sr yesterday the house of Commons had a long debate concerning y<sup>e</sup> eleven members, when the debate began they modestly withdrew, it continued till neere four at night, therefore the house cannot suspend these men w<sup>th</sup>out a high breach of those lawes they have soe oft bound themselves to maintaine. Y<sup>e</sup> debate ended, they returned againe, and then Mr. Hollis in the name of y<sup>e</sup> rest desired that they might have leave to sequester themselves (yet promising to attend y<sup>e</sup> house when they should b<sup>e</sup> called upon) and that those of y<sup>m</sup> that had a desire to travel might have leave. I doe not heare anything was ordered upon this motion, but they left to their discretion. This day all the lawiers of y<sup>e</sup> house are desired to meete, to advise how farre it may stand w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> honour of these men to sequester themselves. The Army approacheth, some of their quarters y<sup>e</sup> last night extended to Edmonton. Sr farewell, my service to all, especially to y<sup>e</sup> Gentleman that desires to be found in tonbridge water. Yours, J. A.'

In 1648 there was a renewal of the war, Wales and the eastern counties being the fields of conflict. After a solemn prayer-meeting, Cromwell and Sir Thomas Fairfax set forth, the former against the Welsh royalists, while the latter imprisoned many of the eastern royalists within the walls of

Colchester. But even the sound of war in Essex did not deter the affectionate Lady Altham from exercising a mother's care for her daughter, Lady Halton, who was expecting the birth of a child. Accordingly she set forth early in July (driven, it would seem, by her nephew, Sir John Leventhorpe\*) for Little Sampford, where was the seat of her son-in-law, Sir William Halton. She rested for two nights at Mark Hall, having started, it seems, from London. The following letter written to her eldest son James, the owner of Mark Hall, who was at the time lodging in Chancery Lane, gives an account of her journey, and is dated 'Samf. the iv. of July, 1648.'

' Good sonne, According to my promise and your desire I shall give you an account of our journey and safe arrivall the first night at Marke Hall where we found all well and quiet, I thank God, and wanted nothing but y<sup>e</sup> good company of you and my daughter, w<sup>h</sup> your good neighbours and frindes hope they [may] inioy ere it bee longe, for Mr. Denne and others think there is noe danger, but y<sup>t</sup> you might safely come down and stay without any disturbance, and wee findinge all quiet, made Sir John willing to stay and have his horses rested one day, for they had a very bad iourny and found the ways very bad, and the waters very high at Stansteed and Roydon, but past them through safely, I humbly thank God, and we lay at free quarter 2 nights at Mark Hall, which I intended not to have done, but your servant, John Casse, told mee it was your will to have it so, for which we returne all our due thanks in generall, and my own in particular, and having had so good a bait on Saturday, we went to Samford, where I thank God we arrived safely, and found no trouble but the foule ways, and they were worse now than ever I see them, but Sir John's horses carried us very well through them, and hee himselfe went very kindly along with us, and is this day returned back again to Shingle Hall, and intends, and please God, very shortly, to bee at London, for he begins to think now that Mr. Mince is worthy the looking after. I pray God bless and guide him in all his ways and undertakings, and I hope as any occasion is offered, you will not bee wanting in your best advice to him, and therefore your counsel and advice is like to take the better effect, and therefore hope you will ever afford it to him. I pray, send such news as is stirring, for whether it be good or bad it will help to pass away the time in this solitary place, where there is no taking of horses now, nor any other trouble but sending away provision, which it is feared will make great scarcitie in these parts, if y<sup>e</sup> seigh continue much longer, but it is certainly reported by many

\* He died unmarried, aged 20, of smallpox, in Chancery Lane, and was buried at Sawbridgeworth, 2 Dec., 1649. His brother Thomas succeeded.—Eds.

that hath been lately at Colechester, y<sup>t</sup> they are in a very good condition and want nothings but peace and love w<sup>t</sup> there enemies, w<sup>h</sup> I beseech God send in all places in his good time. Your sister Halton presents her kynd love and respects to you and your best beloved, and so dothe shee her love and best of blessings to you both, and to pretty sweet Mall, who is

Deere Sonne

Your loving Mothere ever

JOA': ALTHAM.

I pray present my kynd love and service to my frindes y<sup>t</sup> aske after mee.'

She writes again to James in August :—

'Deere Sonne, although I have little or noe businesse at this time to rite of, yet hearinge you were to coe to Marke hall this last weeke, I could not omitte y<sup>e</sup> salutinge of you w<sup>th</sup> some few lines and congratulate your happie returne thethere, where I hope I shall heare you are all safe and well, and hope you shall long continue so, though troubles continue still in y<sup>e</sup> country and wee may feare like to doe so still, for Cholechester is not yet taken, nor like to bee yet, as wee heare, but it is sayd y<sup>e</sup> newes at y<sup>e</sup> leagure is they can take it, but S<sup>r</sup> Tho. in mercie still spares them, and how true y<sup>t</sup> is I leave it to you and others to iudge, but however it is, I pray God bee there comfort, and send them a happie conclusion.'

We know, however, it was in this very month of August that Colchester surrendered to Fairfax.

In a postscript she says—'I desire you to send mee word by this bearer whether you have received any mony of my lord Bridgewater and if you have, my sonne Halton is desirus to have 400 of it, for hee hath now compounded for his estate and is to pay all his mony w<sup>t</sup> in y<sup>e</sup> fourtnight, and if hee can have it of his frinds hee had rathere deale w<sup>t</sup> them then strangers, etc.'

On the 21st of August Lady Altham pens another letter to her son James, who appears to have remained in London, on the subject of the money from Lord Bridgewater. Her son John had been down to Sampford. She announces in the quaint phraseology of the day :—

'Your sister Hal was safely brought to bed on Wednesday last of a daughter. It is pretty well. I most humbly thanke God, and this day my brother, \* Hal, and Mrs. Roper and my selfe made it a Mary.'

But in the following month Lady Halton died, aged 26, and was buried at Little Sampford, Sept. 30. There is a monument

\*Probably the Rev. Charles Leventhorpe, Rector of White Roding, who succeeded his two nephews in 1679, and died in 1680, being the last baronet of the name.

to her memory in the church, bearing date December, 1649, which apparently was the date of its erection, as it does not agree with the date in the Burial Register, Sept. 30, 1648.\*

\* The date of her death is given in G. E. Cockayne's *Complete Baronetage* as 29 Dec., 1644, which, in view of the foregoing letter and the entry in the register, must, we think, be deemed inaccurate.—Eds.

---

## SHELLS IN OUR RIVERS AND DITCHES.\*

BY EVANGELINE BRADHURST.

COLCHESTER, so long famous for its 'native oysters,' the annual 'feast' of which is looked forward to by those lucky enough to receive the Mayor's invitation, has yet other treasures to boast of, unnoticed and uncared for by the gastronomic, yet to lovers of conchology far more interesting.

Without some slight knowledge of their whereabouts, these are not easy to discover, although so close at hand.

Will not the children of Essex add a new interest to their so-called dull country walks, and busy themselves and 'read, mark, and learn' out of some standard work, a little about the slender, lovely objects they pass by in the rivers and ditches of Essex? To search for, and collect fresh-water and land Mollusca, is a delight unthought of by those who pass heedlessly by dainty and oftentimes rare specimens.

To those who only love the country in 'smiling spring' and summer I have nothing to say. Butterflies are only happy in sunshine. But those who will walk in drear cold autumn, aye, even in rain and storm, and still enjoy Nature, let them come, in spirit at least, with me. In autumn, I find my treasures; only then dare I hunt for the dainty untenanted houses, free, 'to let,' which are a delight to possess, without fear of depriving any owner of his castle. In the thirst for knowledge there is ever the danger that one may become cruel, from thoughtlessness. 'I would not number in my list of friends, the man who heedlessly would set his foot upon a worm.' Therefore, carefully examine each shell, before adding it to your collection, ascertain that it is a derelict, and 'not wanted'; do not be

\* This article is in part reprinted from *Country Life* of 17th August, 1907, by kind permission of the Editor, Mr. P. Anderson Graham.



inconsiderate and cruel, even to a snail. Come, on an October day, down to the bottom of a mossy ditch with water, a small stream running slowly at the bottom, put one foot on each side—stretching like the Colossus at Rhodes—across the chasm, and look ‘bright eyes,’ for the hidden interests near by. Then, on an emerald cushion, a roundish object—what an admirable form!—with black bands running perfectly round the coil; this is the house of *Helix nemoralis*, now discarded and dry; it may be picked up and treasured, without fear of robbing the ‘master of the house,’ for he has changed his residence for a newer castle, and retired for the winter. Near it, will probably be found the whole-coloured shell, of a most delicate cameo pink, or pale sulphur yellow—the shell of *Helix hortensis*; at times even, his house is all pure white. How convenient to change the colour of one’s mansion by the food one eats! The large brown speckled and mottled palace of *Helix aspersa* is easy to see—the old ‘Hodman-Dod,’ of the country people; but look at it carefully, with great attention, for only the practised eye will discover on the brown shell a ‘patch,’ where the owner has had to do his own repairing, and finely indeed has he restored his shattered house. If past mending, he leaves it, and makes another mansion; but if it has only been cracked or bruised, he sets to work to ooze liquid gum out of his store (from whence also came the shell), and neatly welds the cracks together. Where the shattered part has been pieced together, the beautiful brown pattern is now irregular on the shell.

The delicate *Helix cantiana* I found on a railway embankment, under the picturesque Viaduct at Chappel, a name which has now absorbed that of old Pontisbright. What a contrast in movement—the *Cantiana* slowly and noiselessly creeping below, while the iron horse roars and rushes by above his small hermitage! The large white edible snail, *Helix pomatia*, was found in that large fox-cover, Chalkney Wood, Earls Colne, not far from Colchester. His handsome smooth white castle was always formerly to be found where the Romans had their colonies, for they cultivated the dainty morsel, as the French do to this day. Only last year in Paris, I purchased good specimens of *H. pomatia*, and our old brown *H. aspersa*, in the Rue de Rivoli, and great was the astonishment of the girl

vendor, when I asked to have only the empty shells! Their late tenants were fried and garnished with parsley and butter, exposed for sale on large dishes in the streets, and in the green-grocer's windows. *Pomatia* is now rarely seen in Essex, and the 'master' is hardly ever found alive, only his empty shell. In Kent, he still flourishes, but an attempt to introduce living specimens into Suffolk has not been very successful.

Now to the river, to look for a perfect harvest of fine forms. To collect river shells with success, go after heavy rains, and when the floods have dried up, and the waters are 'being assuaged,' look upon the grass fields, scratch in the drift wood, then what a multitude of minute thin shells, more numerous than the sea



HELIX POMATIA  
(see repair on shell done by snail).

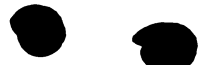
shells, but how different their texture! The sea snail-shells I have, are exceedingly thick and strong, whereas these river beauties are so fragile, that they can be compared to nothing but tissue paper in fineness. Well may the sea-snails, their relations, have houses with such stout walls that a hammer would be required to crack them, for have they not to bear the force and fret of the waves? Well, indeed, may they be sub-

stantial. Dear, fragile river specimens! The tiny spiral *Cochlicopa lubrica* is so minute, it is not larger than that summer insect the *Apion*, and others still smaller must be found with a magnifier. That flat round shell, the *Planorbis corneus*, is like a doll's-house rope coiled up; the baby *Planorbis vortex*, of the same shape, is most minute, like a flat coil of cotton; and the medium-sized brother, *Planorbis umbilicatus*, in dimensions, comes between these two. A spiral shell, of a good size and very pointed tip, the *Limnæa stagnalis*, is most noticeable; but for lovely form and exquisite colouring, a creamy hue like the groundwork of a valuable Doulton vase, observe that queen of the fresh-water shells, the aristocratic *Limnæa auricularia* (see illustration on next page).

The number of tiny shells the caddis fly envelope collects is a museum of study in itself. In my caddis fly's discarded home, on the empty tube, I count the shells of *Bithynia leachii*, *Valvata piscinalis*, *Valvata cristata* and *Sphærium corneum*, all so small that the whole collection would easily rest on a threepenny bit! The 'Titan among such minnows' is *Bithynia tentaculata*, in comparison with which a common house-fly would appear as a giant. *Tentaculata* is in shape very much like the ordinary sea whelk shell, and is sometimes found of a black hue. The delicate marking of reddish spots on *Pyramidula rotundata*, and the fine brown lines of the *Pisidium amnicum*, should be carefully noticed. Then, the fresh-water limpet is a millet seed in size, *Ancylus fluviatilis*, and again the *Hygromia hispida* brings one back to the *Helix* shape of the shell, and is variously named *Helix hispida* and *Helix concinna*. The easiest shell of all to find is the large bivalve, *Anodonta cygnæa*, with its wonderful opal colouring inside; it is 3in. to 4in. long, and 2in. across, or even larger; often it is found in ponds and largely devoured by ducks—doubtless they consider it quite equal in flavour to our



PLANORBIS CORNEUS.



PLANORBIS VORTEX.



LIMNÆA STAONALIS.



LIMNÆA AURICULARIA.



oyster! This shell is often to be bought in shops, exposed for sale, defaced by having so-called pictures painted on its mother-of-pearl-like surface, the opalescent background being too tempting to the dilettante artist to resist.

Need I enumerate more of this host of inhabitants of the little world so seldom explored? In this glimpse of land and fresh-water shells, have I not said enough to prove that there is ample

repayment for the lover of Nature, who will take the trouble to go down into the ditches on each side of the King's highway, and



BITHYNIA TENTACULATA.



PISIDIUM AMNICUM.



ANODONTA CYGNEA.

to the small country rivers, and see the wonders to be found there ?

---

## NOTES AS TO GREAT LEIGHS REGISTERS, 1560 to 1760.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

THE compilation of an index to the earlier centuries of Great Leighs Registers brings out some general facts which seem of interest in themselves and deserve comparison with similar records for other places in Essex.

1. The Registers are in good preservation, and practically every entry can still be made out. But the record is very meagre in all cases, and it is plain that, from time to time, the entries of one or more months, or even for the greater part of a year, are absent. The practice seems to have been to make a note of the baptism, etc., on a slip of paper, and afterwards to transcribe these notes into the parchment Register. But the slips must often have been lost before transcription. Such gaps are especially evident during the last illnesses of incumbents, and the subsequent vacancies. For purposes of strict vital statistics, the numbers given by the Registers are, therefore, valueless, being distinctly below the true numbers by an unknown and variable percentage.

2. So far as the numbers go, they exhibit a singular equality between the sexes. For the two hundred years, 1561-1760, the fully stated entries are:—

Baptisms:—Males, 1,268; females, 1,128; i.e., an excess of males over females of only 140.

Burials:—Males, 827; females, 824; i.e., an excess of males of only 3.

3. Taking into account those entries which are so imperfectly stated as to leave it uncertain whether the baptism or burial is of a boy or a girl, we have, for 1561-1760, 2,389 baptisms, i.e., just under 12 a year; and 1,694 burials, i.e., just over 8 a year. Allowing for the deficiencies of the Registers, we may take the birth-rate of the parish to average 16 yearly; and the death-rate, 12. The number of inhabitants was probably stationary, the natural increase passing away by migration to other parishes.

4. The Registers show a distinct decrease in the number of baptisms, and a distinct increase in the number of burials, as between the two centuries.

	<i>Baptisms.</i>			<i>Burials.</i>		
1561-1660]	...	...	1250	...	...	776
1661-1760]	...	...	1137	...	...	875

113 decrease

99 increase

5. Taking the records of baptisms only, we find 1,273 baptismal names of males; 1,127 of females. In each case a very few names engross a very large proportion of persons.

John occurs 309 times, Thomas 168, William 128, Richard 89, Robert 88. This leaves only 491 boys to be distributed among 75 other names.

In the same way Mary occurs 242 times, Elizabeth 179, Sarah 152, Anne 86. This leaves only 466 girls to be distributed among 58 other names.

As regards those other names few points call for notice. There is a tendency in the late seventeenth and in the early eighteenth centuries to impose less usual Scripture names, *e.g.*, of boys, Hezekiah (1659), Abner (1703), Philemon (1718), Ezra (1727); and of girls, Eunice (1671), Philadelphia (1714). Classical names are Cæsar (1578), Lucretia (1718). The adoption of surnames to serve as baptismal names is seen in Grosvenor (1657) and Hayward (1749). Double names begin for boys

with Adam-Keble (1677, surname Eve, a gentleman); and for girls Anne-Stuart (1717, Townson, the Rector). The first treble name is Henry-Owen-John (1727, surname Clapton). Notice may be taken of Melicent as a boy's name, first found in 1628, and repeated afterwards in the family of Whitlock, and of Thomasin, as a girl's name, first found in 1701. Constance occurs as a boy's name in the baptisms of 1562, but in the boy's burial it appears as Constantine. In 1595 the clerk has written Ciena as a girl's name, and in 1626 Kollam as a boy's name. Are Selina and Columba too wild guesses for these? And what is the true name of the lady who married in 1586 as 'Marcinight' (Tower)? A naive confession of the Rev. John Townson shows us that these odd names are sometimes due to other causes than mis-spelling. Recording the baptism (1720) of 'Bedrus' Warwicker, he adds a note:—'This child was design'd to be call'd *Beatrix*; but, by the mistake of its witnesses, who were positive for the other name, she was baptized as register'd.' A modern parallel occurred in an Oxford parish in 1881, when the clerk, re-inforced by the clergyman, could obtain from the god-parents only an indistinct 'rodiony' as the proposed name, accompanied by a refusal either to spell it or write it. The girl was baptized 'Rhodione,' but, as afterwards appeared, 'Rhoda Annie' had been intended.

6. The surnames which occur in the two hundred years amount, disregarding all minor differences of spelling, to nearly 750. This shows that the population was a migratory one, a family coming into the parish and going out again after a short stay. A surname seldom remains long in residence, and a sequence of three generations (father, son, grandson) is very rare. The two most bulky names are, Barnard (1567 to 1752) comprising about 50 members from first to last, and Middleton (1579 to 1745) comprising about 40 members. Having regard to this migratory spirit, are we to interpret the local jingle, written by the clerk within the cover of the Marriage Register which begins in 1754—

' Great Leighes, if you ples; ;  
You must down on your knees,'

as a prayer for speedy removal from the parish, or a thanksgiving for having arrived in it ?

The surnames can mostly be identified as still in existence in the district. The following, however, seem to be extinct :— Clamtree, Cundlit, Fitzhewes, Foujohn, Highmas (Hymas), Ipse, Jirkyn, Outing, Peartree, Selfscale, Spilman, Spiltimber, Stathurne, Stepink, Terling, Thedam, Winterflood.

Of the puzzling set of names connected by *alias*, we have Smith *alias* Barker, Spooner *alias* Burle, Youngman *alias* Clarke, Collect *alias* Danish, Uprichard *alias* Hughes, Kent *alias* Reynolds.

7. The entries exhibit clearly (*a*) great mortality in child-bed, and (*b*) great mortality of infants and children of under three years. Families are not exceptionally large. Families of seven or eight are not infrequent, but families of ten or over for one husband and wife are rare. There are several recorded cases of twins, but they seldom survive the first weeks of life. There is one case of triplets, born 20th January, buried 25th January 1727.

A somewhat pathetic custom is that of keeping alive certain names in families. Thus if a child John dies, that name is often given to the next boy who is born; if a child Mary dies, that name is often given to the next girl born. Thus, John and Joan Grene had a son John, baptised November, buried December 1569; they named their next child John, baptised 13th January, but buried 25th January 1572. William and Elizabeth Harding had a daughter Judith, baptised 1721, buried 1722; they named their next daughter Judith, baptised 20th December 1724.

## THE ESSEX COUNTY SPORTS AND AMATEUR CHAMPIONSHIPS.

THE phenomenal success which has attended the Essex County Sports, held in the grounds of the Bishop of Colchester, at Chelmsford in the summer of each year, has been a matter upon which the committee of management have been warmly congratulated season after season.

On at least three occasions the Lord Mayor and Mayoress of London have attended in state, and it was in 1891 that His Serene Highness Prince Francis of Teck honoured the

competitors by distributing the prizes. His brother, Prince Alexander George of Teck, had previously attended the meeting, in 1899, when the Sultan M. Khan of Afghanistan was also induced by the Bishop of Colchester to honour the gathering with a visit.

The full name of the Institution which is responsible for the carrying out of the annual athletic festival is the Essex County Cycling and Athletic Association. It was formed in 1883 at a public meeting held at Chelmsford, at the instigation of Mr. Robert Cook, who was appointed hon. secretary and treasurer, which posts he has filled ever since.

The first three gatherings were held on the Romford track, but since then they have invariably been located in the delightful grounds of the Bishop of Colchester at Chelmsford.

The 27th annual contests for the Essex Amateur Championships will be held at Chelmsford on Saturday, July 18th, when the prizes will be distributed by Mrs. Lockwood, wife of Colonel the Right Honourable Mark Lockwood, P.C., C.V.O., M.P., who has accepted the presidency of the Association for 1908, and in whose hands the meeting will undoubtedly lose none of its former lustre.

The following is a list of the Championships competed for each year, with the names of the present holders :—

Name of Championship.	Holder
1 Mile Bicycle.....	J. B. Taylorson, Beaumont Cy. C.
¼ Mile Flat .....	H. S. Harmer, Southend Harriers
1 Mile Flat .....	L. D. Drysdale, Essex Beagles
2 Miles Walk .....	Alfred Pooley, Essex Beagles
100 Yards Flat .....	H. S. Harmer, Southend Harriers

The winner of each Championship receives a gold medal of the value of five guineas, and holds one of the five Twenty Guinea Championship Cups for twelve months.

These cups have to be won three times in succession, or four times in all, before becoming the actual property of a competitor. No less than 15 of these cups have been won outright during the past 20 years. The donors of the present championship cups are :—The Right Honourable the Earl of Warwick (Lord Lieutenant of Essex), Sir Thos. Fowell Buxton, Bart., G.C.M.G., Thomas Osborne, Esq., J.P., Jas. N. Paxman, Esq., J.P., and the Right Honourable Lord Blyth.



Another interesting feature in the list of events is the three miles flat race for the fifty-guinea Atalanta Cup, presented for annual competition by J. H. A. Marshall, Esq., in 1899.

The contest is restricted to amateurs residing in England, just as the county championships are restricted to bona fide amateurs living in Essex. The cup was held for the first six years in succession by Alfred Shrubb, undoubtedly the fastest long distance runner the world has known in modern times. In 1902, when Mr. Shrubb was the 4 and 10 miles Amateur Champion of England, he won the race in 14 min. 25 secs., and thereby constituted a 'world's' grass record for that distance. In 1906 Mr. Shrubb was ineligible to compete, he having joined the professional ranks, and the trophy was won that year by Mr. F. H. Hulford, the then four miles amateur champion of England. The present holder is Mr. A. J. Robertson, of the Birchfield Harriers.



GOLD CHAMPIONSHIP MEDAL.

The grass track on which the race meeting is held each year is considered one of the best and fastest in the country. This opinion is substantiated by the fact that several world's records have been made on it in recent years. The last established was on July 20th, 1907, when Mr. Oswald Groenings, the then 120 yards amateur hurdle champion of England, won the final heat of the 300 yards open hurdle handicap in 37½ seconds, a world's record for that distance.

There are three especial causes which have materially contributed to the unprecedented success of the Association and its annual sports. Starting in a modest way with but one championship race, the sports have increased in interest and

importance every succeeding year, until they now hold the premier position among British county athletic festivals. When spectators were few on the inaugural day, the President, the late O. E. Coope, Esq., M.P., presented the Association with the first championship cup, and since then the leading public men of



ATALANTA CUP.

the county have succeeded yearly to the office of president. The Bishop of Colchester and Mrs. Johnson have also done much to promote the enjoyment of the meetings, by entertaining each July, the principal visitors at the sports in their charming gardens-adjointing the Athletic Grounds.

The second of the main causes of success is the confidence which the leading athletes in Essex, and the country generally, have in the Executive Committee of the Association. They know that the prizes offered are among the best to be obtained anywhere, that the pick of the English officials have control of the events, and that they will meet with the fairest of treatment.

Lastly, the Association has been exceptionally favoured in the person of its Hon. Secretary and Treasurer, Mr. Robert Cook, to whose persistency, enthusiasm and powers of organisation its continuous progress has been mainly due. A capable sportsman, who, in his younger days, was one of the best all round athletes in Essex, Mr. Cook has, for more than a quarter of a century, worked, without fee or reward, to promote pure amateur athletics, and has lived to see his pet hobby, the 'County Sports,' attain a position that no one could possibly have predicted twenty years ago.

He has always had the happy knack and good fortune to secure the assistance and co-operation of the leading members of all the principal amateur clubs of the county, and it is to be hoped that he and his merry men will, for many years to come, retain for the Association the high position that it has won in the athletic world.

---

## THE ESSEX TERRITORIAL FORCE IN 1608.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

**I**N the present year, 1908, 8 Edward VII., the volunteer forces, which had sprung up in Essex in the preceding reign, have been re-constituted as a Territorial Force in intimate relation with the county. The happy discovery by Dr. C. H. Firth, Regius Professor of Modern History at Oxford, of an official letter-book of the Deputy-Lieutenants of Essex enables us to place alongside of present organisation and present difficulties the County Territorial Force of 300 years ago, as it was constituted and as it was being reorganised in 1608, 5 Jac. I., and subsequent years.

Our enquiry naturally starts with the question as to the source and strength of this force. In James I.'s time the stewards of manors still carefully compiled the old feudal lists

of tithing-men, or decenars, as they were sometimes called, who owed allegiance through the manorial court to the sovereign. When these lists were brought together, they supplied for the whole county a census of males of the working classes between the ages of sixteen and sixty, any of whom, in theory, might be impressed for military service. The ordinary formula for musters directed the Lord Lieutenant to provide himself with such a list of possible conscripts, as well as of men actually under arms, ordering him to 'cause a generall view to be taken of all the forces in the county, both horse and foote, and therein to observe that perfect notice be taken and inrollment made of all the numbers, trayned and untrayned.' In 1619, writing to his Deputy-Lieutenant from his house at Bracknell in Berkshire, where he is detained by sickness, the Lord Lieutenant (Robert Ratcliffe, fifth Earl of Sussex, whose chief seat was at Newhall in Boreham parish) says, 'I make noe doubt but you have trayned all from syxteene to threescore; if not, you have done your selves a greate deale of wronge and mee too, for it is soe in all other shires throughout England.' It was part of the duty of the petty constables to make return yearly or half-yearly of such men on the tithing-lists as were fittest, physically and otherwise, to bear arms, if required. The Suffolk return of 1615, while enumerating 145 horse and 3,782 foot in the trained bands, adds 'able men, 10,527.'

The obligation to provide arms and pay for the militia was one of the burdens imposed since feudal times on property in land. From time to time the Deputy-Lieutenants in the county and the Bailiffs in the municipalities took the most recent subsidy-roll, as a convenient rating-book, and made out lists of persons who, singly or in groups, should be charged with 'finding arms,' *i.e.* providing weapons according to regulation, and either serving with them or paying a man, or man and horse, to serve in their stead. The lands of the beneficed clergy were subject to the same charge, only the assessment on them was imposed by their diocesan, the Bishop of London. In May 1619, 'for refusinge to serve in person with his owne armes,' John Throogood of Goldhanger was 'convented at the [Privy] Councill Table and soe committed to the Fleete' until he submitted and promised future obedience. It was a special instruction to the officers to see that substitutes were chosen

from substantial people, and not from mere men-servants. In 1613 Sir Francis Barrington and Sir Gamaliel Capell, Deputy-Lieutenants, instruct the captains to make their companies 'fullie compleate, both with servicable men and, as conveniently as may bee, with such freeholders, fermors, and housholders as are fittinge.' Men in the trained bands were protected from being impressed for foreign service.

Essex was, by tradition, charged with the maintenance, in readiness to take the field, of 4,000 foot and 250 horse. In 1608 the foot were portioned into 20 companies of 200 men, each under a captain. The number of men in a company had been fixed by 'an expresse order by the Privie Councill concerninge the distribution and proporcioninge of all our foote bands to one certaine number.' The number of companies had originally some reference to the old division of the county into 19 hundreds or half-hundreds, with the addition of a company for the one considerable borough, Colchester. The original connection of the hundred and its company of foot is shown by the fact that the hundred, as a unit, had, in some instances, to 'find armes.' On 9 July 1621, the Deputy-Lieutenants ordered that, in addition to the personal claim on them, landowners should also pay their rateable share to the arms 'found by the hundred':—'We hold fit and doe order that those persons that doe finde private armor, must contribute with the rest of the inhabitants where they dwell towards the charge of the hundred armes, if any such bee within their hundred.' On 18 Aug. 1621, the captain of the company for Rochford hundred, in regard that 'such corsletts of your band as were wont to be found by the hundred, called *hundred corsletts*, are for the most parte wantinge, and [the rest] thereof defective and unservicable,' that hundred was ordered to levy £20 'for the buyinge and provision of the aforesaid armes and furniture.' The inequalities in size and resources between the hundreds had led, however, to several practical modifications of the idea that each division should furnish one company. The hundred of Freshwell, the half-hundred of Clavering, and the liberty of Havering do not appear, being merged probably in the hundreds of Hinckford, Uttlesford, and Becontree. The half-hundred of Harlow and the half-hundred of Waltham were joined together to furnish a company. Hinckford hundred, containing populous

towns engaged in woollen manufacture, furnished no less than three companies. The hundreds of Lexden and Tendring, in addition to supplying their own companies, furnished each 100 men to form a separate company under a separate captain. In August 1611, the Lord Lieutenant condemned this arrangement as causing 'charge and labour' through 'the remote habitations of the captain,' and recommended that the 100 Tendring men should be attached to the existing Tendring company and the 100 Lexden men to the Lexden company. The Deputy-Lieutenants in vain urged the order of Privy Council already mentioned, and that if two captains have their companies raised to 300 strong, 'such an unequallity or disproportion will procure a just offence and dislike amonge the rest, who are noe doubt, or at least will deeme themselves to bee, as well worthy soe great a command.' This made the number of companies 19. The men furnished by the clergy were not counted in with the companies.

During the decrepitude of Queen Elizabeth there had been no difficulty in supplying the four thousand men. The trained men were allowed to muster with such obsolete weapons as bills and bows, and, if their numbers fell short, untrained men were paraded to complete the files. After the accession of James I. the Privy Council, acting as the War Office of the day, insisted that the whole Territorial Force should have undergone training and should be armed with regulation pike or fire-arm. The increased efficiency, according to the Deputy-Lieutenants, ought to have entitled the county to a reduction of its foot to 3,000 men. 26 March 1613, the Deputy-Lieutenants sent the Lord Lieutenant 'a certificate of all the trayned foote bands, by which your Lordship may perceive that the same are now more in number and better furnished a great deale than at any time heretofore, though the number of 4,000 be not fully compleate, 2,000 of which beinge formerly of the untrayned companies, and a great many of the rest consistinge of browne-bills and longe-bowes, and by commandement from the Lords of the Councell converted either [*i.e.* both of them] into more chargable and servicable armes is the cause that the totall could never wel be filled, as alsoe that, in our letters heretofore to the Lords of the Councell, wee have humblie prayed for an abatement of one thowsand, parcell of the said 4,000.'

Somewhat later the Privy Council compelled the adoption of one type of fire-arm. In 1618 the Lord Lieutenant was directed to 'be very carefull to see [that] the armes of those forces be *good and servicable*, which wee understand for the foote to bee musketts, and pikes, compleate and fullie furnished. For, although many calivers are in diverse counties inrolled amongst the shott, yet your Lordship well knoweth that the moderne use doth altogether exclude the caliver as unservicable, and not to bee allowed uppon anie musters of armes. And therefore we doe hereby require your Lordship to change all such calivers as are amongst your bands of that county into musketts, with as much conveniency as you may, for the advantage and behoofe of his majesty's service.' The change, as will be seen, was effected with surprizing rapidity.

The actual strength of the foot-companies, as shown at successive musters, was as follows :—

1608—3,473, *i.e.*, 1,558 pikes, 917 muskets, 998 calivers.

1615—3,681, *i.e.*, 1,598 pikes, 23 bills and halberts, 1,442 muskets, 620 calivers.

1618—3,610, *i.e.*, 1,651 pikes, 10 halberts, 1,859 muskets, 90 calivers.

1619—3,800, *i.e.*, 1,760 pikes, 2,040 muskets.

1620—3,816, *i.e.*, 1,879 pikes, 1,937 muskets.

1623—3,826, *i.e.*, 1,832 pikes, 1,994 muskets.

Special difficulty was experienced in raising the horse. One reason was the impoverishment of the yeoman-class. In 1621, *e.g.*, the Deputy-Lieutenants dwell on 'the generall decay of the yeomandry of this county, amongst whom soe few are found fit to undergoe this charge, in respect of the tymes precedent.' Heavier burdens had, therefore, to be laid on the wealthier land-owners. 'Wee must of necessitie be constreynd to impose the more horses upon the knights and gentlemen of best ranke and worth, who are always furnished for their own employments with horses that are fit for this use, though (where cause shalbe) we may spare them of some foote armes' by way of compensation. A still more active cause was the growing feeling that such charges were obsolete, unjust, and not really enforcible by law. Time after time the Deputy-Lieutenants send warrants to persons charged with finding horse and arms and rider, and not one in four of these persons pays the slightest heed to the warrant served on them. In October 1615, Sir Francis Barrington, Sir William Maynard, and their brothers in the

Deputy-Lieutenancy, complain to the Lord Lieutenant :—‘ For the troupes of horses, we have by our diligence found out men of sufficient abilitie to make them full and compleate, and ourselves in persons attended the view at the day appointed, yet can wee receive noe other returne than their either letters of excuse, or of delay, or hopes of discharge, or plaine refusalls. And from some of those of the better sort (though continually charged, without any exception [*i.e.*, reasonable excuse] on their parte) neither service, nor any answere at all. Whether the longe disuse of armes, or the slacke proceedinge against offenders of all kinds, or the [neglect of] secondinge of our travell by superior authority, hath bred the neglect of command, wee leave to your Lordship’s honorable consideration. But unless your Lordship doe speedily endeavor a redresse herein, our further labores will be fruitless.’ In November 1623, they write to the Privy Council :—‘ Notwithstanding our continuall endeavors to make those troopes [of horse] full and compleate (for which purpose ourselves have attended personally at everie muster) the neglect of that service is of late growne so frequent and generall, as that we are discouraged therein, finding our labours to be altogether fruitlesse, and, unless your Lordships be pleased to take some speedie course for redresse herein, wee feare the service will in short tyme be wholly contemned.’

The horse was divided into two sorts, heavy and light.

There was one troop of heavy horse of the nominal strength of 50, but it always fell far short of that number. This was regarded as the costliest of military burdens, and therefore to ‘ be raised amongst the most able knights and gentlemen and others of best habilitie within ’ the county. The captaincy was regarded as ‘ the principall command of the horse of this county.’

The county was also to supply 200 light horse. In 1608 these were all in one troop, under command of Sir William Smyth. In July of that year the Lord Lieutenant decided that it was ‘ verie inconvenient ’ that so large a force should be ‘ under the charge of any one captaine,’ and directed a division into two troops, one to be raised in the northern hundreds of the shire (Hinckford, Tendring, Lexden, Winstree, Thurstable, Witham, Dunmow, Uttlesford, Freshwell, Clavering, and the borough of Colchester), the other by the southern hundreds (Barstable, Chafford, Becontree with Havering liberty, Chelms-



ford, Rochford, Dengie, Ongar, Harlow, Waltham, and the borough of Maldon). The greater prestige of a command of horse over one of foot is somewhat neatly shown in 1613. The Lord Lieutenant then referred to the Deputy-Lieutenants a request of 'old Mr. French' to be transferred from the charge of a company of foot to one of horse. Their answer was:—'As for Mr. French, a gentleman whom we love and very much affect, desiring to be captaine of a hundred light horses, besides that wee not then know whom to name in that division to take his present charge, we doe conceive that it beinge the greatest command in all the county, it is fittest for the best knight and justice of peace in the same.'

The horse-troops were generally mustered on one day, and at Chelmsford. This was partly done to prevent a horse and arms and rider being sent to the muster of one company in one man's name, and then to the muster of another company in another man's name. Special instructions were given to the captains of horse to make a note of the height, colour, etc., of horses presented at their musters, with a view to checking this evasion of the service. So prevalent was the practice that a suggestion was made that neighbouring shires should muster their horse-troops on one and the same day to prevent this particular deception on a wider scale.

The returns as to the horse are less complete than those as to the foot. Instead of the nominal 250 the horse mustered in 1615, 155; in 1619, 200; in 1620, 172. In 1617 the number actually present was 83, and, to save their face, the Deputy-Lieutenants were fain to count in 39 persons who had promised, but came not, making a fictitious muster of 122.

After the question of the strength of the rank and file, our enquiry naturally turns to the question of how they were officered. These letters of the Deputy-Lieutenants have a good deal to say about three sets of officers, the Lord Lieutenant, the captains, and the muster-master. The Lord Lieutenant as the King's 'lieutenant-general' in the county was ex-officio in command of the whole Territorial Force of the county, a sort of lieutenant-general of a small division, both in the county and elsewhere, since his lieutenancy gave him authority 'to drawe all the power of this county into other partes of this kingdome.' Of the Lord Lieutenant's interest in the Territorial Forces, in

regard to musters, both in respect of letters of inquiry and by personal presence on review-days, there is no question; as to the technical skill of this earl of Sussex, or any other Lord Lieutenant so appointed, to lead this force in battle or campaign, that question lies outside the province of these notes.

The efficiency of the Territorial Force depended mainly on the captains of companies, and this is abundantly recognised in contemporary documents. The recognised qualifications for a captain were that he should be (a) a man of adequate means, and (b) resident in the district from which the company was drawn. The Lord Lieutenant's perpetual injunction to his deputies is:—'If in your generall survey you doe finde any want of captaines, that you doe nominate and appointe some other sufficient gentlemen nere dwellinge in the same hundred to take upon them the same captainship soe voyde.' There is never any allusion to previous military training in the person pitched upon for command, but it may be assumed that the officers selected had formerly served as lieutenants or cornets under older relatives who had formerly been captains. Nominally the appointment of captain rested solely in the Lord Lieutenant, and there are occasions in which he exercised his right without consulting his deputies. In practice, he seems generally to have referred the vacancy to his deputies, to be filled up in the light of their superior local knowledge. The case of 'old Mr. French,' already cited, is a case of their setting aside a recommendation made by their chief. Accordingly, when the Deputies grumble at the inferiority in social standing and consequent inability of the modern captains to attract recruits, the Lord Lieutenant had his answer ready to hand—the appointments were really their own. Sir Francis Barrington and Sir Gamaliel Capell to the Lord Lieutenant, 18 January, 1613, 'Wee doe let your Lordship understand that the captaines of the severall foote-bands, where such defects of armes have beene certified unto you by the muster-master, are noe doubt much to blame for sufferinge such wants and decrease in the same. For certainly the upholdinge and perfectinge of the companies in soe good strength and number as is required must be the continuall worke, effect, and industrie of every particular captain who both best know the sufficientest men to be charged in ther severall lymitts, and in respect of their neighbourhoode

and authoritie in those places, may more easilie gaine, persuade, and require them therunto. And herewithall wee thinke it some parte of our office and duty to lett your lordship understand that these kinde of complaints were never heard of in former tymes, when the most worthy and principall gentlemen of this county were only selected to undergoe these services who, out of their owne power and grate care to preferr their reputations, did not only provide to have their numbers allwayes compleate, but even full with the most substantiall freeholders of every hundred.' Lord Lieutenant to Barrington and Capell, 2 February 1613:—' You seeme to dislike the sufficiency and worth of the captains that are selected to undergoe those services. I am to answer thus much for myselfe, that I have often referred the nomination of the captains to you, and those which now have the charge were rather selected by you than by me.'

The muster-master was an expert assessor to assist the Lord Lieutenant in keeping the muster-roll of the troops, and in supervising the drills. His duty was to be present at the formal muster of every company or group of companies, to bring his copy of the muster-roll up to date, to report on the serviceableness of the weapons then shewed, and to give instruction in manual and manœuvres. He was paid by a fee of sixpence per man, sent by the finder of the arms, and paid on the muster day. There was great reluctance to pay this fee, and he had recourse to the expedient of making the Lord Lieutenant add a postscript to every letter about musters—' remember the muster-master.' *E.g.*, Lord Lieutenant to his Deputies, commanding a muster for 1615:—' Acording to former custom, require each captain by your letters to make collection of £5 in their severall divisions for the Muster-master's intertainment, and to pay it to him at the day of the view, that he may be encouraged in disciplinge and martiallinge the unskillful souldiours.' The muster-master in 1608 was Capt. Benjamin Hughes; in 1613, Mr. William Grehams; in 1623, a new man, unnamed; in 1627, Ralph Eltonhead.

Little is said in the letters about the training of the forces. It may be assumed that the captains exercised their men privately, so that they might make a creditable appearance on the official review-day, the ' muster ' for the year. There was a distinct conflict of opinion between the Deputy-Lieutenants,

representing the ratepayers, and the Lord Lieutenant, representing the War Office, as to the annual musters. The Deputy Lieutenants wished each company to muster by itself at its own centre, so that the men should not have far to go and the finders of arms have to provide only one day's pay. The Lord Lieutenant wished some four or five companies to muster together, partly to conclude the muster within shorter time (in 4 days instead of 19), partly for practice in acting together in larger bodies. In 1613, he writes:—' In my opinion I thinke it very expedient to take the view of them at 4 severall dayes in fower places as conveniently as may be for the companies, or else to reduce them into regiments as formerly they have been, and the most sufficient and principall gentlemen of the shire to take the charge of them.' A stronger reason in favour of the larger musters was that it checked the underhand procedure of showing pike, or musket, first at one centre and, on a later day, at another. Lord Lieutenant, 1621:—' I thinke it very fitt and expedient that the dayes and places for the musters be soe appointed that the country borrow not armes one of the other, which is a common and ordinarie course, whereby his Majesty's service is much hindered and the state exceedingly abused.' Lord Lieutenant, 1623:—' Command the captains to put their marks upon their armes that they may know the one from the other.' In 1623 the Privy Council complained that the system of drill was obsolete:—' His Majestye in his princely wisdome observeth that the manninge and trayninge, and arminge heitherto generally used in his kingdome, is not soe exact and servicable as the course held both by all strangers, and by his owne subjects beinge in forraigne employment.' A new drill book was, therefore, sent to every captain of horse or foot, ' intituled *Instructions for Musters and Armes and the use thereof,*' for their ' better direction in the manninge, arminge, furnishinge and exercisinge ' of their troops.

A good deal is said incidentally about the equipment of the trained bands, but the substance of it may be compressed into small space. The uniform was a coat, then provided at the cost of 12s. each, but this was not required except when the soldiers were called out for actual service. For distinction of companies on the muster-days, ribbons of different colours, worn in the hat, were judged sufficient.

The pikeman was required to have a 'pike made of very good seasoned clift ash, of the length of 18 foote at the least, the diameter, about the middest thereof, no less than one inch and three quarters; the head to be well steeled, eight inches in length, made broade and sworde-pointed, the cheekes not to be under two feet in length well-rivited; and the butt-end of the pike to be well bounde with a ringe of iron.' His defensive armour was to be 'a corslett, consisting of a good brest-plate and back-peece, and a gorget, of iron, with taces and strong buckles to fasten the taces unto the skirt; a good murrion or head piece.' He was also to have 'a good stronge and servicable sworde, the blade thereof not above 3 feet in length, in a good scabert with belt and hangers.'

The musket was to have a barrel of 4 feet in length and not over, with a bore 'answerable to the bignes of a round leaden bullet of eleven to the pound.' For the musket, he had a rest of  $4\frac{1}{2}$  feet in length. His bandolier was to have 15 'charges' (or powder-receptacles) of wood covered with leather. He carried also a primer, worm and scourer, a bullet-bag, and a mould 'to cast such bulletts as aforesayd.' For close fight he had a sword, 3ft. in length. His sole defensive armour was a head-piece.

The caliver had a barrel  $3\frac{1}{2}$  feet long, with a bore 'answerable in widenes to the bignes of a round leaden bullet of seventeene to the pound.' The bearer had no rest, as the caliver was fired pistol-wise or from the shoulder. His other equipment was that of a musketeer.

The heavy horseman, called 'a lanceire or cuirassere' was to have a trotting horse up to his weight, 'with buffe saddle, bridle, bitt, petternell and crooper,' to be protected by a head-piece or burganett with close cheeks, gorget, pistol-proof back-piece and breast-piece of iron, with powldrions, vambraces, cuishes, and tasses, and strong buckles to fasten them; a left-hand gauntlet and cullet [*i.e.*, plate covering lower part of the back]. For close fight he was to have a short sword, and a case of French pistols of 22 inches long, with a good flask and a touch box. Oddly enough nothing is said about the lance.

The light horseman was to have a trotting horse, with buff saddle, bridle, bit, petternell, and crooper; a good head-piece, good curatts (*i.e.*, cuirass, or back and breast pieces), horseman's

staff, a French pistol 22 inches long, and a short sword. In 1625 the horseman's staff was replaced by 'a sufficient harquebus or petronell,' with fire-lock, with barrel three feet long, and carrying a bullet of 20 to the pound.

For practice on the muster-day the finder of arms was required to provide powder, with match and bullet proportionable, as ordered on each occasion. In reserve against invasion the county was required to have 'a certain quantity of powder kept as a store, with match and bullets, with other provision for carriages to be kept in readiness upon all occasions.' These munitions were to be 'kept in the shire towne, or such toun as you shall thinke meetest for the safe keepinge of itt, and not in any such place as may be easilie subject to dainger of surprize of any evill-disposed persons.' The ordinary arsenals in Essex were the Moot-hall at Colchester, the Vestry at Chelmsford, and a private house at Brentwood; a last [=24 barrels each containing a cwt.] of powder in the first magazine, half-a-last in the other two. From time to time also there were munitions stored in the Moot-hall at Maldon, and in the Church at Harwich. In connection with this county arsenal there are two quaint incidents recorded. In 1613 the Lord-Lieutenant was urged by 'my lord of Worcester' to patronise one Jefferies, dwelling at Creete Church within Algate, 'by giving him the county order for powder,' and expressed his desire to that effect to his Deputies. They made prompt reply:—'As for the price of powder which Jefferies demandeth, viz., 12*d.* the pound, we suppose that price to be excessive and unreasonable (consideringe the quantitie we are to buy) as that we shall deserve very ill of our country if we did not procure the same at a lower rate. And even soe wee intend and thinke good to doe, if his price be not more easie and indifferent.'

In March 1619, £100 was levied on the county to replenish the magazine, Witham hundred being rated at £5, Chelmsford hundred at £9. In May 1619, £66 of this sum was handed to Sir John Sammes, one of the Deputy-Lieutenants, to purchase powder, match, and bullets. Part of his purchase, viz., 8 barrels of match, weighing in all 8½ cwt., and 7 firkins each containing 1 cwt. of musket bullets, he ordered to be taken from London by water to Maldon, and thence to Chelmsford. Finding that these cases had not been delivered there, he went to Colchester in

January 1620, and found them in the moot-hall there. He left orders that on receipt of a letter from him they should be sent to Chelmsford. No letter came, and the cases remained at Colchester, till, on an order made by new Deputy-Lieutenants, they were delivered to Charles Biglaud at Chelmsford in April 1624. The carriage from Colchester to Chelmsford cost 23s. 3d.

The history of the separate companies may now be given. It is to be noted that in some cases the figures do not add up properly; they are wrong in the MS., which, of course, has had to be followed. In 1619 in several cases it would seem that the figures for pikes and muskets have been transposed, but there is no way of checking the statement of the MS.

I. Uttlesford hundred, 25 parishes and 2 hamlets, perhaps including Clavering half-hundred, 6 parishes and 2 hamlets.

*Captains* :—1608, James Reynolds; 1615, Henry Mordant.

*Muster-places* :—1 March 1613, Saffron Walden; 11 Oct. 1614, Braintree; 4 Sept. 1615, 29 June 1618, Saffron Walden; 30 March 1619, Braintree; 15 July 1622, Thaxstead; 21 June 1624, Saffron Walden.

*Strength* :—1608, 186, *i.e.* 83 pikes, 54 muskets, 40 calivers.  
1613, 200, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 91 muskets, 26 calivers.  
1615, 200, *i.e.* 95 pikes, 60 muskets, 45 calivers.  
1619, 200, *i.e.* 83 pikes, 117 muskets.  
1620 and 1623, 200, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 116 muskets.

II., III., IV. Hinckford hundred, 44 parishes, 2 hamlets; including perhaps Freshwell hundred, 10 parishes.

II. Hinckford A Company.

*Captains* :—1608, Joshua Barners; 1620, Thomas Cooke.

*Muster-places* :—2 March 1613, Thaxsted; 11 Oct. 1614, Braintree; 5 Sept. 1615, 27 Sept. 1618, Thaxsted; 30 March 1619, Braintree; 15 July 1622, Thaxsted; 21 June 1624, Saffron Walden.

*Strength* :—1608, 176, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 55 muskets, 37 calivers.  
1613, 206, *i.e.* 72 pikes, 83 muskets, 70 calivers.  
1615, 179, *i.e.* 107 pikes, 57 muskets, 15 calivers.  
1619, 200, *i.e.* 96 pikes, 104 muskets.  
1621, 194, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 104 muskets.  
1623, 200, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 110 muskets.

III. Hinckford B Company.

*Captains* :—1608, Thomas Waldgrave; 1611, Thomas Perrient (?); 1613, Thomas French; 1614, Sir Thomas Eden; 1618, John Sparrow.

*Muster-places* :—5 March 1613, 11 Oct. 1614, Braintree; 8 Sept. 1615, Halstead; 24 June 1618, Castle Hedingham; 30 March 1619, 16 July 1622, 22 June 1624, Braintree.

*Strength* :—1608, 185, *i.e.* 91 pikes, 50 muskets, 54 calivers.  
1613, 200, *i.e.* 98 pikes, 57 muskets, 45 calivers.

1615, 200, *i.e.* 83 pikes, 117 muskets.

1619, 1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 100 muskets.

IV. Hinckford C Company.

*Captains*:—1608, Sir Thomas Gardiner; 1619, Thomas Wiseman of Northend.

*Muster-places*:—4 March 1613, 11 Oct. 1614, 7 Sept. 1615, 25 June 1618, 30 March 1619, 16 July 1622, 22 June 1624—all at Braintree.

*Strength*:—1608, 199, *i.e.* 88 pikes, 49 muskets, 62 calivers.

1613, 200, *i.e.* 87 pikes, 50 muskets, 70 calivers.

1615, 200, *i.e.* 95 pikes, 73 muskets, 32 calivers.

1619, 200, *i.e.* 106 pikes, 94 muskets.

1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 94 pikes, 105 muskets.

V.—Dunmow hundred, 25 parishes, 3 hamlets.

*Captains*:—1608, Thomas Wiseman, esq.; 1615, Robert Wiseman of Canfield.

*Muster-places*:—3 March 1613, Dunmow; 11 Oct. 1614, Braintree 6 Sept. 1615, 26 June 1618, Dunmow; 30 March 1619, Braintree; 15 July 1622, Thaxted; 22 June 1624, Braintree.

*Strength*:—1608, 189, *i.e.* 88 pikes, 44 muskets, 55 calivers.

1613, 1615, 200, *i.e.* 80 pikes, 50 muskets, 70 calivers.

1619, 200, *i.e.* 80 pikes, 120 muskets.

1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 120 pikes, 80 muskets.

VI.—Lexden hundred, 29 parishes.

*Captains*:—1608, Sir Thomas Beckingham; 1613, John Argoll; 1622, John Littlebury.

*Muster-places*:—9 March 1613, Coxall (? Coggeshall); 12 Oct. 1614, 12 Sept 1615, 20 June 1618, 31 March 1619, 17 July 1622, 23 June 1624—all at Colchester.

*Strength*:—1608, 186, *i.e.* 87 pikes, 50 muskets, 49 calivers. See note *infra*.

1613, 275, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 92 muskets, 83 calivers.

1615, 280, *i.e.* 119 pikes, 94 muskets, 76 calivers.

1619, 300, *i.e.* 154 pikes, 146 muskets.

1620, 1623, 300, *i.e.* 146 pikes, 154 muskets.

Note.—In 1608 companies VI. and VII. were of 200 only; there then being an additional company nominally drawing 100 from each hundred.

*Captain*:—1608, Mr. Camock, succeeded by John Argoll.

*Strength*:—1608, 164, *i.e.* 69 pikes, 26 muskets, 69 calivers.

In 1613 this company is suppressed and its men equally divided between companies VI. and VII.

VII. Tendring hundred, 34 parishes.

*Captains*:—1608, Edward Waldgrave; 1611, Sir Harbottle Grimston 1619, Roger Manwood; 1622, William Lynn.

*Muster-places*:—6 March 1613, Manningtree; 12 Oct. 1614, Colchester; 9 Sept. 1615, 23 June 1615, Manningtree; 31 March 1619, 17 July 1622, 23 June 1624, Colchester. In 1620 Braintree was appointed for the muster of this company,



and a note is made :—' Harwich and Dovercourt stand charged with 36 men, part of this band, who refuse to send them forth of that corporation to be mustered.'

*Strength* :—1608, 164, *i.e.* 69 pikes, 26 muskets, 69 calivers.

See note *supra*.

1613, 294, *i.e.* 104 pikes, 89 muskets, 100 calivers, 1 halbert.

1615, 260, *i.e.* 89 pikes, 85 muskets, 86 calivers.

1619, 275, *i.e.* 105 pikes, 170 muskets.

1620, 265, *i.e.* 97 pikes, 168 muskets.

1623, 264, *i.e.* 93 pikes, 166 muskets.

#### VIII. Colchester company.

*Captains* :—1608, Sir George Sayer ; 1615, John Sayer ; 1621, Thomas Higham ; 1625, John Norton.

*Mustering-places* :—Colchester, on all recorded occasions. In 1620 this company was ordered to be mustered at Braintree on Oct. 3, but ' Mr. John Sayer certifieth that the inhabitants of Colchester, where his band is raised, refused to be drawne out of that corporation to be mustered att any other place.'

*Strength* :—1608, 194, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 42 muskets, 68 calivers.

1613, 200, *i.e.* 82 pikes, 57 muskets, 53 calivers, 8 halberts.

1615, 200, *i.e.* 81 pikes, 64 muskets, 43 calivers, 12 halberts.

1619, 200, *i.e.* 94 pikes, 106 muskets.

1620, 200, *i.e.* 106 pikes, 94 muskets.

1623, 200, *i.e.* 92 pikes, 103 muskets.

#### IX. Thurstable half-hundred, 10 parishes.

*Captains* :—1608, William Wrothe ; 1615, Sir Garrett Sammes ; 1622, John Freshwater of Heybridge.

*Mustering-places* :—10 March 1613, Kelvedon ; 12 Oct. 1614, Colchester ; 13 Sept. 1615, Paternoster heath ; 18 June 1618, Toulston (? Tolleshunt) plain ; 31 March 1619, 22 July 1622, 23 June 1624, Colchester.

*Strength* :—1608, 156, *i.e.* 66 pikes, 44 muskets, 46 calivers.

1613, 174, *i.e.* 72 pikes, 40 muskets, 53 calivers, 9 halberts.

1615, 157, *i.e.* 73 pikes, 41 muskets, 36 calivers, 7 bills.

1619, 170, *i.e.* 80 pikes, 90 muskets.

1620, 1622, 170, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 80 muskets.

#### X. Witham half-hundred, 15 parishes, 1 hamlet.

*Captains* :—1608, Sir Thomas Wiseman, knight (senior) ; 1622, Sir Thomas Wiseman, knight (junior) ; 1624, Richard Everard.

*Mustering-places* :—11 March 1613, Maldon ; 11 Oct. 1614, Chelmsford ; 14 Sept. 1615, Witham ; 18 June 1618, Boreham ; 1 Apr. 1619, Chelmsford ; 16 July, 1622, 22 June 1624, Braintree.

*Strength* :—1608, 168, *i.e.* 84 pikes, 46 muskets, 38 calivers.

1613, 182, *i.e.* 69 pikes, 63 muskets, 49 calivers.

1615, 200, *i.e.* 78 pikes, 84 muskets, 38 calivers.

1619, 200, *i.e.* 104 pikes, 96 muskets.

1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 96 muskets, 104 pikes.

XI. Chelmsford hundred, 30 parishes, 1 hamlet.

*Captains* :—1603, Sir William Hennis; 1620, Sir Henry Mildmay.

*Muste-place* :—Chelmsford on all recorded occasions.

*Strength* :—1608, 184, *i.e.* 87 pikes, 48 muskets, 49 calivers.

1613, 190, *i.e.* 92 pikes, 59 muskets, 39 calivers.

1615, 192, *i.e.* 76 pikes, 75 muskets, 41 calivers.

1619, 200, *i.e.* 105 pikes, 95 muskets.

1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 100 muskets.

XII. Maldon (? and Winstree half hundred, 10 parishes).

*Captains* :—1608, Sir William Ayloffe; 1613, Sir Edward Bullock;

1618, William Mildmay.

*Muste-places* :—13 March 1613, Maldon; 11 Oct. 1614, Chelmsford;

16 Sept. 1615, 16 June 1618, Maldon; 1 April 1619,

18 July 1622, 24 June 1624, Chelmsford.

*Strength* :—1603, 188, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 64 muskets, 38 calivers.

1613, 178, *i.e.* 78 pikes, 66 muskets, 34 calivers.

1615, 173, *i.e.* 76 pikes, 65 muskets, 32 calivers.

1619, 1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 100 muskets.

XIII. Dengie hundred, 20 parishes, 2 hamlets.

*Captains* :—1603, Sir Francis Hennis; 1612, Robert Wiseman of Mayland; 1622, Giles Browne.

*Muste-places* :—12 March 1613, Maldon; 11 Oct. 1614, Chelmsford;

18 Sept. 1615, 16 June 1618, Althorne; 1 Apr. 1619,

18 July 1622, 24 June 1624, Chelmsford.

*Strength* :—1603, 123, *i.e.* 50 pikes, 30 muskets, 46 calivers.

1613, 175, *i.e.* 67 pikes, 59 muskets, 49 calivers.

1615, 159, *i.e.* 77 pikes, 64 muskets, 18 calivers.

1619, 190, *i.e.* 97 pikes, 93 muskets.

1620, 1623, 176, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 90 muskets.

XIV. Rochford hundred, 24 parishes, 2 hamlets,

*Captains* :—1608, Sir James Bouchier (or Butcher); 1622, Edmund Humfrey.

*Muste-places* :—15 March 1613, Rochford; 11 Oct. 1614, Chelmsford;

19 Sept. 1615, 13 June 1618, Rochford; 1 April 1619,

18 July 1622, 24 June 1624, Chelmsford.

*Strength* :—1603, 184, *i.e.* 80 pikes, 89 muskets, 35 calivers.

1613, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 70 muskets, 30 calivers.

1615, 177, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 80 muskets, 11 calivers.

1619, 175, *i.e.* 85 pikes, 90 muskets.

1620, 175, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 85 muskets.

1623, 174, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 84 muskets.

XV. Barstable hundred, 34 parishes.

*Captains* :—1608, John Harlstone; 1615, Sir Thomas Gourney; 1620, Sir William Fitch (or Finch); 1622, Sir Richard Saltonstall.

*Muste-places* :—16 March 1613, Billericay; 12 Oct. 1614, Brentwood;

20 Sept. 1615, 12 June 1618, Billericay; 2 April 1619,  
19 July 1622, 25 June 1624. Brentwood.

*Strength* :—1603, 139, *i.e.* 66 pikes, 40 muskets, 33 calivers  
1613, 184, *i.e.* 83 pikes, 69 muskets, 32 calivers.  
1615, 171, *i.e.* 87 pikes, 84 muskets.  
1619, 160, *i.e.* 82 pikes, 78 muskets.  
2620, 1623, 176, *i.e.* 90 pikes, 86 muskets.

**XVI.**—Chafford hundred, 16 parishes.

*Captains* :—1608, Sir Richard Saltonstall; 1619, Sir William Fitch (or  
Finch); 1620, Sir Thomas Gourney.

*Muster-places* :—Brentwood, on all occasions recorded.

*Strength* :—1608, 149, *i.e.* 78 pikes, 30 muskets, 41 calivers.  
1613, 177, *i.e.* 68 pikes, 65 muskets, 36 calivers, 8 halberts.  
1615, 200, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 74 muskets, 36 calivers, 4 halberts.  
1619, 140, *i.e.* 59 pikes, 78 muskets.  
1620, 160, *i.e.* 78 pikes, 82 muskets.  
1623, 166, *i.e.* 76 pikes, 90 muskets.

**XVII.** Beacontree hundred, 9 parishes, 6 hamlets, with Havering liberty, 1  
parish, 7 hamlets.

*Captains* :—1608, Sir Nicholas Coote.

*Muster-places* :—18 March 1613, Romford; 12 Oct. 1614, Brentwood;  
22 Sept. 1615, 10 June 1618, Romford; 2 Apr. 1619,  
19 July 1622, 25 June 1624, Brentwood.

*Strength* :—1608, 182, *i.e.* 86 pikes, 44 muskets, 52 calivers.  
1613, 200, *i.e.* 73 pikes, 95 muskets, 30 calivers.  
1615, 189, *i.e.* 83 pikes, 106 muskets.  
1619, 200, *i.e.* 95 pikes, 105 muskets.  
1620, 200, *i.e.* 112 pikes, 88 muskets.  
1623, 200, *i.e.* 110 pikes, 90 muskets.

**XVIII.** Harlow half-hundred, 10 parishes, 3 hamlets, with Waltham half-  
hundred, 4 parishes, 3 hamlets.

*Captains* :—1608, Sir Reginald (or Richard) Argoll; 1613, Sir  
Henry Lee; Sir Edward Altham; 1620, Robert Leigh of  
Chingford; 1622, Richard Bugges.

*Muster-places* :—19 March 1613, Epping; 12 Oct. 1614, Brentwood;  
27 Sept. 1615, 9 June 1618, Epping; 2 Apr. 1619,  
Brentwood; 20 July 1622, Ongar; 25 June 1624,  
Brentwood.

*Strength* :—1608, 163, *i.e.* 58 pikes, 55 muskets, 50 calivers.  
1613, 200, *i.e.*, 64 pikes, 82 muskets, 54 calivers.  
1615, 184, *i.e.* 65 pikes, 119 muskets.  
1619, 190, *i.e.*, 65 pikes, 125 muskets.  
1620, 1623, 200, *i.e.* 100 pikes, 100 muskets.

**XIX.** Ongar hundred, 26 parishes, 1 hamlet.

*Captains* :—1608, Clement Stonar; 1613, Edward Elrington; 1615,  
Henry Archer of Theydon Garnon; 1615, Sir Gamaliel  
Capell; 1618, Francis Stonar.

*Muster-places* :—20 March 1613, Ongar; 12 Oct. 1614, Brentwood;  
28 Sept. 1615, 8 June 1618, 2 Apr. 1619, 20 July 1622,  
Ongar; 25 June 1624, Brentwood.

- Strength*:—1608, 154, *i.e.* 61 pikes, 39 muskets, 54 calivers.  
 1613, 163, *i.e.* 59 pikes, 52 muskets, 52 calivers.  
 1615, 160, *i.e.* 60 pikes, 50 muskets, 50 calivers.  
 1619, 160, 623, 200, *i.e.* 70 pikes, 103 muskets.
1. Heavy Horse : 50 on paper.  
*Captains* :—1605, Sir Edward Huddleston; refused in 1608 by Sir William Smith and Thomas Lucas; 1611, Sir Henry Mildmay of Waltham; 1620, Sir Henry Appleton, Bart.; 1625, Sir Henry Mildmay of Grace's; 1628, John Lucas.  
*Muster-place* :—Chelmsford, on all occasions.  
*Strength* :—1615, 32; 1617, 16 with 9 additional promises; 1619, 46; 1620, 40; 1628, 66.
2. Northern Hundreds Light Horse : 100 on paper.  
*Captains* :—1611, Sir Gowen Harvey; 1911, refused by Sir Thomas Bendish; 1612, refused by Thomas Lucas; 1613, Sir Henry Mildmay of Grace's; 1624, Sir John Meade; 1628, Thomas Bendish.  
*Muster-place* :—Chelmsford, usually; 30 March 1619, Braintree.  
*Strength* :—1615, 63; 1617, 37 with 16 promises; 1619, 77; 1620, 63; 1623, 60; 1628, 97.
3. Southern Hundreds Light Horse : 100 on paper.  
*Captains* :—1611, Sir Thomas Elliott; 1619, Sir Gowen Harvie; 1628, Peter Latham.  
*Muster-place* :—Chelmsford, usually; 2 April 1619, Brentwood.  
*Strength* :—1615, 60; 1617, 30 with 14 promises; 1619, 77; 1620, 69; 1623, 65; 1628, 107.

## DEATH OF MR. THOMAS THOMPSON, OF CHELMSFORD.

THE death occurred at Chelmsford on Sunday, March 8, of Mr. Thomas Thompson, editor and part-proprietor of the 'Essex County Chronicle' and associated papers. Mr. Thompson was one of the best known journalists in the county, and up to a few months before his death was still pursuing a busy and energetic life. He was a native of Rochdale, Lancashire, where he was born in December 1848, being therefore at the time of his death in his 60th year. His earlier journalistic life was spent at Rochdale and Grantham, but 40 years ago he joined the staff of the 'Essex County Chronicle,' and eight years later, on the death of one of the proprietors, he became editor. In 1885 he became a partner with Mr. Frederick Meggy, and on the latter's death in 1896 he remained the sole acting partner until 1899, when the new firm was formed under the title of Meggy, Thompson and Co.

In his long career Mr. Thompson naturally saw many changes in the world of journalism, and to the time of his death he cherished an ill-concealed contempt for the new 'yellow' press. He was also an ardent advocate for an alteration of the law of libel, and on one occasion helped to draft a Bill on the subject, which, however, was blocked in the House of Commons. Mr. Thompson, who was a Fellow of the Institute of Journalists, was greatly interested in literature outside the bounds of his own business, and belonged to the Modern Languages Association, and also to the Chelmsford 'Odde Volumes.' For some time he was a governor of Chelmsford Grammar School, and took a keen interest in the public life of his adopted town. His last speech was made at the Shire Hall, in advocacy of the claims of Chelmsford to be the Essex Cathedral City. He was also a prominent supporter of County Athletic Institutions. Mr. Thompson, who was twice married, leaves two children—Alderman John Ockleford Thompson, a member of the firm, and Mrs. John Shannon, also of Chelmsford.

MRS. W. J. GALLAGHER, better known to Essex readers as Alice E. Argente, died, after a long illness, at Chelmsford on 16 March. Born at Boreham, and for some time resident at Danbury, Miss Argente early began contributing articles and verses to 'Great Thoughts' and other journals. She published a volume or two of prose and verse, and was a graceful writer.

NEW JUSTICES OF THE PEACE FOR ESSEX.—The following 26 gentlemen qualified at the March Quarter Session :—

E. B. Barnard, M.P., Fair Green House, Sawbridgeworth.  
 G. T. Thorpe Bartram, Braintree.  
 Henry I. Belsham, Lothian House, Braintree.  
 Walter Butler, Hatfield Peverel.  
 Arthur Chapman, Abbey Farm, Waltham Abbey.  
 Eli Cornish, Tortoise House, Sible Hedingham.  
 John J. Craig, Heath House, Romford.  
 Samuel William Crawley, Hadstock Hall, Linton.  
 Pete Francis Curran, M.P., Walthamstow.  
 Brooklyn Chas. Custerson, Ford End House, Clavering.  
 Douglas Thos. Franklin, Thaxted.  
 William Walter Green, Plashet Lands, New Wanstead.  
 Robert Muirhead Howett, Roden Lodge, Barking.  
 Henry F. Hills, Chalkney, Earls Colne.  
 Montagu Edward Hughes-Hughes, Leez Priory, Hartford End.  
 Philip Hutley, Powers Hall, Witham.  
 Harold McCorquodale, Forest Hall, Ongar.

William Foot Mitchell, Quendon Hall, Newport.  
 Thos. Philpot, 78, Richmond Road, Ilford.  
 George H. Pizey, Casamia, Chingford.  
 George Cumins Row, Braintree.  
 Henry Rumsey, Fisherton House, Dunmow.  
 Robert Stroud, Barley Hall, Ilford.  
 Thomas P. Trounce, The Bank, Waltham Abbey.  
 Col. C. Maximilian Western, Goldsmiths, Laindon Hills.  
 Arthur Chas. Wilkin, Tiptree.

## NOTES AND QUERIES.

**The Ruck Family of Maldon.**—John Ruck, a younger son of Thomas Ruck (*E.R.*, vol. xvi., p. 98), was living at Salem, Massachusetts in 1646. Savage refers to him as 'born in England about 1627; made a freeman of Massachusetts, Plymouth Colony, in 1640; kept a tavern in Salem, 1663; was select man of that town in 1686; and represented it in the General Court from 1685 to 1689.' He is supposed to be referred to in the will (dated 28 May and proved 10 July, 1646) of Humphrey Howland of St. Swithin's, London, draper and clothworker:—'Item, I give unto my brother, Arthur Howland, 8*li.* out of the debt owing to me by Mr. Ruck, of New England, and to my brother, John Howland, 4*li.* out of the same debt, and to my brother, Henry Howland, 4*li.* out of the same debt.' From information supplied by Mr. L. M. Howland, who would be glad of any further notice of these Howland brothers.

ANDREW CLARK, Great Leighs.

**Bacon and Chelmsford.**—It may not be generally known that the great Lord Chancellor Bacon had an interest in an inn at Chelmsford. In 1606 Bacon had married Alice, the second daughter of Benedict Barnham, a wealthy London merchant, who amongst other property owned a 'Messuage and inn, called the Ffawkon in Chelmissforde in the County of Essex.' Barnham, who died in 1598, left no sons, but four daughters, Elizabeth, Alice, Dorothy, and Bridget, who became the wives respectively of—(1) Mervyn, Lord Audley, Earl of Castlehaven, (2) Sir Francis Bacon, (3) Sir John Constable, (4) Sir William Soame. By a document drawn up in 1620 it appears that this messuage and inn had been assigned to Bacon (now Baron of Verulam and Lord Chancellor) and his wife, charged to pay an annual rent of sixteen pounds to Sir John Constable and his wife, and in this deed the four parties agree that in the case of

the inn, on the expiration of the current lease, proving to be worth more than sixteen pounds a year, the overplus is to be equally divided between them; but should the value fall below sixteen pounds a year, the deficiency is to be made good to the Constables by the three other families in equal proportions. This interesting deed of arrangement is duly signed by the eight parties thereto:—‘Fr. Verulam Canc,’ ‘Alice Verulam;’ ‘Castlehaven,’ ‘Eliza. Castlehaven;’ ‘Jo. Constable,’ ‘Dorothy Constable;’ ‘W. Soame,’ ‘Bridget Soame.’

J. J. HOLDSWORTH, Stratford.

**Rural Amenities.**—Will some reader of the *Essex Review* kindly explain what is in the mind of the rustic when, in friendly response to an invitation or some agreeable request, he answers ‘I don’t mind.’ It is quite common hereabouts. Is it local or general?

Two instances will make the question clear. Not long ago, I went to a cottage to ask a wife and her daughters to tea. Only the husband was at home, and he replied, ‘I don’t suppose they’ll mind coming.’ The invitation was given quite ordinarily, as one would give it to any of one’s friends, and I am sure it was appreciated. Later I happened to want some bearers for a funeral, and asked some men who were specially connected with the family. Two replied, ‘I don’t mind,’ and only when it was pointed out to them that it was not a question of not minding, but whether they would like to do it, did they respond willingly.

It is not lack of manners—manners are not lacking in our best rustics; they are unquestionable. It is not indifference, nor, I think, independence. I suppose it is shyness, reserve, and partly, slow apprehension; but I should like a better opinion.

Quite lately, I have come upon a level lower than ‘don’t mind.’ I asked a man whom I met on the road—he was road-mending—to come to my house to see his sister, who is my housekeeper, to have any refreshment he liked, to walk about my garden, and so on. I thought I had made it quite clear, but he seemed to have some mental difficulty. He ruminated, and then said, ‘I allus was friendly with *old* Mr. G——.’ ‘And,’ I said, ‘I hope with me, too.’ Again he ruminated, then spat on his hands, and finally said, ‘I ain’t got nothin’ agin ye.’ As I left, hoping that the idea would in time soak in, I saw a wide grin spreading across his face, and I think it had at last penetrated.

EDWARD GEPP, High Easter.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS, &amp;c.

*Roses, Their History, Development and Cultivation*, by the Rev. Joseph H. Pemberton. With coloured frontispiece, nine lithographic plates, and other illustrations in the text. Longmans, Green and Co., 1908. Pp. xxiv., 338, cr. 8vo. Price 10s. 6d.

We predict for this delightful book, on an ever fascinating subject, a long and prosperous reign, worthy of the Queen of Flowers, to whom it is dedicated. The author is well known as a devoted rosarian, a successful grower and exhibitor, and descended from a stock distinguished in the annals of the roses. He inscribes his book to his father, a rose-grower who instructed him, as a youthful aspirant of twelve, in the art of budding, from which time, and even earlier, Mr. Pemberton dates his devotion to the national flower.

His garden of the Round House at Havering, where his father and grandfather lived before him, is one especially adapted to rose cultivation, and round its quaintly pillared verandahs are clusters and bowers of roses. Essex, as he reminds us, is the county of wild roses, especially of the *Rosa rubiginosa* or sweet brier, which the Essex children call by the homely name of 'sweet Maria.' It is appropriate to find that the manor of Pyrgo, in Havering-atte-Bower, was held by Queen Elizabeth, wife of Edward IV., upon the tenure of a white rose, presented to the King every year, in the month of roses, upon the feast of the Nativity of St. John the Baptist. As she was a Lancastrian by birth, this was a graceful sign that she belonged by marriage to her husband's house of York, whose badge was a rose of red.

But from these dainty histories, Mr. Pemberton passes to become eminently practical, and to deal exhaustively with every aspect of his subject. From the botany of the rose he proceeds to British wild roses, to the wild roses of other countries, to summer and autumn flowering roses. He shows us the altered social position of the national flower since it became, about 1840, the perpetual rose. 'The rose of our grandparents was a flower lasting only a few weeks, now it is with us from April to November. Seventy years ago, because the rose was the flower of a season, a month, the month of June, it shared the flower border with the tulip, holly-hock and dahlia.' Nowadays



we all realise that the rose brooks no rival colours in its near neighbourhood, and never looks so well as when grown in masses of its own kindred. The multiplication of Hybrid Perpetuals from 1860 to 1890 was extraordinary, and then followed universal recognition of the Hybrid Teas, which by 1901 numbered sixty-five. This class of rose is now everyone's favourite. Our author says 'there is not a single purpose demanded of the Hybrid Tea rose which it cannot supply. . . . Roses for exhibition, roses for bedding, roses for pillars, for house decoration, for button holes—you will find them all among the Hybrid Teas.' He tells us a charming fairy tale about a little passenger dressed in pink, who came from China to England on a visit in 1810, lived in single blessedness till another Chinese native, dressed in a yellow costume appeared, when she married him and emigrated to France, where a numerous progeny was the result. This marriage of the Blush Tea-scented, and the Yellow Tea-scented, rose was the origin of the great family of tea-scented roses.

More than half of Mr. Pemberton's book is devoted to the cultivation of the rose, planting, manuring, pruning, budding, cutting, grafting, and layering, raising from seed, and growing for exhibition. A final chapter on pests lays all rose-growers under obligation to the author, who follows up his very practical advice as to selection of site, aspect, soil, etc., with giving us remedies for every disease that roses are heir to. We may say with confidence every disease, for of one dire complaint, 'rose tumour,' he says, the only plan is to cut out and burn the stems affected. Mr. Pemberton pays great credit to the rose-growers of Essex and its neighbourhood, among whom Thomas Rivers, Benjamin Cant, and W. Paul were early pioneers. His Appendix of 'selected roses recommended for cultivation' should prove helpful and suggestive to all rose-growers.

The illustrative sketches, in the chapters on budding and pruning, are the work of the author's sister, Miss Florence Pemberton. The plate of *Rosa spinosissima* the parent of the Scotch Briers, from Mr. Andrews' Monograph, is particularly good.





NEW HALL IN THE TIME OF LORD WALTHAM. SOUTH FRONT.

THE  
ESSEX REVIEW:

*A Quarterly Journal for the County.*

---

---

No. 67.]

JULY, 1908.

Vol. XVII.

---

---

NEW HALL, BOREHAM.

1553—1799.

BY M. P.

*(Continued from p. 66.)*

IN the reign of Mary Tudor, Sir Thomas Wharton, a former official of her household, obtained a lease of New Hall, in applying for which he incidentally mentioned that the palace was much out of repair. He was son of the first Baron Wharton (created 1545); and married Ann, daughter of Robert Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex. In the reign of Mary, Sir Thomas was Privy Councillor; he took part in suppressing several rebellions, and was in high favour at court until the accession of Elizabeth, when he was deprived of all his preferments.\*

Queen Elizabeth is said to have visited New Hall in the spring of 1559, and to have spent a month here with her favourite, Robert Dudley, and a few attendants. The young Duke of Anjou, who was proposed as a suitable match for Elizabeth, came to England incognito, and was received at New Hall, but nothing came of the visit.

From the State Papers† we gather that Sir Thomas Wharton was the first person prosecuted under Elizabeth for having Mass said in his house. It is clear from the context given below, that it was no longer considered safe for Mass to be celebrated in the chapel. It was said at the opposite side of the house, in or near a room which is now used as an oratory. The priest was concealed in a barn, and was probably led in by what is now a cellar door, and thence up a flight of stairs, the

\* For the details of this chapter concerning Sir Thomas Wharton, we are indebted to the kindness of Mr. H. Reade, who has placed the results of his researches in the Record Office at our disposal.

† 'Domestic,' Elizabeth. Vols. xvi., xvii., xviii.

remains of which are still visible. We now give the account of the forcible entry into New Hall of the Earl of Oxford, as Lord Lieutenant of Essex, from the original documents preserved at the Record Office.‡

Edmund Grindall, Bishop of London, to Secretary Cecil.

I send you enclosed the Confession of Coxe alias Devon, the prieste, for Masse Matters taken this present daye after receipte of your letters. Surely for his Magicke and conjurations, your Lordships of the Councill must apoynte some Extraordinarie punishment for the Example. My Lord Chieffe Justice sayth the temporall lawe will not meddle with him and ecclesiasticall punishment is too slender for so grave offences, I thought it my parte to offer it to your consideration and so wish you my goode will and service. 17 Aprilis 1561. Yrs. in Christe

EDM. LONDON.

The Examination of John Devon Clarke taken before John Darell, one of the Queenes Maties Justices of the Peace for the County of Kent, the 17 of Aprill 1561.

First, the sayde John Devon dyd come to Sir Thomas Wharton's house (Knyghte) at New Hall, in Essex, on Candlemas Day last past, and upon Candlemas Day last said, and my Ladye his wyffe with 2 other gentlewomen and also the said John Devon being required to come up to hear masse at a back door by one Jollye, a priest, who said masse in latten in a chambre next to my ladye's chambre, at which masse they did have candles in their handes. And there was also mynystered that daye holly water and holly bread.

*Item.* Within seavenight next following, upon a Friday, the said Jolly Clarke, 2 gentlewomen aforesaid, and the said John Devon, was at another masse in the sayd chambre said by the said Jolly in latten.

*Item.* There was in the same chambre, a rood of tymbre and two pictures of Mary and John standing in a window, and a board with certain paynted images upon the altar.\*

The Answers of Jno. Coxe alias Devon to sundry questions. 1. He sayth no more the 2 [masses at New Hall]. 2. That Sir Thomas Wharton knew of his voyage over, but noughte of his letters, messages or packages. Some money was given him by my ladye.

Earl of Oxford (Lord Lieutenant of Essex) to the Lords of the Councill.

After most hartie commendations to your good lls. According to your pleasures I have apprehended these and sundry persons for their unlawfull practises to the breache of good order and religion established; the greatest part of whose confessions and examinations I have herewith addressed to your honours; so likewise I have thought mete to advertise your lls. of the conformitie and obstinacie of such of them as this cryme have commytted.

And first upon my comyng to New Hall, enterynge the House and Chargyng my men, some with keepynge the gates and others with backdores and wayes to

‡ *State Papers Domestic.* Elizabeth. Vol. xvi. 1561. (46).

\* The remaining part of the Document refers to Masses said by J. Devon in the private chapels of sundry Catholics.



NEW HALL, PRESENT FAÇADE.

th' intent no man might escape, that there should be found within anything unlooked [*sic*], I called Mr. Wharton privately before me with all his men, and committing them by and by to Sordall's custodie, and thereupon broke to Mr. Wharton privatelie part of my commission, as I thought mete to be imparted to him, who then in the most humble manner submitted himself to the grate clemencie of the Queen's majestie and of himself, declarynge unto me how that only concerning the masse he was an offender, but saith he, concernynge my dutye besides, if you shall find any other matter against me, I utterly renounce all mercie and favor . . . and so I took him with me and made seeke in all partes of his house so how as I could for the things your lls privately noted unto me, and find the trumpery in a sceduld shall appear unto you. I could neither in casket, cheste or other place fynde any cause or presumption whereby his fayth and allegeance to the State was any wit impayred, and yet found I a great number of letters in the casket in his own chambre, which although I have not perused yet have I locked and sealed them untill further knowledge of your pleasure. My ladye his wyfe I found very sicke, and I for that cause left her gentlewomen about her, taking recognisaunce of Mr. Wharton in that matter to the Queen's Majestie for their forthcoming when they shall be called.

(Signed) OXYNFORD.

' An Inventorie of all such implements of Superstition as were found in the Chambre next to the Lady Wharton's Bedchambre.

*First* a roode of tymbre with Mary and John, parcell gilded.

*Item.* An altartable and paynted image with a certayne prayer *pro salute omnium fidelium defunctor* :

*Item.* A great plancke instead of an Altar with a super-altar upon the same and III altar clothes to furnisic it.

*Item.* A crosse with Mary and John, of Copper and gilt, and another crosse Copper beside the same.

*Item.* A chalice of silver parcel gilt with the pattena.

*Item.* II littel candlesticks of silver, and a holy watter payle and sprinkler of silver with holy water in the same.

*Item.* II latten candlesticks with wax candles standing upon the altar with divers latten books as Masse Bookes and others.

*Item.* Palmstickes, candles of waxe such as are commonly used at Candlemas, ashes and a disciplining rod.

*Item.* A caudlestick of latten to set in the Paschall light.

*Item.* A standing cup with a cover of silver all gilde instead of a pyx, and therein a littel box of consecrated bread with a canopy cloth of whyte taffeta garnished with a lace of gold and III tassels wrought of silver partly and gold.

*Item.* A corporal case with a cloth in the same.

*Item.* A surplice and the vestments to say mass in, with two pieces of frankincense in the same.

*Memo.* The roods and pictures were left in the House by Queen Mary, and the rest of the premises except the gilt cup and the holy water payle and the littel candlesticks, were brought thither by John [? Devon].

Signed. THOMAS WHARTON.

The name of Lady Ann Wharton appears with that of Sir Thomas among the offenders indicted and convicted at the Commission of Oyer, held at Brentwood, before the Earl of

Oxford, June 3, 1561. Both were committed to the Tower, where Lady Ann soon died. Her body was brought to Boreham for interment, and her name is inscribed in the register, next to that of her daughter Katharine, who had died in the previous year. Sir Thomas was set free on July 16, 1561, paying a fine of 100 marks. The two priests were also imprisoned.

In 1573, Elizabeth granted to Thomas Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex, the Honour of 'Biewliew,' alias New Hall, probably as a reward for the success of his campaign against the northern insurgents in 1569. This Earl was Lady Ann Wharton's brother; he married first, Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Wriothsley, Earl of Southampton; secondly, Frances, daughter of Sir William Sidney, of Penshurst, and foundress of Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge. This Earl of Sussex is considered to have built the portion of New Hall that remains, or at least to have changed it considerably. The style of architecture is Elizabethan, and the date 1573 is engraved on the west wing. The existing front was the north side of the great quadrangle and the south side of another quadrangle. The Sussex arms are still to be seen on the ceilings of three rooms in the west wing. Over the door leading to the old Chapel were these arms and quarterings, carved in stone, of Thomas Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex:—

1. A bend ingrailed for Ratcliff.
2. A fess between two chevrons for Fitzwalter.
3. A lion rampant crowned with a bordure. Burnell.
4. A saltire ingrailed. Botecourt.
5. Three lucies hauriant. Lucy.
6. Three bars. Multon.
7. Semeé Fleurs de lis. Mortimer of Attilborough.
8. An eagle and child. Culcheth.

Over the door leading to the hall, which was once an outer door, were the arms and quarterings of Frances Sidney, Countess of Sussex:—

1. A Pheon. Sidney.
2. Two bars, in chief three shields. Clunford.
3. Chevronelles; a label of three points. Barrington.
4. On a bend three lozenges. Mercy.
5. Quarterly an escarbuncle. Mandeville.
6. A chevron between three mullets. Chetwynd.



7. Three lions rampant. Baard.

8. Barry of eight, a lion rampant crowned. Brandon.

Over the doorway of the present chapel are the arms of England in stone, supported by a crowned lion and a dragon, and under them is the following inscription :—

'En terra piu savia Regina. En Cielo la piu lucente Stella.  
Vergina Magnanima, Dotta, Divina, Legiadra, Honesta e Bella.'

Until recently the words ' Viva Elizabetha ! ' stood over the arms, and caryatides were on each side of them.

The porcupine, the original Sidney crest, is still conspicuous in one of the passages, and over the front entrance under the Royal Arms.

Earl Thomas died June 9, 1583, at the age of 57. He had added at his own expense a south aisle to Boreham Church, and called it Sussex Chapel, making it the burial place for his family. An extract from his epitaph will tell his story :—

' He executed two very considerable embassies from Queen Mary to the Emperor Charles V. and the King of Spain, and a third from his royal mistress Elizabeth to the Emperor Maximilian. He was Viceroy in Ireland, and for nine years together suppressed all rebellions there, and prevented Scotland from uniting with them. He was Governor of the English northern province, where he routed the rebels and the Scotch, who encouraged them, laying waste their castles, again taking or destroying numbers. He was most faithful to his mighty sovereign Henry VIII. and his heroic race. He was possessed of an invincible soul, alike brave and fortunate in the field, and in the Cabinet a most prudent Councillor. He was skilled in most languages and was of an uncorrupt life.'

Sir Thomas left no son, and was succeeded by his brother Henry. He and his wife, Honor, were buried at Boreham in 1593. Henry was succeeded by his son Robert, who died in 1629, without issue surviving. The brief records of the three children who predeceased him are thus entered in the register :—

1597. 4 Aug., Thomas, son of Robert, Earl of Sussex, born 15 July afor XI clock.

1598. Lady Honor, da. of Robert, Earl of Sussex, born the 27 Aug. at 11. of the clock in the mornynge, and Bapd. XII. Sep.

#### BURIALS.

1613. Honoar, da. of Robert, Earl of Sussex.

1619. Thomas, son to Robert, Earl of Sussex.

The eldest son must have been born before his father took possession of New Hall, for there is no mention of his baptism in the register, only the melancholy entry of the burial :—

1620. Henry, eldest son to Robert, Earl of Sussex.



NEW HALL.  
FRONT ENTRANCE, SHEWING ROYAL ARMS, INSCRIPTION TO  
QUEEN ELIZABETH, AND SIDNEY CREST.

In 1622 Earl Robert sold New Hall for £30,000 to George Villiers, Duke of Buckingham. This nobleman lived here in great splendour, often entertaining Prince Charles, eldest surviving son of James I. It is said that they made here their preparations for the famous expedition to Spain, when Buckingham so offended the Spanish Court that the marriage negotiations between Prince Charles and the Infanta were broken off. When Charles afterwards became engaged to Henrietta Maria, daughter of the King of France, Buckingham was deputed to escort the young Princess to England. On Aug. 3, 1628, the Duke was assassinated at Portsmouth by Felton, and New Hall passed to his son, also named George Villiers, who lived here until the Civil War broke out, 1641. Charles I. is known to have visited Chelmsford in 1638, and it is considered likely that he came to New Hall on that occasion, as on the panel preserved at Sheepcote Farm, Little Waltham, which we mentioned in our last chapter, the letters C. R. are painted in gold on a black ground, over the badge of Anne Boleyn. On the lower part of the same is the date 1638—a commemoration probably of a royal visit. The downfall of the unfortunate King proved the ruin of his friends. After the defeat of the Royal Army at Kingston-on-Thames, the Duke of Buckingham was proceeded against as a traitor, and was forced to fly the country. His estate was sold by Commissioners specially appointed to sell traitors' estates, and was purchased by Oliver Cromwell for the paltry sum of five shillings; its computed yearly value being £1,309 12s. 3½d. Cromwell is said to have sent the five shillings in derision to the exiled Duke. He did not reside much at New Hall. His wife, daughter of Sir James Bouchier, of Felsted, only visited the place once, on April 25, 1652, when Oliver entertained here his brother-in-law Desborough, his son-in-law Fleetwood, his two sons Richard and Henry, his mother and four daughters. On being named Lord-Protector, in 1653, Cromwell exchanged New Hall for Hampton Court, paying the difference. The estate was sold in 1657 for £18,000, to three London Merchants, who retained it until the Restoration. John Evelyn gives the following description of a visit which he paid to New Hall in 1656;—

\* I returned homeward, passing through Colchester; and by the way, neere the antient town of Chelmsford, saw New Hall, built in a Parke by Henry VII.

and VIII., and given by Queen Elizabeth to the Earle of Sussex, who sold it to the late great Duke of Buckingham, and since seized on by O. Cromwell (pretended Protector). It is a faire old house 'built with brick ; low, being only of 2 stories, as the manner then was ; the Gate-house better ; the court large and pretty ; the staire-case of extraordinarie widenesse, with a piece representing Sir F. Drake's action in the year 1580. an excellent sea-piece ; the galleries are trifling ; the hall is noble, the garden a faire plot, and the whole seat well accommodated with water ; but above all, I admired the faire avenue planted with stately lime-trees in four rowes, for neere a mile in length. It has three descents, which is the only fault, and may be reform'd. There is another faire-walk of the same at the mall and wilderness, with a tennis-court, and pleasant terrace towards the park, which was well stored with deere and ponds.'

At the Restoration, the Duke of Buckingham recovered New Hall, but soon sold it to George Monck, Duke of Albemarle, who lived here in great luxury on his pension of £7,000 per annum. He gave here a magnificent display of fireworks in honour of the royal marriage between Charles II. and Catherine of Braganza, in 1661. Charles and his Court were frequent visitors to New Hall, the Duke pandering to the vices of the King. Nell Gwyn and other kindred spirits acted 'The Merry Wives of Windsor' in the great hall of the mansion. Anne Duchess of York, the Princess Dowager of Orange, and Cosmo III. of Tuscany were the other royal visitors entertained here by the Duke. He died January 3, 1670, and was buried in Henry VII.'s Chapel, Westminster. Christopher Monck, second Duke of Albemarle, who succeeded his father at New Hall, invited James II. here in May 1686, and the episode is thus chronicled in the *Autobiography* of Sir John Bramston :—

'The Kinge being invited by the Duke of Albemarle to New Hall to hunt some out-lying red deere, his majestie went towards New Hall the 3rd of May, 1686 ; and when he came neere Chelmsforde, hearinge the Duke with the hounds were neere the place where the stagg was harboured, in a wood neere Bicknaker mill, his majestie turned out of the road and went by Moulsham Hall thither. The stagg came out of the wood neere where the Kinge was, and many with him, who followed the hounds ; but Prince George (who had married the Princess Ann), the Duke of Albemarle, the Earle of Feversham, Lord Dartmouth, and severall others, being on the other side of the wood, heard not the hounds, nor knew not that the stagg had left the wood untill late, and so severall cast out, and never reacht the hounds. The stagg made toward the forest, and gott thither and rann almost as far as Wanstead, where, turning head, he was at last killed between Romford and Brentwood, or neerer Romford. The Kinge was neere at the death ; he gott a coach to carrie him to Brentwood (where his own coach was), and well pleased that he was in, the Lords thrown out.'

The following year the Duke of Albemarle was made Governor General of Jamaica, where he died in 1688.



North Front of New Hall in Essex.

TIME OF LORD WALTHAM (1762).

New Hall was settled on his wife Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Henry Cavendish, Earl of Ogle, afterwards second Duke of Newcastle. She married again in 1691, Ralph Montagu, first Duke of Montagu. In 1713 she sold the New Hall estate (which she had much neglected) to Benjamin Hoare, youngest son of Sir Richard Hoare, banker, and Lord Mayor of London. He never lived here, but removed fine marbles and other materials to embellish Boreham House, which he was then building. He sold New Hall, with the gardens, park, and avenue, in 1737, to John Olmius, Esq., who, after taking down a considerable part of the old mansion, fitted up the remainder as a residence for himself and family. He also laid out the park and grounds with great taste. The present front of the house, which remains much as it was after the wholesale demolition by John Olmius, has seven bay windows, with stone mullions, finished with a plain parapet of modern construction. The great hall is a splendid apartment, 33 feet high, 99 long, and 20 wide. On the ceiling there is a great display of stucco-work, representing cherubim supporting the chandeliers. Lord Waltham's Black Boys were originally in the four small panels, and the arms of the family in the centre. When the last of the Walthams came of age these ornaments were placed in position. The cherubim have been retained in the convent chapel, but the Waltham arms and the Black Boys have been replaced by religious emblems. John Olmius married, 1741, Anne, daughter and heiress of Sir William Billers, Lord Mayor of London; was created Baron Waltham, of Philipstown in the Kingdom of Ireland, 1762, and, dying March 12, 1764, was buried in Boreham churchyard in the handsome mausoleum of the Walthams. He was succeeded by his eldest son, Drigue-Billers, from whom New Hall was purchased for the present owners, a community of Regular Canonesses of the Holy Sepulchre. The cost of the house and 58 acres of land, amounting to £4,000, was generously defrayed by Mr. Michael McEvoy, brother to one of the nuns. The purchase was effected in November 1798, and the nuns took possession on January 25, 1799. They have been reproached with selling the four rows of lime-trees lining the avenue, said to have been planted in royal times, or before. The truth is that these magnificent trees, 'the pride and boast of the neighbourhood,'

were not purchased with the property, but were only left standing until a purchaser could be found. In the end they were sold for a sum far below the price at which they had been valued.

The only other event of public interest to chronicle since the coming of the nuns is the carrying of the Great Eastern Railway line through the avenue. The first luggage train passed this way in January 1844, and the first passenger train in June of the same year.

It is an interesting fact that the community of nuns to whom New Hall now belongs follow the same Augustinian Rule professed by the Regular Canons of Waltham Abbey, who held possession in 1177, one of those frequent historic coincidences which provoke the platitude : ' History repeats itself.'

---

**ROGER PRESTON,**  
**HIS LETTER, DATED HARWICH, 1666, TO THE**  
**OFFICERS OF THE ORDNANCE TOWER OF**  
**LONDON.**

BY JOSEPH I. GREEN.

**T**HE following letter is copied from the original in my possession, purchased some years since, amongst a quantity of other manuscripts of Messrs. Sotheby and Co., Wellington Street, London. It is an excellent specimen both of the caligraphy and verbosity, as well as the style used in addressing superiors, of the middle half of the seventeenth century. We do not know who was the writer, but it would be difficult to discover a more beautiful specimen of penmanship in every way. The allusion to the Great Fire of London, and the opinion that it was sent by God as a judgment for sin, is quite in keeping with the prevailing thought then in vogue, but it is apparently contrary to the teaching of Christ [St. Luke xiii., verses 2-5]. Why Harwich was such a 'mercylesse place,' except for expensive lodgings, the writer does not tell us, but it was certainly a much more interesting town to the visitor at that period than at the present time.

This extremely neat specimen of seventeenth century caligraphy occupies some thirty-five very closely written lines,

or about half a folio page, with a very wide margin on the left, and none on the right, where the paper is slightly torn. The water-marks are G.C., and a hunting-horn, within an ornamented shield. It is addressed 'To ye Rt. Wor<sup>ll</sup> ye officers of ye Ordnance within the Tower of London: These:'. It is sealed with a wafer-sized seal bearing the initials of R.M.P. (probably the writer and his wife). A portion of the letter is frayed away at the top right edge, through damp. What remains is as follows:—"Rt Wor[shipfu]<sup>ll</sup>.

Being made acquainted of yor Wor : pps letter datted ye 13th Instant unto mr ffrancis Newby, of yor resolutions concerning my sallary, I hope my silence, Care and paynes faithfully performed with many Hazards early and late since my Coming to Harwch, will not be worse then formerly Rec<sup>d</sup> from yor Worppes orders which was 6s 8d per diem it is knowne to some members in ye [place] now living, as Mr. Edward Sparkes senior, and Mr. Rothwell that I had 10— and 6s 8d ye least besyde my sallary, however I make not this a president [but] humbly leave it to yor Worppes Consideration, and doe humbly beseech yor W[orshipps] to consider ye Charge and straits I have bin put unto since my coming [to] this mercyllesse place, for I could not gett Lodging but upon very h[igh] tearmes to this day, wch hath Cost me about one 4th part of ye mo[ney] from yr worppes wch was 3old, for which I returne my humble thankes, ever since I came was forced to pay rent at London where I live[d] [before] my coming downe, desiring now to ease this charge, yf yor Worppes [mean] to continue me, I have to yt purpose sent my wyfe home to discharge [our] present being at London, and to remove our goods to Harwch haveing before shee went, tooke a small house, to enter upon Michaelmas ensuing for the reception of ye same. I humbly crave further to tell yor worppes that [I have] bin a sharer as I have bin informed in the late Calamity by fire, of one hogshhead of Sweet-sented tobacco, lodg<sup>d</sup> in Cornwall\* and at another place a trunk of goods, of wch losse I am very senceable of as my perticular and the great losse in generall. Knowing yt ye Judgment is sent for sin, yett I know not wherein I should offend yor Worppes or any other concerned in the office there or heere, that my faithfullnesse and diligence should be lessened more now then before, for I assure yor Worppes I never had more care upon my spirit then now. nayther was ever at ye like charge in Carrying my self through ye ymployment, as is very well knowne. for since I came, with yor Worppes money Rec<sup>d</sup>, I have spent 4old and upwards in this place and hath bin a good Husband to. that I may not be too tedious I humbly crave leave ye premisses Considered yt yf yor worppes will be pleased to retaine me longer and that I shall settell my self heere. then yt yor worppes will be pleased to order my wyfe 15 or 2old to transport hur self and goods downe. I shall not trouble yor worppes any more this winter ensuing. I have not more, but am

Yor W<sup>ps</sup> poore and faithfull Servt,

ROGER PRESTON.

Harwch 18th Septembr,  
1666."

\* ? Cornhill.



## SOME ALTHAMS OF MARK HALL IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

(Continued from p. 87.)

CONTRIBUTED BY A DESCENDANT.

**I** VENTURE to hark back from the taking of Colchester to the preceding year, 1647, for the purpose of referring to some letters addressed to James Altham at Mark Hall. The first is from his wife, Alice, who writes from London under date 17 Jan., 1647 :—

‘My Deerest, this morning before I received yr leter and now in my beede, I must returne you thancks for it. Bigmore is in such hast hee will not stay tell I am up, but I must tell you I hope I shall see you before the next weeck, for my thincks you have binn gonn a loing time, tharfore, my deere hart, if y<sup>e</sup> bisness be not extoronary, let mee see you this Sater day ; thancks be to god all y<sup>e</sup> frinds are well and present thare dew repcts to you. As for nues, I heere none, but that sir thomas farfax yester dined at the Tower, and it is thought the king’s children are to be thare, and thare are to be soulders at the tower and Whitt hall and the mues, and sir thomas doe intend to make the tower his heed quarters, but yet the souldrs are quiet and orderly, so wth my deere love to you, I rest yours most faithfully,

A. ALTHAM.’

There is a short letter from the same to the same, sent also by the messenger, Bigmore, and dated ‘ Chancery Layen the 22 of Jan.,’ in which she reports ‘ the souldrs are still in the Town . . . orderly and quiet.’ The king at this date had not yet been arrested at Holdenby House. But the following extracts were written barely two months after his arrest, when Charles I. was being granted, through Cromwell’s influence, occasional interviews with his children. They are from a letter by E. Leventhorp, brother of Lady Altham, to his nephew, James Altham, at Mark Hall, dated Lambeth, 13th of August 1647 :—

‘ Although I cannot find you such newes as is worth your reading, yet I will keep touch with you in writing which I promised at my parting. On Thursday (?) last was the thanksgiving, but trully if you ask me for what, I cannot tell you. . . . The King rowed to Oatlands this Fryday night ; Hampton Court was the place designed, but the Generall’s head quarters being at Kingstown it was thought inconvenient.’

Oatlands was the nursery palace of the royal children. Lady Morton, in the previous year, had been permitted by the Parliamentary Army to retire thither from Exeter with the infant

Princess Henrietta, and it was from Oatlands that this same lady, disguised as the wife of a poor French servant, and with a hump of linen on her back, made good her escape with the little princess, and walking all the way to Dover, crossed to Calais and at length delivered the child to her mother, the Queen. The letter makes a further reference to 'the Generall.'

'The Cittie had made great preparation to feast him, but he hath refused it, and withal they had resolved to present him with a gold bason and ewer of great value ; but this likewise is cast back, which makes mee thinke it will prove a dangerous tyme for equestrians (?) in the Cittie.'

For the year 1647 there is a correspondence which throws a good deal of light on some earlier history of the Altham family. James Altham, who purchased Mark Hall in 1562 from Henry Parker, Lord Morley, had three sons, with issue, Thomas, Edward and James. James became Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer, and owner of Oxhey Place in the county of Herts. Edward was the son from whom the Althams we are considering were descended. Edward, without doubt, owned Mark Hall, and from him the place descended to two of his sons in succession. But what about Thomas, the eldest? He had one son, James, and three daughters, one of whom became a nun. There is a letter bearing date March 14, 1639, from this James to her, in which he asks her to

'pray in this solemn time of Lent for the conversion of our Protestant friends, that it would please Almighty God to re-unite them to the holy Roman Catholic religion and also raise up a Catholic family to maintain our name in my father's mansion dwelling-house of Mark Hall and other lands, for now my wife and child being dead, and I dying without issue, all dissends to them, etc.'

James, his father Thomas, his mother, and his sister Mary were all Roman Catholics. Somewhere about this year, 1647, this James Altham died, and no representative of that branch of the family was left but Mary, a nun in a convent abroad. John Altham, the counsellor, went in this year to interview her on behalf of his brother James. John writes to James of certain 'discourses' which he had with her. She told him, amongst other matters, that her father was the eldest brother, that his

father (*i.e.*, the purchaser of Mark Hall) was much displeased with him for changing his religion, that in regard of his religion his father gave from him during the life of the \*Lady Judd a great part of his estate; that he lived sometimes at Monmouth, at Hereford, and at Abergavenny, that he was, as she termed it, 'persecuted' for his religion. Concerning the estate which now devolved upon her, she stated 'that the houses in London were valued worth £2,000, that her brother had an annuity . . . during his life, that upon (?) the estate in Latton was formerly a religious house of the Order of St. Austin.' I gather from these 'discourses' of the nun with her cousin John, that Mark Hall itself was never really in the possession of her father, Thomas, although her brother had spoken of it as 'my father's mansion dwelling house' (I suppose he meant that it should rightfully have been his), but that there was house-property in London which was his, also a certain part of the estate in Latton, upon which there had been once a religious house. Now, all her father's property came to her. She was fifty-eight years of age. James, her first cousin once removed, had written to her 'to confirm what your brother always intended, and what by the will of the preceding ancestors, was always designed to the heirs male of the family, which now by your brother's death, is myself.' She writes to him under date April 12, 1647, that she 'heartily affords her deare cousin her brother's temporal estate, but also the eternal inheritance,' and begs of her cousin that he will contribute towards her maintenance as her brother had done. The letters of this Mary Altham are the best specimens of caligraphy I have ever seen. She addresses her cousin James of Mark Hall, 'Honoured cosen,' and signs herself 'Your loving cosen, Mary Altham.' I possess her deed of resignation, and other documents relating to the transaction in English and French, signed and executed by her in the presence of a public notary at Bruges.

She assigns the London lands and tenements to Sir William Halton, Baronet, and William Smyth, Esq., for the use of James Altham. There can be little doubt that the London houses in Love Lane and elsewhere, about which there is a good deal of

\*Lady Judd, daughter of . . . Mathewe, of Colchester, was the second wife of James Altham, who purchased Mark Hall. James Altham was her fourth husband. Her third husband was Sir Andrew Judd, Lord Mayor of London in 1550. She erected a monument in Latton Church in memory of James Altham. She was, at her death, buried with him in the chancel at Latton, where there is a very remarkable inscription in her praise.

correspondence later between James Altham and his brother Leventhorp, were the houses he received from his cousin Mary, the nun. At the same time, all Altham property in Latton must have now come into the possession of James Altham of Mark Hall.

John Altham, after this transaction between his brother and cousin, seems to have settled down again in his chambers in London. The following letter, written by him to his mother, is addressed to Lady Altham at 'Horum Hall,' July 6th, 1653:

'Maddam, I received your Ladishippes letter y<sup>e</sup> last weeke w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> inclosed, w<sup>ch</sup> I delivered to my Brother to be sent forward by y<sup>e</sup> first [opportunity] w<sup>ch</sup> I doubt not but he did accordingly, though I have not seen him since. The letters to Ned [Edward Altham] were likewise delivered to him, w<sup>ch</sup> I suppose he hath sent before this, w<sup>ch</sup> I heartily wish may have good success. Maddam, heere is little newes, only y<sup>e</sup> Great Councell met at White Hall upon Mounday, y<sup>e</sup> Generall made them a speech near two hours long; and for that day they broke up when that was ended, only they agreed to meete yesterday at y<sup>e</sup> house of Comons in Westminster and sought god byprayers for a blessing upon their Councells. They did not call to their assistance any Divine that I heard, this exercise continued from nine a clocke in y<sup>e</sup> morning till sixe at night. This day they are to meete againe to choose their Speaker, and appoint other officers. My Lady Smith is nearing to Stowe, my Lady Bankes went out of Towne upon Saturday last, and as I believe she is this weeke for y<sup>e</sup> West. Maddam be pleased to accept of my humble duty, and I desire my service to my Brother and Sister, soe in hast I subscribe Your dutifull and obedient sonne.

J. ALTHAM.

The above letter refers, of course, to that assembly known as 'the Barebones Parliament.' It met in July 1653, after Cromwell had ejected 'the Rump.' It may be mentioned, by the way, that when he entered the House to do so, it was to Oliver St. John, whose name is on the monument in Latton Church, and who was husband of the first cousin of the owner of Mark Hall, that he said, 'I am come to do what grieves me to the heart.' The officers of the army then proceeded to nominate a provisional Council of State, consisting of eight officers of high rank and four civilians, with Cromwell at their head. This Council, we are told by Green, selected a hundred and fifty-six men from lists furnished by the Congregationalists, 'the bulk of whom were men, like Ashley Cooper, of good blood and free estates; and the

proportion of burgesses (such as the leather merchant, Praise-God Barebones, whose name was eagerly seized on as a nickname for the body to which he belonged) seems to have been much the same as in other Parliaments.' John Altham is evidently referring to that speech of Cromwell's, which Green calls 'a burst of rugged eloquence,' in which he exhorted the members to be 'men fearing God.' The speech closed their sitting on that day. The next was the day of prayer conducted without 'the assistance of any Divine.' And on the third day they chose their Speaker and elected other officers.

Lady Altham's closing years during the time of the Commonwealth seem to have been full of family anxieties. Judging from her letters, there appears to have been nothing she felt more keenly than the submission of her son Edward to the Roman Church. Edward had been living abroad for several years. There are letters written by him to his brother James (who appears to have been the administrator of his affairs) from Croning, Orleans, Paris, Angers, Leghorn. One short visit he appears to have paid to England in 1647, when he writes from his sister Joan Smith's house, Horham Hall:—'Sir Thomas Bendish is going as agent from England to Constantinople, which I am confident you have heard of by reason of your nigh acquaintance with him, with whom I should gladly goe if it may be for my profit, as I conceive it may, if you present me to him as a small traveller.' He thinks, too, that Sir Thomas Bendish would be glad of the help of his money, and would give him good security for it. Edward seems to have gone with Sir Thomas to Constantinople, but he did not stay there long, as, writing to his mother from Orleans, April 23, 1648, he says, 'I should have looked twice before I had leapt once to Constantinople, but distractions in spirit make a man desperate in designs to escape out of prison . . . peradventure I am a looser by that enterprise in estate; and though I hazarded my person soe, yet, I blesse God, I purchased my liberty.'

In 1650 he was in Rome, where he studied Hebrew and other languages. He appears to have been getting more and more unhappy as to England. He speaks of 'our own longe lived distractions . . . which have for years past not only divorced friends and relations from a mutuall society, but

\*Sir Thomas Bendish, second baronet (now extinct), entered on his embassy in 1647, and resided at the Turkish Court fourteen years.

distracted severall persons within themselves; myselfe participates too much of either unhappinesse.' He becomes more and more impressed with Rome and her people. He tells in 1651 of the thousands of pilgrims going to the Jubilee. 'Here is no cobbler goes beyond his last nor noe tanner beyond his leather, every one tends his profession, which makes them live in a most swete harmony. Here are churches most richly adorned with marbles of diverse sorts. S. Peter's is the greatest, such a fabrick as the world knows not the like for a temple. My Rabby told mee that Solomon's temple was not comparable to it for bignesse nor for riches. . . . In their churches the people give respect to pictures and statues, but I could never believe that they adored them for gods, as I heard in England preached in pulpits.' He proposed in this year (1651) a journey to Jerusalem. His people at home did not like it, and it was abandoned. 'I have such a Rabbi here as he has brought Jerusalem to me.' . . . He writes more about Rome, 'the general tongues of the people, a continual pentecost,' the ancient ruins which the Primitive Christians built with the sweat of their brows, the catacombs and sepulchres, etc.

In 1652, Edward appears to have been received into the Roman Church. Lady Altham, his mother, writes to James:—

'Deere sonne, let us omitte noe Christian duty to wine him home to us again, least ye insinuating sycophants w<sup>th</sup> who hee is rise up in Judgment against us for there diligence, who will compasse sea and land to gaine a proselyte. O then, what cares and paynes and prayers shoulde wee use to regain a sonne and brother going astray; and pardon deere fathere, mee and ye rest of his frindes for our carelesse connivance in suffering him to live soe longe in a place of perill and danger.'

I possess three very distressed and loving letters of Lady Altham's to Edward himself, one of which she commences thus:—'Deere Ned, for so I must still stile you, although ye act of revoltinge from God's truth, and confirmed still in ye letters, hath and still doth bringe such sorrow and anguish to my poor disconsolate soule.'

Later in the letter, she speaks of the city of Rome itself, thus: 'If wee may iudg of ye tree by ye frute, what more horred things have byn hatched in any place then there.'

Thus it was that mother and son looked with different eyes on

the great metropolis. It was at this time that Lady Altham wrote to the Bishop of Exeter to get him to try to influence Edward, as has been already stated. (See p. 77.) The Bishop certainly must have done his best, although to no purpose, for James Altham in a letter to his mother writes:

‘I think your Ladyship hath resolved upon a very fitting gratuity for the Bishop, a dozen of fine handkerchiefs, which when you please I shall take care to send to him.’ There is a remarkable passage in a letter from the convert to his brother John Altham, dated Pessaro, November 9, 1655, as to a royal personage who also submitted to the Roman obedience, the remarkable Christina of Sweden.

‘The Pope’s state is in greate equipage to give a roiall reception to the Queene of Suetheland, which is a convert to the faith, a singular example of piety and devotion to quit a kingdom for paradise. That which I admire at in this subject is her learning, whose curiosity like the loadston drew to her court the greatest schollars amongst the protestants of this age, Grotius, Salmasius, wide as the two poles of the Universe for knowledge; nevertheless, having dived into the Fathers of the primitive Church this roiall personage could not be satisfied with all their sophistry to make her believe contrary to what she found registered in the writings of Tertullian, S. Cyprian, Gregory Nazianzen, etc. Wee expect her here the latter eand of this month. She lodges in the Cardinall’s Pallace. She has with her above two hundred persons, many of greate quality. I shall give you a relation more exactly of her when I see her. She has writt a letter to the Pope which I will send you likewise. The character which we have had of her at present is that shee was almost fifteen daies without shifting which is oftentimes daubed with inck. She reades much, sleepes but three hours in the night, awakes in live (?) countinace, manly in her behaviour, courtious in her discourse, negligent in her habit, vivacious in her actions. Greate preparations are made for her in Rome, which time will demonstrate.’

Leventhorpe Altham, in a letter to his brother seven years later, speaks of a report that came from Sir Th. Dorrel that Edward Altham had at length retired ‘into the convent of the Dominicans.’ Leventhorpe did not believe it, and the evidence of later letters makes me doubt if it were the case.

In a letter from Lady Altham, dated Chancery Lane, 24 of June 1649 (the year of the execution of King Charles), to her son James at Mark Hall, she speaks of having gone with her daughter, Joan Smith, and husband to Bath for taking the waters.

She had been ill, and the baths had not effected much improvement. In this letter Lady Altham shows that she is anxious about the children of another daughter, Lady Halton, who had recently died. She writes :—' I thank you for your kynd letter and for your care in having somewhat settled upon your dear sister's daughter, but I feare wee shall not have our desire, for seeing Sr William would not seale to v<sup>e</sup> marriage bond before this, there is little hope hee will do it now but I shall not fayle to perswad what I may, but as yet I have not seene him since I came to town, and I heare none of his owne frindes have seen him since his marryage, wh<sup>ch</sup> makes mee thinke hee is so taken up w<sup>th</sup> his fine wife and new coach y<sup>t</sup> hee hath yet noe leasure to look on his olde frindes, yet I have sent your man baker this morning to him to see if hee will yet seale y<sup>e</sup> bond, or else to coe and speak w<sup>th</sup> mee, yet I confesse I have little delight to see him because I have so little hope to prevayle w<sup>t</sup> him for what is good for his children, and though hee pretends much affection both to them and there deer Mother, yet hee hath made small expressions of it since hee parted w<sup>th</sup> her, and therefore thinke his love is more verball then reall, for if it were so hee would not scruple to doe what wee have so often desired and hee promised.'

John Altham writes to his brother James three years after this, June 18, 1652, ' Sir William Halton hath been with me several times this last week past, and hath made this proposition, which he desired me to impart to you ; if you will deliver in his statute he will settle that land he lately bought of Mr. Greene (w<sup>ch</sup> as I have heard is neere one hundred pounds p. ann.) upon his sonne, paying to his sister fifteen hundred pounds ; he is very sedulous to effect this ; what advantage he propounds to himselfe in it I know not, and therefore am y<sup>e</sup> more apt to believe he intendeth y<sup>e</sup> good of his children only by it, who as farre as I can discerne will by this meanes be better secured, for I conceive all his other lands were bound by settlements more antient than this statute, and therefore subject to it only during his life. . . . Sr, according to his request I have acquainted you with his proposall, but submitt it to your consideration.'

The interest at this point seems to pass to the youngest son of Sir Edward and Lady Altham, the last of the five whose names appear on the monument in Latton Church (see p. 75). The first of the two Edwards died young. The second has been referred to. The youngest\* of the brothers was Emanuel. Emanuel stands in striking contrast to his brothers. James was the ardent cavalier and dignified country gentleman ; John the thorough lawyer ; Leventhorp (who succeeded James at Mark Hall) was the man of business. Edward's was the mind most



exercised with theological matters. Emanuel, however, seems, from the letters, to stand out as the wild, roving character, reckless and extravagant. Yet Emanuel is affectionate towards his mother and brothers, and seems to have his penitent moments amid all his extravagance. On April 12, 1652, he writes to his mother from Paris :—' On Tuesday last I came to toun, and next Monday, God willing, I doe intend for y<sup>e</sup> Armye wich lyes some thirty mills frome Parris, thar my Lorde Digbye lyes with his forses ; I have a letter frome a persone of honor to him ; and what y<sup>t</sup> letter will woorke I shall give your Ladshipe a more peticular account, after I have had a triall.'

The following month saw Emanuel in trouble. He writes to his brother Leventhorpe from Paris, June 3rd :—' Since my last unto you itt has pleased God to cast mee in to my enimies hands, whar I was most barberously bled, and hade I nott bine delivered by the Prince of Candys one Garde I believe before this that I hade nott bine in a condition to right. My Lorde Digbys Cornett was taken with mee, thay stript us and tooke all frome us, and hade nott my Cornett a hade y<sup>e</sup> Prince his passport thay had chott us for whatt wee hade. We ware taken by St. Dennis we ware of our party sume foretin hors y<sup>e</sup> enmye nott above a douzen. When wee came up to them, itt was our resolution to fight y<sup>m</sup> but our hors thought thay should have y<sup>e</sup> worst rune all away and leafe my cornett and myselfe to thar mursy, wich would have bine verye littill hade nott my cornett pulled out suddenly y<sup>e</sup> Prince passport, wich when thay saw, thay durst nott touch us, but brought us to towne, and imprisoned us nott in a common prison, butt putt us in a chamber garnisht, butt as I told you before they tooke evirye thinge frome us. Whilst wee ware in this greatt extremyte, unexpected came y<sup>e</sup> Prince of Candys, Captaine of y<sup>e</sup> Gard and delivered us, and one of y<sup>e</sup> Rouges y<sup>t</sup> hade y<sup>e</sup> Gard of my Bodye and bled me soe barbarously, y<sup>t</sup> when I made my cumplaint to y<sup>e</sup> Captaine hee beatt him verye mutch ; att last caused boith this souldear and myselfe to be brought to y<sup>e</sup> Prince ; soe I did lay hold of his base actions, and for y<sup>m</sup> hee was committed to prisone, and lyes at my murseye weather I shall hange him ore noe ; I believe I shall, for hee is nott abell to restore my losses, and for his cumrayds thay are all fled upone itt soe I believe I shall make him an example ; y<sup>t</sup> others who may unfortunately fall into thar hands may fynde more mersye. In the interim be pleased to lett my brother Altham understand of my misfortune, and for a new recutte, I shall leve itt to him, for hee has y<sup>e</sup> most interest.'

Then come requests for money.

'Twice a week,' writes Leventhorp to James Altham,

‘Manuel importunes me for new supply . . . for my part I look upon him as a lost man for any employment, and therefore am of opinion what money shall be sent him any more upon that pretence will be so much cast away, he not being of a capacity to govern himself.’ Leventhorp thinks he had better come home. On July 24 he writes to James for £50. The money appears to be his own. But on May 16, 1653 he writes to his eldest brother such sentences as these: ‘There is a vast estate gone, but I am not the first it has happened to.’ ‘A forlorn brother that has by vanity spent his fortune.’ ‘I desire pardon,’ ‘Shall be careful to keep my promise and strive to live although cut off from the vine. My humble duty to your vine.’ ‘Underwritten do acknowledge to have received my full portion least me by my deare father from the hands of my brother James Altham, and that I have not anything to pretend to more from him. Witness my hand Amsterdam 16 of May 1653.’

EM. ALTHAM.

To his mother he writes from the borders of Germany having just come from the French Army. He has had her prayers, has passed many ‘escapes and dangers.’:—‘I tell you that you may give thanks. God has blessed me with health and limbs. Many comrades have lost both. I have done my best to obtain a fortune or a grave. My trust shall be in God. I confess my follies, and not husbanding my plentiful fortune.’ A letter from her ladyship will be a cordial:—‘I fear your Ladyship has not been well. Madam, pardon me for being so free in my discourse.’ He wishes her length of days and eternal happiness with all her children.

In 1655 the good Lady Altham, the faithful mother to all these children, died. On April 15 of that year Emanuel appears to have been in London, and Leventhorpe writes to his brother John:—

‘I have received a letter . . . from Emanuel desiring me to permit him to enjoy his part of those things that were left by my Ledy . . . I send you my answer to his on purpose opened, that having viewed it you may at the delivery thereof take occasion to advise him to be cautious how he engageth himself in this towne from whence he must be wholly restrained for otherwise he will never be kept within bounds.’

In 1657 we find Emanuel staying with Sir John and Lady Tufton. Lady Tufton was Mary, the only child of James and

Alice Altham of Mark Hall, the 'pretty sweet Moll,' the 'black eyes' of earlier letters. The marriage does not appear to have been a very happy one, for they separated at a later date. Emanuel writes from their house at Bobbing to his brother John acknowledging, as usual, his past 'trangressings,' lamenting that his Brother Altham will not grant a request he has made, but adding 'it shall never make a breach between us brothers.'

Russell y<sup>e</sup> Taylor is hee y<sup>e</sup> I am most ingaged and hee has to Dymon rings of mine.'

On August 20th 1658, Leventhorpe writes again about Emanuel to his brother James at Mark Hall, 'it is a tedious thing to be thus constantly troubled with his impertinency,' and at the end he says:—'For news the report is this: Yesterday Prauelin was to be surrendered; the Duke of Buckingham carried to the Tower; the Protector relapsed; the Holland ambassador resolute upon terms not agreeable; the king of Swedland stronge and is thought will absolutely dispossess the king of Denmark by reason of a discovery by the Intercepting also of a design to deliver the Sound up to the Hollanders.'

The 'news' reported in this letter shows how ill Oliver Cromwell was. On the third of September he died, just after the occurrence of an awful storm.

The Council of Richard Cromwell, his son, summoned a new Parliament on the old system of election. Sir John Tufton, of the Moat, Kent, appears to have been invited by his countrymen in Kent to become one of the knights of that shire. He sends a letter to his father-in-law, James Altham, from London, to say that he is going into Kent on this business.

'I know not that my wife's company will advantage me. . . . I should prefer her health before all the honours and advantages the world can give me, and so terrible is the apprehension of her relapse to me that whatsoever of importunity or interest I can move with, is employed to overthrow her purpose for Kent, and if she should venture thither I take heaven to witness she is as refractory to my advice as disobedient to parents. I most humbly thank you for your affectionate regards in making the offer of her native air; she hath her liberty also to continue here, and if she will make choice of that only which is foribidd, I wish she had less of her mother Eve.'

On April 12, 1659, Peter Tyrrill (who had married Bridget, the youngest sister of James Altham, and was created a baronet July 1665) writes to his brother-in-law at Mark Hall, that he purposes a visit to Shingle Hall, when he hopes to see him.

'This toune,' he says also, 'affords noe neues. Some debates there have been in the house about the exile, but nothing is settled yet for the future. . . . The newes of the peace between France and Spain is still confirmed.'

On May 29, 1660, the exiled King (Charles II.) made his entry into London amid joyful acclamations. Emanuel Altham seems to have been one of a large number of men who were the King's Body Guard for a few weeks after his arrival. The men after a while were disbanded, and Emanuel in an undated letter makes the following lament to his brother James: 'For our Gards, this morning our squadrone is to bee disbanded, and for our servis nott one penny conyderatione which makes us all in sad conditione sume few will be chosen to make uppe ye to hundred yt shall stand Butt how many ore who I know nott.' Emanuel, however, was not altogether thrust aside. He had interest, which was probably exercised on his behalf, for we find him in 1663 still employed in the King's military service. The festivities held in honour of the newly-arrived King no doubt suited him down to the ground. His only fear was as to his future. There is a letter from him to James at Mark Hall, dated July 3, two days before the great City Feast at the Guild-hall, which is described in Evelyn's *Diary*, when all Parliament, both Lords and Commons, were present.

'Sir, I have not mutch to say, but presenting my service and to give you a small account of our daylye indeavours Butt now allmost disparing of yt which we did cumfort ourselves with of beeing confirmed, wee doe expect to bee discharged. After this Grand Feast which ye Squadrone I am under has ye Honnor to attend his sacred Majestye in to ye Cittye: and yt to bee our last servis to him upon this account of Liufe Garde. I am daylye strugling, butt cannot make any advans. To morro I shall waite one Mr. Russell who lyves att Brooke House, butt I am afrayd thear will bee littell to bee expected. His brother understanding ye professione, will hardlye entertaine any cummand but upon good Tearmes, soe all my boostrings fayle. All my hopes now depend upon my nobell Lord of Carbery, who has bine highelye civill to mee, and does assure mee yt if myselfe ore any frend of mine cann thinke of any thinge, he will nott onelye speake to ye Kinge, butt will present mee to him. I could wishe your occations did call you to London. I presume to bee huppye in itt (Butt patiance is ye woord) I am :

Sr your most affec. Bro. and servant,

EMM. ALTHAM.

'My servis to your Ladye and cousins. All your frends heare are verye well and presents thar servis. My Lady Tufton goes y<sup>e</sup> next Tuesday for Kentt.'

The 'nobell Lord of Carbery,' mentioned in the above letter, had married Frances Altham, daughter of Sir James Altham, Kt., of Oxhey Place, Herts., and granddaughter of Sir James Altham, Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer in the reign of James I., who built a chapel, where worship is still carried on, at Oxhey. Lady Carbery, the 'nobell Lorde's wife,' was consequently Emanuel Altham's second cousin. She had died in 1650. Lord Carbery had been a distinguished Cavalier leader during the civil war, having been Lieut.-General for the counties of Carmarthen, Pembroke, and Cardigan. At the restoration he was constituted Lord-President of the Principality of Wales. Jeremy Taylor had found a refuge during part of the rebellion at Golden Grove, Lord and Lady Carbery's house in Carmarthenshire. The third part of *The Great Exemplar* was, in the first edition, dedicated to Frances Lady Carbery. Jeremy Taylor preached a funeral sermon upon her death at Golden Grove. 'I choose not to declare her extraction and genealogy,' he said, 'it was indeed fair and noble. . . . She was married young, and besides her business of religion seemed to be ordained in the providence of God, to bring to this honorable family a part of a fair fortune, and to leave behind her a fairer issue worth ten times her portion.'

## THE SAMPLER.

BY FLORENCE LEWER.

LONG before the dawn of history, in the days of our first parents, when, as John Milton wrote (*Paradise Lost*),

'Those leaves

They gathered, broad as Amazonian targe,  
And with what skill they had together sewed,  
To gird their waist,'

the needle had asserted its usefulness. Since those remote times the art and craft of the needle has become indissolubly associated with the comfort and well being of civilized man, and especially of the home. Its methods and modes have varied in different ages, at different periods, and in different countries, but its use, once recognised, never grew obsolete. One interesting develop-

ment of the art was seen in the sampler, which formerly had an enormous vogue in English households.

The word is derived from the Latin *exemplar*, 'whence,' says Dr. Johnson, 'it is sometimes written sampler.' Little is known of the origin of this species of embroidery and an endeavour to discover its source will lead us into the pleasant byways of the history of needlework. It has been shrewdly surmised that the sampler may have been evolved from the embroideries that clothe many an Egyptian mummy. Mrs. R. E. Head, however, is of opinion that the English sampler is of Italian origin. In an article contributed to 'The Reliquary' (vol. viii., 1902) she stated that she had recently 'obtained some fragments of Italian towels or table-covers of the late sixteenth or early seventeenth century, the borders of which were worked in red silk with patterns that markedly resembled the mysterious bands in our English samplers.' This comparative evidence is to a certain extent valuable, but of course is not necessarily conclusive.

The sampler, samcloth, or sampleth, as it has been variously spelt, as far as existing specimens can be taken as a proof, originated during the reign of Charles I., but frequent allusions in literature to earlier samplers demonstrate that it must have been familiar long before this period. Perhaps the earliest definite mention of a sampler is in 1546; when it occurs in the will of one Margaret Thomson, of Freston, in Lincolnshire. The document was proved at Boston on May 25th, 1546, and the testator states:—'I gyve to Alys Pynchebeck my systers daughter my sawmpler with semes.'

The poet, John Skelton (1460 ?—1529), who is thought to have been a native of Norfolk, alludes to 'The sampler to sowe on, the laces to embroide.' William Shakespeare, whose observant eye nothing escaped, says in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*:—

• We, Hermia, like two artificial gods,  
Have with our needles created both one flower,  
Both on one sampler, sitting on one cushion.'

And in *Titus Andronicus* we have an interesting sign that even in the dramatist's day there were already some who regarded it as boredom to work a sampler:—

' Fair Philomela, she but lost her tongue,  
And in a tedious sampler sew'd her mind.'

Sir Philip Sidney (1554-1586), that flower of chivalry and pink of courtesy, wrote in his *Arcadia* :—

‘O love, why dost thou in thy beautiful sampler set such a work for my desire, to set out which is impossible?’

Another reference, in *The Crowne Garland of Golden Roses Gathered out of England's Royall Garden* (1612) by Richard Johnson (1573—1659?), to ‘a short and sweet sonnet made by one of the maides of honour of Queen Elizabeth, which she sowed uppon a sampler in red silke to a New Tune, or Phillida flouts Me,’ further establishes the custom of sampler-stitching prior to the era of the first Charles. In *Notes and Queries* (December 23rd, 1899) Mr. W. Elliott Harrison, of Fort Madison, U.S.A., stated that he owned a sampler worked by his ancestress, Mary Harrison, aged nine, in 1622, which bore the lines :—

‘In Sharon's lovely rose  
Immortal beauties shine,  
Its sweet refreshing fragrance shows  
Its origin divine.’

John Milton, in *Comus* (a Masque presented at Ludlow Castle in 1634), emphasizes the humble esteem in which sampler work was already held in some quarters. *Comus* says :—

‘Coarse complexions  
And cheeks of sorry grain will seive to ply  
The sampler, and to tease the huswife's wool.’

These quotations clearly show that samplers were common in the sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries, and it is difficult to conceive why none of so early a date has survived. Presumably the bulk of them perished under wear and tear, or from the devastations of the clothes-moth. It seems clear, also, that some were considered of too slight importance to be cherished as heirlooms, or at all events handed down from generation to generation. Possibly many partook of a form and character so unusual to our eyes that they have ceased to be recognised as samplers.

The craze for needlework of all sorts was strong during the reign of Queen Elizabeth, whose vanity and love of finery were so inordinate that she was the possessor of two thousand dresses. Philip Stubbes, the Puritan pamphleteer, writing in the *Anatomic of Abuses* (1583), says men ‘were deck'd out in fineries even to their shirts, which are wrought throughout with needleworke of silke curiously stitched with open seams.’

In France, at the same period, a similar fondness for richness and variety in clothing was carried to such extravagance that Catherine de Medici was presented with a petition of grievances, which urged that the revenue obtained from agriculture was being wasted in embroideries, needlework, trimmings, etc. The Countess of Wilton mentions in her work on *The Art of Needlework* (1842) that many books, with patterns for needlework, were published in good Queen Bess's time, but although diligent search has been made for volumes answering to that description, our industry has gone unrewarded. If any of these books existed, the question arises, was the sampler evolved from them? Books were rare and costly to produce in those days of black-letter printing and the young would in all probability not be allowed to utilise, for the purpose of daily study, the patterns or samples contained in them. Is it not likely that some wise mother or teacher may have copied, roughly at first, these instructions on coarse canvas with some elementary designs? It is a matter of deep regret that no Tudor sampler now survives: not only would it have elucidated the mystery that surrounds the samplers spoken of by the poets we have quoted, but also have enabled us to trace the continuity of style, pattern, and stitch in the earliest extant samplers. Imagination sometimes tempts us to perceive in the case of some early samplers a faint imitation or trace of Eastern needlework, as if the fair worker had copied some example of Oriental embroidery. But the English touch is too characteristic, too indicative of its period, to warrant the conjecture. At any rate, the workmanship in most instances is so decidedly original that any suggestion of slavish copying is untenable.

The earliest existing samplers in England date, we have said, from the time of Charles I., and the theory is at least plausible that his Queen, Henrietta Maria, may have encouraged the working of samplers, since needlework had long been in high repute in her country of France. The spread of education during this eventful reign may (one is almost inclined to say must) have contributed largely to the cult of the sampler. Be the theory right or wrong, it was from the examples of this period that the sampler of the following 200 years was derived. The samplers of the early seventeenth century have never been excelled; the graceful proportions, the open thread work, the



various patterns in coloured silks stitched in parallel rows, the applied designs of open lace work, complete an ensample of delicate tenderness and beauty. As regards the tapestry and stump-work pictures of the same period, we find traces of their influence in many of the samplers of this time. These pictures were undoubtedly the creation of expert needleworkers, and were not intended as examples for the novice.

The sampler was intended primarily to teach the art of



1790.

needlework. Its history, as revealed in its different forms and ornamentations, has a pathetic human interest, for it portrays during the various stages of its existence not only the styles of stitches, colour, alphabet, decoration, verse, and platitude, but gives an insight into the domestic life, the religious and social influences that were at work in the household and the home. If its *raison d'être* were to teach the art of needlework, then, in current familiar phrase, it supplied a 'long-felt want.' At first the sampler was generally destitute of any clue whereby its owner

or its author might be identified. However, as household luxury advanced, and more abundant supplies of fine linen, embroidery, bed or table napery were stored, the young members of the family required training in needlework in increasing numbers, and this led to a larger quantity of samplers being produced. These would naturally bear some mark to indicate their creator or possessor ; hence doubtless sprang the idea of working the initials or the full name and date on the sampler. In the earlier examples, the greater portion is given up to various patterns of stitchwork, and sometimes lace work, a small part only being devoted to the alphabet. In some, even this is omitted. John Bloundelle-Burton, the well-known novelist, has a sampler worked in 1718, by his grandmother's great-grandmother, which contains no alphabet, 'but is very full of other quaint matter. To wit, she subscribes at the bottom, "This work in hand my friends may have when I am dead and laid in grave. Mary Beuan [Bevan] aged 10 years, 1718."' This sampler was strongly religious in its nature. 'There are,' writes its owner (*Notes and Queries*, July 30, 1892), 'Moses and Aaron on either side (most beautifully worked and with their colours of red and blue as fresh as though done to-day), the Ten Commandments and the Lord's Prayer in the middle, and a quaint old hymn, the original of which I have never been able to find in print.' Hymns were in great request for these designs. But the lines composed by the famous hymn-writer, the Rev. John Newton, for the sampler of his niece, Elizabeth Catlett, were especial favourites, and ran :—

'Jesus, permit Thy gracious Name to stand  
As the first effort of an infant's hand ;  
And while her fingers o'er the canvas move,  
Engage her tender thoughts to seek Thy love ;  
With Thy dear children let her have a part,  
And write Thy name, Thyself, upon her heart.'

Sometimes the juvenile seamstress gave a proprietary touch to her sampler by altering the second line to suit her own case. Thus wee Mary Arabella Pearson stitched 'As the first work of Arabella's hand' instead of following Newton literally.

All samplers were worked in parallel rows of decorative patterns. The Indian pink, pineapple, and acorn are familiar features in seventeenth-century work. Doubtless the acorn was in commemoration of the Boscobel oak in which Charles II. concealed himself after the battle of Worcester (1651). Sampl---

of the early Stewart period are bright and brilliant in colour, as might be expected, judging from our knowledge of the life and dress of the people.

A little later the alphabet became predominant on the sampler, and smaller space was devoted to patterns of conventional flowers and bands of ornamental patterns. In a sampler dated 1737, which, like the early Carolian specimens, is without a border, we note the quaint earnestness of thought in the verses:—

‘ Mary Nicols is my name,  
And England is my nation.  
Retford is my dwelling place,  
And God is my salvation.’

Another, which we believe to be an Essex sampler, dated 1790 (see p. 150), shows that the chastening power of the Puritan revival struck it roots deeply:—

‘ Learn to condemn all Praise Betimes,  
For Flattery is the Nurse of Crimes;  
With early Virtue Plant thy Breast,  
The specious arts of vice detest.’

In these lines we notice the same undercurrent of sentiment, feeling, and moral reflection, which permeated the works of Samuel Richardson, Hannah More, Mrs. Barbauld, Mrs. Chapone, and other writers and novelists of the second half of the eighteenth century. The influence also of the labour and teaching of John Wesley and George Whitefield can be traced. Those who have read Wesley's diary will remember his remarkable reception by the ‘ poor loving simple-hearted people ’ of Colchester in 1758.

Times that try men's souls bear a great part in the forming of the character of a people, and this influence was indirectly reflected in the verses of the samplers of the late eighteenth century and the early years of the nineteenth century, the samplers themselves becoming more lugubrious and dismal, and as uninteresting as the Georgian architecture. The well-known verse by Mrs. Mary Masters is chosen as a specimen of the brightest and most acceptable sentiments of this period:—

‘ 'Tis Religion that can give  
Sweetest pleasures while we live;  
'Tis religion must apply  
Solid comforts when we die.’

In a sampler worked by Susannah Pearson, of Writtle School, dated 1821, which contains no alphabet and of which we give an illustration, the worker quotes from 'The Tempest,'



1821.

and with wonderful philosophy and liberality bequeathes to her friends her sampler in these rhymes :—

'This work I have done my friends may have  
When I am dead and in my grave.  
Lord, grant that I in peace may die,  
And live with Christ eternally.'

M

It must also be borne in mind that samplers of this class did not carry out the purpose for which this species of embroidery was invented. This end, however, was not ignored, as many of the samplers produced at this time and a little later were embellished with houses, windmills, Scriptural subjects, grotesque animals, birds, vines and names, all proper illustrations of the objects they were intended to subserve, inasmuch as they were fitted to adorn the sitting or school-room. They were, in short, the show-pieces of the girls' early efforts in the field of needlework, and as such they should always be regarded. So considered, the sampler filled a most useful place in the scheme of education of its day.



1664.

The shape and ornamentation of the sampler evince an interesting sequence and, by the aid of the illustrations given, the period, and the rise and the obliteration of it may be traced. The sampler of the Stewart days was a long, narrow strip of linen or canvas, intended to be wound upon a cylinder or roll. No samplers of later date adopt this form, so the point is worthy of remembrance in an undated sampler. The earliest example extant in England is dated 1648, and was shown at the exhibition of Old English Tapestry Pictures, Embroideries, and Samplers in 1900. It is a long sampler on unbleached linen, in divisions, with arabesque ornaments of oak leaves, acorns, etc., signed A.S. We give an illustration of a sampler which was the property of the late Mr. I. Chalkley Gould, dated 1664, which is of exceptional beauty, and shows lace work, in addition to silk stitching. It is 3 feet long by 7 inches broad, and is divided into the usual cross strips. Black and white reproduction conveys but a faint notion of the vivid yet charming effect of the reds and greens employed, although they do indicate the excellent

character of the stitchwork. Like many other examples, this is wrought on canvas, but the material is of finer texture than usual. In a sampler dated 1667, the stitching is somewhat coarse, and worked upon a base of rough canvas. Adam and Eve are depicted in hairy garments, with silken mops of hair, their faces suggesting those of King Charles's spaniels! Some of the flowers were worked separately, petal on petal, and then applied to the sampler—an effective method of decoration, rendering the picture realistic.

These examples have no border, and a border has not been found on any sampler prior to the beginning of the eighteenth century. Some of these early samplers, as already stated, have designs in lace, which are simply made by drawing the threads and working a border to contain the pattern, as shown at the foot of the illustration dated 1664. In place of various styles of needlework of coloured silk and open lace work, the samplers of the closing years of the seventeenth century witnessed a more general adoption of the alphabet and fewer patterns. Verses and moral maxims also made their appearance at this time. It has been repeatedly stated that the Stewart rose ceased to bloom on samplers from about 1700, being replaced by the carnation conventionally treated. This cannot be accurate, as there is little doubt that the rose was worked on many a sampler of later date, the pattern of which can be seen in old glass of the Jacobite period.

The stitches used in the samplers were of simple character, viz., the ordinary cross stitch, back stitch, and long stitch; late specimens show the introduction of what is known as the bird's eye stitch.

Maps in needlework came into existence about 1770 and most have a border round them. Some of the earlier examples are in cross stitch, but generally tent or outline stitch was utilised for this purpose. These maps vary in shape, being square, round, oval, or oblong, and their geographical features are generally distorted in adaptation to the selected form. Minor details, such as county boundaries, are also modified to meet the exigencies of long names of towns, etc., inserted.

The borders of these samplers are sometimes exquisitely worked with wreathed flowers, leaves, and bands and loops of ribbon. We give an illustration of an Essex sampler of map

work, worked by an ancestor of Miss C. Fell Smith, who was born in 1794, and was therefore about twelve years old. It is signed at foot in needlework, within a wreath :—‘A Map of Europe, worked by Hannah Smith, at Kelvedon School, 1806.’\* The division of the countries is by very fine chenille, sewn on.



1806.

The lettering, in fine black silk, is of wonderful accuracy and clearness, although our photograph is not of the best.

The latest Essex example we have is a sampler dated 1859, worked in cross stitch of silk. It contains the alphabet and the following exhortation :—‘Humble yourself in the sight of God and He shall lift you up. Draw nigh to God and He will draw nigh to you.’ It is signed in tull, ‘Sarah Baker, September 20, 1859.’

\*Unfortunately there is a spot partly obscuring the date in the photograph.

Aged 11 years. Harlow Churchgate School.' For so late a date it is exceptional, as it contains no ornamentation beyond the single border. It is a sampler, pure and simple.

The last fifty years of the eighteenth century were rich in variety of form of the sampler; the pictorial side advanced rapidly, and included, as we have said, windmills, houses, animals, birds, flowers and Scriptural subjects. In addition to these were names, initials, aphorisms and rural scenes. There was also introduced an ornate border, single and double, which gradually increased in size until it became entirely disproportionate to the work it encircled. The old patterns, which were wrought to be of service, that is, to be utilised as samplers, giving the word its real signification, were replaced by a meaningless type, which lasted to the nineteenth century and was covered with more or less inartistic designs, usually evolved from the whim or fancy of a child, or the inner consciousness of an instructress. They appeal to us, not as examples of needlework, but as records of laborious work and bygone days. The Essex worthy, Mrs. Gilbert, formerly Ann Taylor (1782-1866), gives us a hint of this in her 'Saturday Morning':

There stands the old arm chair in chimney nook,  
The oaken table there in glory stands;  
On decent shelf, good tract and Holy Book,  
And, framed in marking stitch, some poet's lines.

As the eye lingers on these old pictures of needlework, some in good preservation, others faded and moth-eaten, the mind endeavours to recreate the personality of the worker and her environment. Let us give full play to our imagination and dream of the busy touch of a vanished hand, even though we may fail to call up the features and the garb of the figure who stitched, patiently if laboriously, at the canvas.

## A LIEUTENANCY BOOK\* FOR ESSEX.

1608 TO 1631, AND 1637 TO 1639.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

**T**HIS great folio MS., of unique interest for Essex, came recently into the hands of the Oxford Regius Professor of Modern History, Dr. C. H. Firth, and he, with the generosity

\*I have made a full analysis of it, describing every paper, and have condensed much of this into the present and other papers for the *Review*, but at least three sections of it would be extremely valuable, and might well be printed in full, if the means were forthcoming. While it remains in my custody, I shall be glad to show it to any county antiquary or interested person.



characteristic of himself personally, and of his office traditionally, has entrusted it to me to describe, and make the utmost use of, for the benefit of county history.

The nominal administrative head of the county, for many purposes, was the Lord-Lieutenant, *i.e.* (during the earlier part of this period), Robert Ratcliffe, fifth Earl of Sussex. He had a Court office, which kept him frequently in attendance on the King; and lived generally in London. His Lieutenancy duties thus devolved on his Deputies, or, rather, on the senior Deputy-Lieutenant for the time being. These were Sir Francis Barrington, 1608 to about 1625; William, Lord Maynard, of Easton Lodge, from about 1625 till his resignation in October 1628; after which it is difficult to trace the master-mind. It seems to have been the practice of the acting Deputy-Lieutenant, for his own guidance and justification, to cause to be filed, in the office of the Clerk of the Peace at Chelmsford (Mr. John Man seems to hold the office at this time), all orders addressed to him by the King, by the Privy Council, or other superior authority, whether received mediately through the Lord-Lieutenant or directly from the superior authority. With each order were placed copies of the notices or directions issued, by reason of it, by the Deputy-Lieutenants, to officers of the militia, to chief magistrates of Essex boroughs, to justices of the peace, to high constables of hundreds, etc.; as also copies of the replies sent to the Lord-Lieutenant, to the Privy Council, to the Board of Green Cloth, etc.; and, occasionally, copies of the official reports on which these replies were framed. From time to time, also, on the definite conclusion or the muddled ending of a particular piece of business, the Deputy-Lieutenant caused a pithy 'memorandum' or endorsement to be made, giving his judgment on the whole affair.

At first these files were in constant use. We find, in the official letters of the Deputy-Lieutenants, frequent references to orders of a given date received from superiors or directions of a given date issued to inferiors. These references are sometimes to letters or orders issued some years back. After an interval of years, however, the stay-laces of the files would not only have strung on them an immense number of papers, but these papers would be mainly out of date and little likely to be called for. At the same time, 'precedent' was the fetish of English adminis-

tration, and past history had taught local authority to be ready with precedents against encroachments of crown officials. Accordingly, instead of destroying the antiquated files straight off, the particular Deputy-Lieutenant who was chiefly interested in the business that had been transacted during the period seems to have instructed his clerk to copy out into a great folio volume the set of papers about to be burnt. This casual treatment of the papers involved many errors; important papers were lost; papers got into wrong order; dates were forgotten, when not distinctly written in the originals; papers were frayed, and so partly illegible when they came to be transcribed.

Along with these Deputy-Lieutenancy papers, the more unusual orders directed to the Justices of the Peace were filed in the same way, and many of them brought into the same volume with the strictly Lieutenancy papers.

There are allusions which establish the existence of quite a series of volumes so compiled and transcribed. William, Lord Maynard, who withdrew from the Deputy-Lieutenancy in October 1628, lent his 'book of Lieutenancy' to Sir Henry Mildmay, of Grace's, Deputy-Lieutenant, who returned it, January 24, 1629, with hearty thanks for the loan. This was, therefore, not a MS. belonging to the office, but a private register of official acts. In April 1627, when the Privy Council scolded the Essex Justices of the Peace for allowing the Grand Jury at the Sessions to reject the king's demand for ship money, the Justices sent a deputation to London, 'and made it appear unto them by showing unto them the former *Booke of Presidentes* [*i.e.*, precedents]' that they had proceeded exactly as they had done in 1596. This book would, therefore, be a Lieutenancy Book of the same sort containing a record of proceedings in the latter end of Elizabeth's reign.

These features have been dwelt upon, because they explain how a noble set of books of record, which would have been invaluable for county history, has disappeared. Although containing the record of official acts of the Deputy-Lieutenants and the Justices, the volumes were compiled at the charge of, and for the use of, individuals; remained their property; and have disappeared, or perished, with their other private papers.

From these general considerations we pass to a description of the one volume of the set which has survived and is accu-

to the student. It is a plain, workmanlike folio, containing over 370 leaves of good paper, of 14in. by 8½in., in its original white vellum binding, with a flap going over the front of the volume, and fastened by thongs to the upper board. The water-mark, 2½in. by 1½in. at the widest part, is of an interesting heraldic type, representing a fleur-de-lis set on a coronet, which rests on an escutcheon (shewing a fesse between 3 somethings, impaling a field divided by a cross and a saltire) standing on a Maltese cross set on a scroll with the paper-maker's name. The only mark of provenance is the heraldic bookplate, within cover, of John Gurdon Rebow, viz. gules, 2 bows saltire-wise between 4 roundels, each bearing a fleur-de-lis; crest, a bird with outstretched wings, transfixd by an arrow, issuing from a mural crown; quartering, azure, three leopard's faces jessant de lys; crest, an antelope climbing a rock. The motto is *In arduis viget virtus*. The Rebows were a Colchester family. Some twenty leaves at the beginning were left blank, so that if a hasty owner desired a scrap of paper for a pipe-light or a note, he might supply himself (as he has done) without mutilating the record. The volume was then paged from page 1 to page 627, leaving over 40 leaves at the end untouched. The first 12 pages were filled by lists of hundreds and parishes in Essex and a state of the trained-bands in England and Wales, placed here for facility of reference. The real beginning of the volume is on page 13, which commences with the date and title:—

'Essex, 23th [*i.e.*, three and twentieth] May 1608. A Booke of Lieutenancie, wherein is entred all letters directed to the Lord Lieutenant of the County of Essex concerninge musters or levyinge of forces, with all such proceedinges as have bene done and executed upon the said letters by his Deputy Lieutenants.' It was at first intended to keep this part of the volume specially for military records, and a second section was begun, without title, on page 543, for documents concerned with civil government. The copyist followed this plan till 1625. Then he included in his first section all papers whatever; and in 1631, a year in which the documents are in unusually confused sequence, he reached the page where he had begun the second section. He then omitted all documents belonging to the years 1632 to 1636, and resumed, in the next page after the unfinished second section, by transcribing a document of 1637, concluding

this work with papers of 1638 and 1639. It is plain from the writing and the ink, as from other circumstances, that the letters, etc., were not posted into this volume as received, but that the whole volume was written continuously. We may safely fix the bulk of this transcribing in 1639, because in several places, as, *e.g.*, in 1625 and in 1631, the copyist has, by a natural mistake, substituted 1639, the year in which he was writing, for the date of the letter he copied.

The following is a summary of the varied contents of this important MS :—

I. 1608-24, pp. 21-111, injunctions, correspondence, returns about the County Trained Bands and the County Arsenal of Munitions. A paper giving the substance of this section of the MS. appeared in this *Review* for April in the present year.

II. 1626-38, scattered throughout the latter part of the volume, similar documents connected with the Trained Bands and the Arsenal in those years. These papers are not so interesting as those in the first section. The returns which gave muster places, strength of companies, names of officers, are left out. The documents which are now copied are long papers of injunction from the King and privy council, trying to enforce better and more frequent drill, better weapons, increase of numbers, equipment for field service.

It may be noted that Mr. Walter Rye possesses a MS. Book of Lieutenancy for Norfolk, 1626-37, which he printed for the Norfolk and Norwich Archæological Society in 1907. In this several of these later ordinances on this and other subjects may be found. In my opinion, however, the Essex MS. has preserved, on the whole, the better text.

III. A very large part of the volume is occupied by collections of papers relating to impressment of men for service over sea. Curious details are given as to their equipment, their allowances, their march from the town where they were taken charge of by 'conductors' to the port of embarkation. The county was called on to raise at once the whole money required for impressing, clothing, conducting, and paying the impressed men; and might hope, if lucky, to get back a portion of the outlay after contending for months with the chicanery of the exchequer.

In 1608 15 pikemen, 30 caliver men, and 5 musketeers were

pressed in the county, and marched from Chelmsford to Chester to reinforce the troops in Ireland (pp. 13—21).

In Jan. 1623 the Essex authorities were charged with despatching from Harwich to their homes the survivors of Sir Horace Vere's Palatinate troops (p. 589).

In 1624 orders went forth for 14,000 men to be impressed for Count Mansfield's futile expedition to the Palatinate, of which the Essex contingent was 700, immediately raised to 750 to make up for desertions. Sir Charles Rich was one of the captains under whom the Essex men marched in December from Chelmsford to Dover. At Dover desertions were so frequent that in January 1625 Essex had to impress 200 more men to fill up the gaps. The Essex trained bands had to be called out to restrain the excesses of contingents from Suffolk, etc., on their way through the county (pp. 112-123).

In May 1625 Essex had to press 400 men to be marched to Plymouth (pp. 124-133). These afterwards took part in the wretched expedition to Cadiz, and the county spent months in agitation before it recovered, in 1627, any part of its outlay (pp. 274-283).

In 1625, during a panic which arose on the possibility of Spain trying a counter stroke to the muster at Plymouth by throwing a force from Dunquerque on to the unprotected coast of Essex, the larger part of the County Trained Bands were called out, and kept in camp at Harwich, 4 Sept.—5 Oct. The Privy Council promised most faithfully to pay the expenses of this service (pp. 140—196), but, after striving for payment till March 1627, the county had to write off the whole sum as a bad debt. The 'peremptoriness' of Devereux Talkerne, sergeant-major to Lord Warwick's regiment at Harwich, led to an action of assault and battery (pp. 267—270). This whole section of the MS. ought to be printed in full. It forms a story of great interest, with surprising developments, and a most tragic-farcical conclusion. The smartness and efficiency of the Deputy-Lieutenants stand out in singular contrast to the arrogance and helplessness of the central government.

In 1626, Lord Warwick was allowed to proceed with the defence of the great harbour by works at Landguard Point on the Suffolk naze, and at Harwich, which had been planned when the troops were in camp there (pp. 203-205). When he threw

up his command, he obtained the appointment of a special commission (Viscount Colchester, Lord Maynard, Sir Henry Carey) to audit his accounts, and they wrote out an exact description of the condition of the fortifications (pp. 251-256) in October 1626. A garrison was needed for the works. It was at first proposed to billet the Earl of Essex's regiment of foot (January 1626) in the Essex maritime towns, but this idea was dropped (March 1626) because the county would supply no money. Meanwhile, Brightlingsea had pleaded its membership of the Cinque Ports as a protection against having a company of 100 foot quartered there (pp. 205-210). At last, in 1627, after much bickering between the Privy Council, the Deputy Lieutenants, the Mayor of Harwich, and Captain Robert Gosnold (the commandant of the forts), it was arranged that 50 king's soldiers should hold the works at Landguard Point, and that 50 of the Essex trained-band, living nearest Harwich, should be exempted from ordinary service on condition of hastening to man the Harwich fort on any sudden alarm (pp. 418-422).

In February 1627, the King resolved to reinforce the English regiments in the Low Countries, and send them to help the King of Denmark, now hard pressed by the Romanist powers. Essex was to contribute 100 men to the force to be mustered at Harwich on 21st March, and taken by Sir Richard Saltonstall to Stade to be placed under stout-hearted Sir Charles Morgan (pp. 322-364). At Harwich there took place an extraordinary series of desertions and mutinies. Essex was deeply grieved at having to make up, by a new press, the vacancies caused by the unfitness and by the desertion of men supplied by other counties, especially Leicester and Cambridgeshire. This whole section of the MS. ought to be printed. It is a story of truly astonishing occurrences, quaintly told by the actors in them, which all took place in the limits of this county.

In September 1627, Essex was called on to impress 100 men to be marched to Plymouth, and to raise £200, for the new expedition to La Rochelle (pp. 409-415). A glowing official account of successes at the Isle of Rhé, June 27 to July 17, 1627, was published in Essex, possibly to abate the demand for repayment of money laid out on the pressed men (pp. 393-6). In December 1627 it was officially admitted that the defeated army was back

at Plymouth (p. 426), starving and mutinous. In the first quarter of 1628 Essex had the misfortune to provide quarters for Sir Pierce Crosbie's regiment of Irish foot, allowed only sixpence a day per man for all expenses, and that sixpence not regularly paid (pp. 428-451, 454-8, 471-3). There was a fierce Donnybrook at Witham on St. Patrick's Day, March 17, 1628, between the soldiers, incensed at an insult to their national flag (argent, a saltire gules), and the rustics, maddened because Irish papist soldiers had fired on and wounded peaceable English protestants. This section of the MS. ought to be printed in full, as a story of strange events transacted on Essex soil, racily told.

In 1639, Essex had to send out from Harwich 1,100 of the trained bands, and 400 pressed men, with 21 halberts (for serjeants) and 21 drummers, for the expedition intended to reduce Scotland into obedience to the Bishops (pp. 604-623). The scrap-iron condition of the arms as unshipped at Harwich, along with a glowing official announcement of the success of the expedition, is particularly amusing.

There is occasionally a strong note of comedy in these professedly grave records. One evening early in September 1628, a poor fisherman, condition as to sobriety not stated, took fright 'upon the meetinge of a smale shippe going towards London,' surely no unusual circumstance. He rowed hastily ashore, and soon, through the night, mounted men were spurring to London and to Chelmsford with the tidings that 6,000 men from Flanders had landed near Leigh; and Sir Henry Mildmay, of Grace's, and Sir Henry Mildmay, of Moulsham, had drums beat and trained men mustered to march to meet the invaders (p. 474).

IV. Another interesting, but smaller, portion of the military notes has reference to grants of leave to foreign potentates to beat drums for volunteers from England. In such cases the King asks the county authorities (*a*) to give the appointed officers free leave to ask for volunteers; (*b*) whenever a man has volunteered, to keep him to his bargain by imprisonment, if needed, as severely as if he had been pressed in the king's own service.

In November 1609, transports with Irish troops intended for the service of the King of Sweden, windbound at Gravesend, were threatened with pestilence. It was an intense relief to

Essex when they were landed to recruit their health in Kent, and not on the northern shore of the estuary (pp. 27-8).

In March 1612, the King of Denmark was accorded all facilities to enlist volunteers to serve under Lord Willoughby (pp. 34-5).

In June 1624 the Dutch were empowered to ask Essex to contribute to the 6,000 volunteers whom they proposed to enroll under the Earls of Oxford and Essex and other English colonels (pp. 107-8).

In June 1631 the Marquis of Hamilton had leave to call for Essex volunteers to enlist in the force of 6,000 he was raising for service under the King of Sweden (pp. 518-9).

V. The navy occupies less space than might have been expected in the records of a maritime county. Setting aside the ship-money notices, which belong properly to taxation, we have only these points following. The Commissioners of the Navy bought timber for ship-building in Essex. For the conveyance of this timber from the wood where it was felled to the nearest point of the waterside, whence it could be taken by barges to the dockyards at Chatham, Deptford, and Woolwich, they had to invoke the assistance of the Justices of the Peace. They paid for this 'land-transport' at an ancient, obsolete, and altogether inadequate rate. The Justices of the Peace had either to commandeer teams in their district to do the work at inadequate pay on pain of imprisonment, or else to make a rate in the district to pay the difference between 'the king's price' and current charges. Essex Justices of the Peace are praised by the Commissioners as deserving well of the country by their pains in this service. The dates and places mentioned are 1612 (p. 580); 1620 (pp. 566, 576), Navestock and Nazing; 1622 (p. 584); 1623 (p. 590), Braxsted. Unlike the land forces, which left their press to the County authorities, the Navy conducted its press by its own officers, only asking that the Justices of the Peace should give facilities for it. In March 1627, the Commissioners of the Navy sent 'press-masters' to lay hold of 150 seamen in Essex, but, in consequence of extensive desertions, had to ask the county constables to try to recover their men for them, by hook or by crook (pp. 309-10). In Sept. 1639, Algernon Percy, Earl of Northumberland, Lord High Admiral of England, began a great press in his lordly Lord



High Admiral's way, but he was unable to keep his pressed men on board his ships, and was forced to beg the petty constables of Essex to use every trick they could to bring together his fugitives (pp. 624-7).

The notices which belong to civil, as distinct from military, affairs are naturally less frequent, but they are both varied and valuable. I therefore go on with my numbered paragraphs.

VI. A large space in the MS. is devoted to the questions of purveyance and cart-taking. 'Purveyance' meant the claim of the king's 'purveyor' to commandeer provisions for man and forage for beast at an obsolete and insufficient rate, on the plea that the provisions were required for the table of the King and his retinue, and the forage for their horses. 'Cart-taking' meant a similar claim of the King and his retinue to commandeer waggons for transport on any journey the King chose to take, at similarly inadequate pay. This is admittedly not only an important, but a knotty, question in English history. The papers in this MS. connected with it extend from 1592 to 1631. They are of so great importance as to deserve separate and minute attention, due both to their historical importance and their own interest. It will be enough here to point out that in 1623 the Crown officials enticed Essex into a yearly payment of £3,000 for 'the abolishing of all purveyance and cart-taking for ever,' and that in 1631 the county had just cause to complain that, besides that yearly payment, it was saddled with newly imposed and odious charges to his majesty's hounds, and hawks, and huntsmen.

VII. Industrial Essex is not passed over in these records, but it is noticed only because on occasion its cry of distress made itself heard.

In 1623 complaint is made that there is no market for Essex cloth (p. 589).

In the same year the Privy Council takes notice of a complaint that the citizens of Norwich refuse to allow the woollen fabrics of Essex access to their market. The Privy Council offers to adjudicate. No result stated (p. 592).

In 1629 there was a complete breakdown in the Essex woollen trade (pp. 482-512), mainly due to the king's foolish personal quarrel with Spain, up to then our best market for Essex 'bays.' This is another section of Dr. Firth's MS. which

ought to be printed in full. There is an exact statement of the number of employees in the woollen trade in Essex towns, and of the weekly output, when trade was brisk. As a result of the weavers' trouble, there was a corn-riot at Burrow-hills, near Maldon, for which four persons were hanged (pp. 527, 533).

VIII. This head is a longish one in the MS., but may be a short one in the description of the MS. It describes the contemptible appeals for money made by James I. and Charles I., requests for benevolences, complaints that subsidy returns are shrinking, privy seals asking loans, demands for 'free gifts,' commissions to inflict 'knighthood' fines, forced loans, winding up with the claim for 'ship-money' (£6,057 from Essex, pp. 451-4). Here also comes an application, made in April 1620, that Essex would join with London in floating a loan on behalf of the Elector Palatine, the King's son-in-law.

IX. Another unpleasant head for the historian exhibits the harshness of James I. and Charles I. to their Romanist subjects. In 1612 (p. 580) complaint is made that Romanists are on the increase; in 1613 (pp. 551, 553), the county authorities are asked to lay hands on arms in Romanist possession; in Sept. 1614 (p. 555), a further search is ordered for arms that may have been acquired since. In Oct. 1625 besides authority to deal with Romanist commoners, Lord Warwick had special orders to disarm Romanist peers (pp. 197-201). Lord Morley had no armoury. The arms at Viscount Colchester's were removed to Sir Harbottle Grimston's; and those at Lord Petre's to Leez Priory.

X. There are a few agricultural notes. In January 1620 it is said that the low price obtainable for grain, owing to a succession of abundant harvests, is ruining farmers (p. 562). In 1622 the Privy Council tries to alleviate the distress caused by scarcity and high prices (pp. 576, 585, 588). In December 1630, and in April 1631 there is again scarcity, and consequently high prices (pp. 525-532, 540).

XI. Essex roads came in for much abuse, because the King had occasion to pass over them. In the autumn of 1621 (pp. 573, 575), the King's surveyor of the highways ordered immediate and effective repairs to roads about Ilford, Wanstead, Romford, Woodford Bridge, Havering, Abridge, and Waltham Abbey, that His Majesty might pass to Theobald's without

being in a passion all the way. Bow-bridge was in such disrepair that the king 'was unwilling to goe over itt, and alsoe he was angry that it was soe badd.' In 1622 the Duke of Buckingham writes (p. 585) asking the Judges of Assize to move the local authorities to action: 'I am a witnesse my selfe how badd the wayes are.' In 1627 an amusing deadlock occurred (p. 374). The county had issued precepts for £400 to repair the road from Chelmsford to London, and the collection of the rate was entrusted to Ambrose Aylett, of Chelmsford. Aylett was one of the seven Chelmsford men who were haled to London and there imprisoned for refusing to contribute to the forced loan. Aylett declined to allow his papers to be gone through in his absence, for the purpose of getting at the county returns, and the county petitioned the Chancellor of the Exchequer to release Aylett, even for a few days, that they might learn how far they had got in collecting the rate. In 1633 (p. 591) there are renewed complaints that Essex highways are as bad as ever.

XII. From time to time the Privy Council or other authority complains that Essex is swarming with vagrants, who rob and steal and are a terror to the country. It is so in 1612 (p. 550), in 1615 (pp. 557, 559), in 1621 (p. 572), in 1622 (p. 585), in 1628 (p. 462). The complaint is generally accompanied with a demand that the county should appoint a permanent Provost Marshall. The Deputy-Lieutenants always return a soft answer, deprecating the expense of such an establishment, and saying that they have issued strict orders in the matter to the constables throughout the shire. It is plain that they had no mind to come under the jurisdiction of an officer with ill-defined and arbitrary powers. The beginning of one Lord-Keeper's mandate to compel beggars to work seems at first sight extraordinary:—

'Considering that Almighty God, when he had but two in all the world to serve him, planted them a garden to keepe them from Idleness; and havinge afterwards appropriated unto him selfe a whole Common Wealth, did enact that law (in the 15th of Deutrynomie: *Mendicus non erit inter vos*) against begginge and lazinesse;

but the sermonic tone is explained by the fact that the seal was then held by a bishop (Williams, of Lincoln).

XIII. A few casual references describe change as to the county officials. May 1625, it is noted (p. 133) that a new

commission of Lieutenancy issued to the Earl of Sussex gave him for the first time authority to name his Deputy Lieutenants. In all former commissions (the Earl of Leicester, the Lord Treasurer Burleigh, the Earl of Sussex) these had been named by the Crown. In September 1625 (p. 154) the Earl of Warwick was associated with Sussex in the Lord Lieutenancy, but in September 1626 (p. 247) Sussex was again made sole Lord Lieutenant. In 1639 the King issues a peremptory letter (p. 618) requiring the Deputy Lieutenants to be continuously resident in the county, and also the Lord Lieutenant, unless employed outside its limits on the King's service.

XIV. Some other matters may be brought together in sequence, though they have no real connection.

In Dec. 1609 the Privy Council complained (pp. 545-8) that Proclamations issued by King and Council were generally treated as waste paper, and that in many parts of the county the officials did not even nail them up.

In Nov. 1612 the Justices of Assize complained (p. 550) that 'the multitude of Alehouses, beinge the receivers and mainteyners of the worsor sort of people, and the very bane of the Common Wealth' is very great.

In 1620 a project was stirred to restrict the number of breweries, and have only a few places licensed for that purpose (p. 567).

Stringent orders issued July 1625, in view of the plague in London, were recalled in August, because the Lord Mayor found that they stayed the influx of provisions (pp. 138-139).

In 1627 proposals that the county should buy Colchester Castle from the King came to nothing (pp. 375-8).

In 1637 a complaint that King's briefs for collections to defray losses by fire, etc., were greatly abused (p. 594), elicited a series of stringent rules to be enforced on applicants, and the remarkable admissions that 'counterfeit briefes' abounded, and that a far greater number of collections was yearly 'pressed upon the countrie' than the law had sanctioned, but no promise of enquiry in the Crown Office where these abuses originated.

## NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

**Churches, Chapels, etc.** DOVERCOURT.—The foundation stones of a new Congregational Church in Cliff Road were laid on April 29, the Rev. G. E. Monson, Chairman of the Essex Congregational Union, presiding over the gathering.

CHELMSFORD.—The jubilee of the Baddow Road Congregational Chapel was held on April 29, when an interesting account was given by Mr. Nurse, the secretary, of the beginning of free church life in the town. A piece of land and a barn, called the Frameyard, sold to Thomas Barnard in 1577, seems to have been the site where the first services were held long before 1719 the barn had been converted into a meeting house. On April 2 of that year, the building and the land were bought as a place of public worship by Rev. Nathan Heckford, and in 1736 a new building was erected. Legacies were received as follows

1722—rent charge of £2 on a field and ozier ground, copyhold of manor of Bishops Hall, by Mary Bevill, milliner, to Nathan Heckford, on condition he did not refuse it.

1725—£2 a year charged on his shop by William James, of Moulsham.

1727—the White Hart, Springfield, and three fields by John Thorne to the minister of the church; this inn was sold in 1877, and a new manse for the minister erected in New London Road.

1733—£50 for six poor widows of the congregation left by Sarah Wright.

The Rev. George Martin gave some interesting reminiscences of his first connection with the church in 1852, when he came fresh from college as a supply for one night. Two years later he settled as pastor, and he described with some humour the tuning of the fiddles in church, the objections to his wearing a silk gown given him by friends, and the congregation turning their backs on him when he said, 'Let us pray.' When the old meeting house was pulled down to build the present chapel in 1858, some oak timber of the old barn was found embedded in the chapel wall. The works foreman made of them an inkstand, which he still has.

BOWERS GIFFORD.—The new mission church and hall were dedicated on May 13 by the Bishop of Barking, who preached the sermon. At the evening service the rector of Stanford-le-Hope, Rev. James Russell, M.A., was the preacher. The building was designed by Mr. E. Sedding, F.R.I.B.A., and is of timber and red tiles.

**EAST HORNDON.**—The ancient parish church of All Saints, which has been closed for about ten years on account of its dilapidated condition, was re-opened on May 13 by the Bishop of Barking. The extensive restorations necessary have had to wait the accumulation of funds, but are now completed and are nearly paid for. The foundations needed under-pinning, the roof required much attention. The heavy gallery has been removed and the much older and very interesting priests' chambers which have been brought to light, with their approach to the rood loft, are utilised for seating. The fine incised slab to Lady Tyrrell, dated 1422, has been made an altar stone; the monument to Sir Thomas Tyrell, 1450, has been raised on a new plinth. The ancient font, holy water stoup, sundial, and grilled door have all received attention. The tower has been repaired and a vestry constructed in it. The church dates from the time of Henry VI., and is built on the site of an earlier one. It is embattled and embrasured, standing amid a belt of trees on the edge of a steep hill, commanding fine views over the Thames and the Kentish hills. The Bishop, in his eloquent sermon, dwelt on the pleasure of carefully and accurately restoring ancient buildings such as this.

**Obituaries.** **THE REV. ROBERT HENRY EUSTACE**, who had been 55 years vicar of Great Sampford with Hempsted, died at his residence, Great Sampford Grange, on March 28 last at the age of 81 years. He graduated B.A. 1848, and was ordained priest from St. Peter's College, Cambridge, in 1850; he came that year to Sampford, and resigned the living in 1905. From 1870-94 he was Rural Dean of Sampford, and long a familiar and worthy figure in North Essex.

**MR. FREDERICK WELLS**, of Oaklands, Chelmsford, died on May 20, in his 82nd year, after a short illness. He was a prominent Nonconformist, a zealous philanthropist, and had been senior deacon of the London Road Congregational Church and superintendent of its Sunday School for nearly 50 years. Third son of William Collings Wells, he was educated at Mr. Morrell's school at Little Baddow, and at Mill Hill, and went into Messrs. Wells and Perry's brewery as soon as he left. His business capacity was great, and applied to many things outside his own affairs. He was a guardian for 50 years, and hon. treasurer

of the Infirmary and dispensary at Chelmsford nearly as long. He was a liberal supporter of many good works, but his modesty and lack of self-assertion were conspicuous. Twice married, he leaves a family of five sons and three daughters.

BERNARD HENRY PHILIP, 14th Baron Petre, died on June 16 at Thorndon Hall, Brentwood, where he had been lying seriously ill since the beginning of the month. Second son of the 12th Baron by his wife Mary Teresa, eldest daughter of Hon. Charles T. Clifford, of Irnham Hall, Lincolnshire, he was born May 31, 1858, and was therefore 50 years of age. He succeeded his brother in 1893, and married in 1899. He leaves one daughter, and is succeeded in the barony by his younger brother, Philip Benedict Joseph, born in 1864, married 1888 to Julia May, daughter of George Cavendish Taylor. His son Lionel George Carroll, born 1890, now becomes heir to the barony.

## NOTES AND QUERIES.

**Dedham Registers** (*E.R.*, xvii. p. 55).—These registers do not, as suggested here, appear in Canon Tancock's valuable series of articles on Essex Registers (*E.R.*, vols. vii. to x.). The Archdeaconry of Essex was completed by him, but not the Archdeaconry of Colchester. His account of them in the Rev. C. A. Jones' *History of Dedham*, App. I., is, therefore, a fresh and valuable addition to the articles already printed in our pages.

**Anthony James, an Essex Yeoman, ob. 1602.**—Is it possible to identify this man and the place where he lived? All the facts at present known are: that he was an Essex yeoman, living in the Devonshay (Dengie?) Hundred, who appears to have possessed considerable wealth for a person in his position. This seems to have excited the cupidity of a band of nine robbers, who seized the opportunity, when all the farm servants were absent at a fair, to break in and murder him and his wife and carry off their two children, one of whom, a boy, they afterwards killed, and cut the tongue out of the other, a girl. The story of her marvellous recovery of speech, and the consequent capture and execution of her brother's murderers (the band apparently escaped) are all set forth in a pamphlet entitled '*The Horrible Murther of a Young Boy of*

*three years of age, whose Sister had her tongue cut out: and how it pleased God to reveale the offenders by giving speech to the tongueless child. Which offenders were executed at Hartford, the 4th of August, 1606.* Printed by Ed. Alde for William Firebrand, and are to be solde at his shop in the Pope's Head Alley, over against the taverne door. 1606. 4to.'

W. B. GERISH, Bishops Stortford.

**Notes from Dr. Firth's MS.**—Some scattered notes from this MS. may be brought together as supplying additional information on matters relating to Essex which have already been discussed in this *Review*, e.g., *Breaches in the Sea-Wall*. Commissioners of the subsidy, writing from Braintree, 5 Oct. 1625, inform the Lord Keeper that the amount collected for the subsidy will, for various reasons, be smaller than usual. One reason is:—'It pleased God this last springe to send such a breach and inundation upon the richest partes of this Countie which lyeth upon the sea-coast and the ryver of Thames as the losse amounted unto some private men to the value of one thousand pounds' [*i.e.* a-piece]. On 16 February 1827-8, the Deputy-Lieutenants implore the Privy Council to show 'love and care towards our poore countrie which by the losse of nere fortie thousand pounds in the sea walls within late yeares, and the decay of rents generally is much impoverished.'

*Coast-defence*:—Reporting, from Harwich, 18 Sept. 1625, as to the defenceless state of the Essex coast, the Earl of Warwick informs the Privy Council:—'There is yet a third place which stands upon the Iland of Mersie in this countie, where was wont to bee a blockhouse, which is thought verie fitt to be newlie built.' It would appear that the blockhouse had been built in Elizabeth's reign, and suffered to go to ruin in James I.'s time. At any rate, in the same report, Warwick states that the fortifications at Harwich are 'utterly ruined' by the fault of Alderman Whitemor, who bought the manor of Harwich from James I.

*Hop-cultivation*:—The Commissioners of the subsidy, in the letter already cited, 5 Oct. 1625, say:—'The price of hopped which was the chiefest commoditie which farmers have used to make mony of att this tyme of the yeare is now soe low for want of Vent [*i.e.* sale] either at Sturbridge faire [near Cambridge, held from 16th Sept. to 11th Oct.], or London [thatt]



Hoppe-Masters are in greate distresse of monie to paie their labourers for pickinge, dryinge, and keepinge of their groundes, which is not done without a greate charge.'—A. CLARK, Gt. Leighs.

**Reputed Roman Well at Earls Colne.**—Just lately, when staying in Earls Colne, a friend showed me this relic. It is but a tank of similar character to that which supplies Rawdon House, at Hoddesdon, Herts., and used to supply the Priory at Colne; parts of the lead pipe are still extant. The sides, above the water-line, are built up of flint and tile walling of a comparatively recent date, and in the form of a curb, but the original enclosure of the water seems to have been formed of stone, probably of the same date as the Priory, a tiny piece of which still exists in a corner of the ground of the present building. The well is a mediæval survival, but apparently nothing more, and is fast becoming ruinous. It is just behind the buildings of the Tile Kiln farm. The well has no feature which can entitle it to be called Roman.—J. ALLEN TREGELLES, Hoddesdon.

**Rural Identities.**—I asked an old rustic in my parish his age. 'I'm in my seventy-eight. I'm the same age as so-and-so, only he's older than me by May Fair to Harlow Town Fair. I asked for explanation. 'Why, you know what May Fair is—Chenshford Fair, 12th of May, and Harlow Town Fair is the 28th of November.' (Please observe the local 'Chenshford.' Camden, *Britannia*, 1600 edition notes Chensford as the local pronunciation).

Can any of your authorities explain the use of 'chase' and 'chaseway' for a road or lane leading to a farm or into fields? The *Oxford English Dictionary* seems to give no help, and Wright's *Dialect Dictionary* only refers it to a Norman-French dialect word *chasse, un petit chemin*, but gives no etymology. Is it possible that it is a form of causeway, locally carzy and carsy?—EDWD. GEPP, High Easter.

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS.

*Lays and Legends of the Forest of Essex.* By EDWARD HARDINGHAM. Pp. ix., 310, crown 8vo. London (J. Haslam), 1907. Price 2s. 6d. net.

THE forewords of this book commence by describing Essex as 'perhaps the least known, but the best abused of English

counties,' but they go on to controvert and correct that mistaken idea very prettily and very justly.

These lays and legends of the once great Forest of Essex are certainly suggestive of the history of that interesting district 'all within a score of miles—I had almost said within sight—of Paul's tall dome,' quite apart from their pleasing poetical setting.

Including the prologue, there are seventeen distinct poems, bearing such titles as 'The Demon Stag; a legend of Nazing.' 'Kate of the Hollow; a legend of Loughton.' 'Hugh of Essex; a legend of Clavering.' 'St. Mark's Eve; a legend of Coopersale.' 'Ada of Enever; a legend of Monks Wood.' 'Agnes Leigh; a legend of Chingford.' To each there is a very well written little historical preface, running to five or six pages, in which the modern church restorations and forest enclosures are both commendably condemned. 'Agnes Leigh, a legend of Chingford,' is the last and longest in the book, occupying more than half the pages (pp. 138-310) in it. It is a story of the later days of Queen Mary, and is replete with many soft and stirring incidents, with descriptive passages of Essex scenery, in which familiar Essex names are skilfully introduced, as well as many pleasant songs.

A perusal of this volume should bring pleasure to many Essex folk, as well as to the thousands of Londoners who make our Essex forest their playground. It is dedicated to the Lord Mayor of London.

*The Cathedral Church and See of Essex.* With 13 illustrations and two plans. By the Rev. J. Charles Cox, LL.D., F.S.A. London, Bemrose and Sons, Ltd., 1908. Pp. xii., 80. 8vo. paper cover. Price 1s. 6d.

This little book contains not only an excellent history of the parish church of Chelmsford, now about to become the cathedral, but also a highly interesting account of the planting of Christianity in the kingdom of Essex, and of its first bishop, Cedd, his minster of St. Peter-at-the-Wall, and his spiritual rule at Ythancester and Tilbury. The story of Bishop Simon Sudbury's very active episcopate (1362-1375), when Bishop's Hall was a residence of the bishops of London, is both fresh and valuable. Dr. Cox is indeed well qualified by his general ecclesiastical knowledge for the task. Nevertheless, it would have been well if the proofs had been read by some one knowing the county, when some errors would have been avoided;

among which are the following :—*Walton* Abbey, Rumford, Battiswick, Woodhead for Woodford, Great Bardsfield, Great Beddow, Peter and Tirrell for Petre and Tyrrell, Dunmore (in the index), and Mailman. Dr. Cox quotes on p. 45 from an 'inferior history of the county by Mr. P. Muilman,' and again on p. 54, from 'The Gentleman's History of Essex,' without apparently being aware that they are the same. The Colchester martyr was William Chieveling, not Chierelynge. 'Gynge Mounteny,' is not Chignal, but Mountnessing, while Gynge ad Petram and Ginge Regine are, we believe, Ingatestone and Margaretting. The account of Chelmsford Grammar School is taken from Miss C. Fell Smith's article on schools in *Vict. Hist.*, vol. ii., but the salary of the master, Peter Wyleigh, in 1548, was £9 12 yearly, not as given on p. 39. The book is dedicated to Dr. Laver.

*Nothing but Rose Leaves Crumpled and Sear.* London. Printed at the Chiswick Press, 1907. Pp. 54.

WE have been favoured with the sight of this small privately printed collection of verses, the author of which is still of tender years, but if the promise shown in some of these little poems is ever perfected, we may expect to see from this younger member of the clever Page Wood family a worthy follower of ancestors distinguished alike in law, literature, soldiering, and philanthropy. The following little poem on a dawn shower, though the work of a child of twelve, is the real stuff of poetry, and we fancy Miss Christine M. G. Bradhurst, even when grown up, may single it out from the rest of the 'Rose Leaves' for recollection.

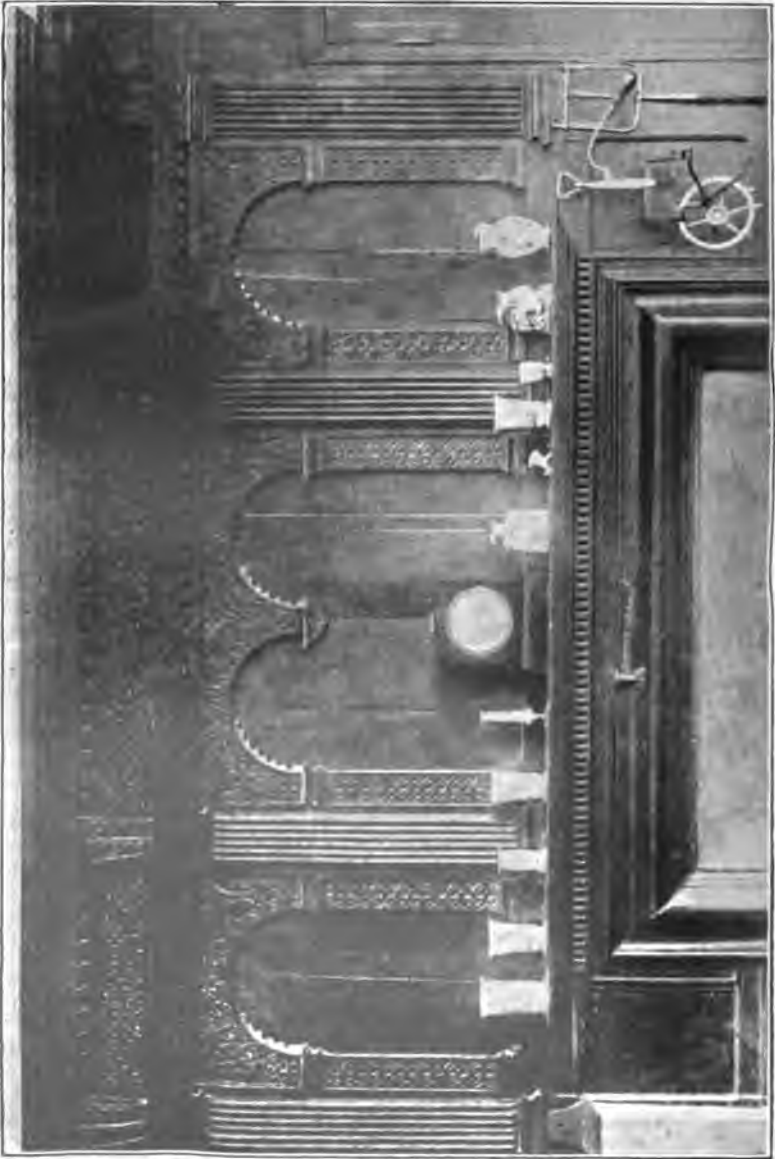
#### WHY IT RAINS.

The Sun is gone to rest,  
A ball of fiery red,  
Small cloudlets are his sheets,  
The dark sky is his bed.

The Moon begins her reign,  
With clear and steady light;  
The World it sighs and sleeps,  
'Mid stillness of the night.

The Moon's brief reign is done,  
And dawn is come again,  
The Queen of night must go,  
She weeps and that is rain.





OAK CARVED PANELLING IN AN OLD HOUSE AT CLAVERING.

THE  
ESSEX REVIEW:

A Quarterly Journal for the County.

---

---

No. 68.]

OCTOBER, 1908.

VOL. XVII.

---

---

THE FLAIL.

BY H. W. LEWER.

THE word Flail is derived from the Latin *flagellum*, 'a scourge,' an etymology which becomes clearer in the West Germanic *flagil*, and the fifteenth century spelling *flayel*. It is defined in the Oxford *New English Dictionary* as 'an instrument for threshing corn by hand, consisting of a wooden staff or handle, at the end of which a stouter and shorter pole or club, called a swingle or swipple, is so hung as to swing freely.' The staff which the thresher holds is called the handstaff, and the club with which the grain is threshed is variously known as the swingle, swipple, souple, or supple, the two parts being connected by a thong of leather, or a rope of hemp or straw, in some districts known as the 'flail-hinging.'

In Dorset, Somerset, Devon, Cornwall, and other south-western counties of England, in Glamorganshire and Pembroke-shire, and in some Irish counties (as Wexford), the Flail is known as the drashel (the 'th' of 'thresh' becoming 'd'), the middle band or connecting-tie being, in Wexford, sometimes made of eelskin and sheepskin, and called the 'bunyane.' In Yorkshire, Nottinghamshire, and other English counties, the middle band or bind is occasionally styled the 'capel' or 'caplin.'

The Flail is mentioned by Anglo-Saxon and old English writers as early as A.D. 1100, and there is a reference to it in *Piers Plowman*, the well-known poem written by William Langland about 1360. Thomas Tusser, whom Robert Southey described as 'a good, honest, homely, useful old rhymer,' and who was born about 1524 at Rivenhall, near Witham, in Essex, published in 1557 his *Hundredth Good Pointes of Husbandrie*, which

in 1573 was enlarged to *Five Hundreth Pointes of Good Husbandry united to as many of Good Huswifery*. In this work he alludes to various farming tools, amongst them the flail, strawfork, and rake. In the *Third Part of King Henry VI.* (Act II., Sc. I.), William Shakespeare makes the Earl of Warwick liken the lack-fire play of his men in the fight at Saint Albans to that of an 'idle thresher with a flail.' John Milton's Goblin (*L'Allegro*), on the other hand, was a very different fellow for

'in one night, ere glimpse of morn,  
His shadowy flail hath threshed the corn,  
That ten day-labourers could not end.'

Robert Burns, however, was under no delusion as to the nature of a hard day's work with the flail, for in 'The Vision' he sings, in lines of simple beauty, to which the autobiographical touch lends human interest, of

'The thresher's weary flingin'-tree'  
The lee-lang† day had tired me;  
And whan the sun had clos'd his e'e  
Far i' the west,  
Ben i' the spence,‡ right pensivelie  
I gaed to rest.'

William Barnes, whose graphic poems of life and landscape in Dorset were published in 1879, makes one of his characters (Thomas, in the 'Two Faerms in Woone') speak with proper indignation of the passing of the flail, and the introduction of machinery:—

"Why here wer fourteen men, some years agoo,  
A-kept a drashen half the winter drough;  
An' now, woone's drashels be'n't a bit o' good.  
They got machines to drashy wi', plague teäke 'em!  
An' he that vust vound out the way to meäke 'em  
I'd drash his busy sides vor'n if I could!  
Avore they took away our work, they ought  
To meake us up the bread our leäbour bought."

No explicit mention is made of the flail in the Bible, excepting a doubtful reference in Isaiah, ch. xxviii, verses 24-28 (Revised Version): "The fitches are not threshed with a sharp instrument, neither is a cartwheel turned upon the cummin, but the fitches are beaten out with a staff, and the cummin with a rod." The fitch is the nutmeg flower (*Nigella Sativa*), a ranunculaceous plant cultivated in the East for its black seeds, which were valued in medicine and as a condiment. The cummin (*Cuminum*

\*Flail. †Livelong. ‡Within the parlour.

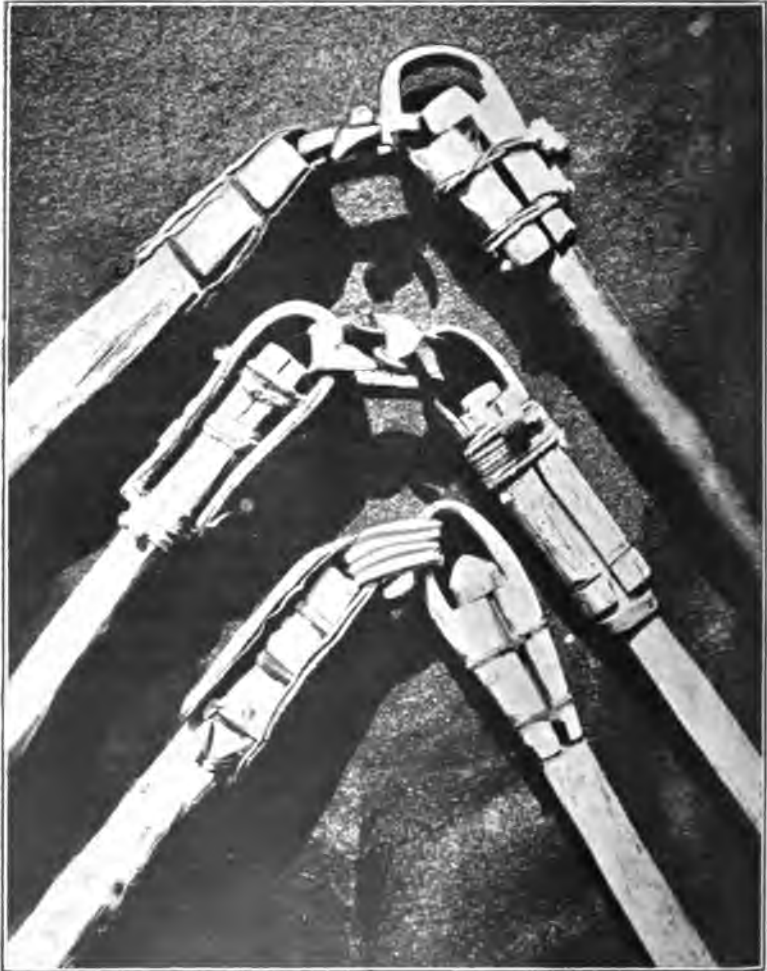
*Cuminum*) is an umbelliferous plant, which was also employed as a condiment, and in poultices, for which its carminative properties were highly esteemed. The Rev. Dr. John Kitto, commenting on the text, says that the Flail 'was confined among the ancient Hebrews to the threshing of the smaller grains, such as vetches, dill, or cummin, in which no operation upon the stalk was desired.' In those cases in which not only was the grain to be separated from the ear, but the straw was also to be treated so as to render it fit for fodder, the Jews used the threshing drag, or the wain or sledge, in addition to treading by cattle.

The Flail is still in service on the Continent, and, according to Dr. Thomas Moffatt Allison, of Newcastle-on-Tyne, who has written an interesting *brochure* on *The Flail and Its Varieties*, the Japanese employ the implement in beating out rice.

In rural England and Scotland, until the period of the repeal of the Corn Laws (1846), no sound was more familiar or common in the autumn and short days of winter than the thud of the Flail, vigorously wielded by the sturdy labourer as he threshed the corn garnered at the recent harvest. Professor Thorold Rogers (1823—1890), the greatest authority on the history of agriculture, writing in 1876, expressly stated that 'thirty years ago all corn or nearly all corn was threshed by the Flail.' In the present day it is difficult to realise that machinery for this purpose has not been longer in operation. There are well-authenticated instances of the use of the Flail in Lincolnshire in 1856, in the wolds of Yorkshire in 1870, in East Worcestershire in 1880, in Surrey in 1891, and in Herefordshire in 1892 (See *Notes and Queries*, 7th series, vols. xi. and xii.). Even now, in some parts of England, the flail does its work, and the writer's observation and correspondence with responsible persons in many quarters, offers reason to believe that it will be a long time before the small farmer will resign it in favour of other and more up-to-date methods. Not on sentimental grounds, but because it is obvious that on a moderate-sized holding, where few cereals are grown, or where they are cultivated in comparatively inconsiderable quantities, it would not pay to send the corn to be threshed elsewhere, or to hire a machine to thresh it on the farm. Inquiries show that the flail is still being made in several of our shires, including Essex, and the instrument of to-day is



practically the same as that represented in mediæval drawings, although in the Middle Ages it was perhaps somewhat longer in the handle.



FLAIL JOINTS: 1. (top) Suffolk. 2, Norfolk. 3, Essex.

In England the Flail varies as well in form and shape in different counties, as in the wood used in its manufacture. As will be seen, both from the definition already given and from the

accompanying illustrations, it consists of a wooden handle, tied at the end by a leathern or eel-skin thong, or one of cane, to another wooden bar, called a swingle, or souple, or swipple, with which the grain is beaten out (the analogy of a 'swipe' will occur to every cricketer). To allow of its free movement it is constructed on the universal joint principle, that is, a joint which permits of angular movement in every direction. It is manipulated by holding the handle or handstaff in both hands, and swinging the souple over the head in a rotary manner, and then bringing it heavily down on the grain. In some cases the whirling is accomplished by the revolving of the handstaff; in others by the rotation of the souple. Proficiency in its management demands adroitness and skill, which, as in many other things, can only be obtained by constant practice. To those readers who have never used a Flail a practical demonstration will prove the truth of this statement, and they will be fortunate if they come through the experiment without injury.

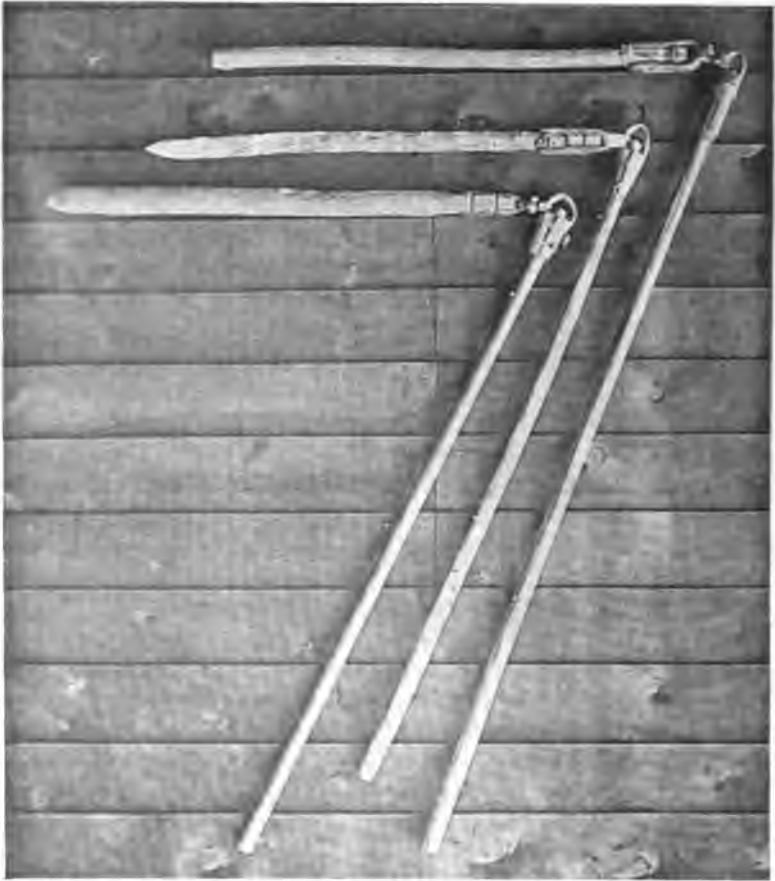
Regarding the connecting-link or joint, it varied in character in different localities. Dr. Allison states that he had been 'fortunate enough to obtain several varieties which illustrate the local differences, and exhibit the joint that permitted of both the whirling and the striking movements, and that which only allowed of the striking. The latter compelled the revolving of the handstaff in the hand. The joint consisted of two or more of the following parts :—

- (1) The termination of the handstaff and souple, and their modifications;
- (2) Caps of wood, iron, or leather, fixed by the lashing (laces), etc., to the handstaff, souple, or both;
- (3) Thongs of leather or hide, uniting the two.'

The ends of the 'caps' were bent and fixed to the same piece of wood, the loop reaching or projecting some two or three inches beyond the staff, and being fastened on by leather straps, which were often pegged to the handle to prevent slipping. The joint was made of leather or eelskin, skilfully fastened or tied by a leather lace.

The handstaff varies in length and diameter in different shires, but the average length is about five feet to five feet six inches, and an inch to an inch and a half in diameter. The

swingle or souple is about three feet long, and a little larger in diameter than the staff.\* The material used for the handle was generally ash, beech, or willow, but rarely oak. The souple was



FLAILS OF SUFFOLK (left handle), ESSEX AND NORFOLK.

made of blackthorn, holly, ash, crab, or oak, the wood being usually the hardest that could be obtained in the neighbourhood. In most cases the end of the souple was more or less pointed.

\* The smallest flail that has been brought under our notice is in the possession of Mr. Miller Christy. It was made in Essex, and the ash handstaff is barely four feet in length, with a souple rather long in proportion, measuring two and three-quarter feet. Ash is invariably utilised in Essex for the handstaff, and crab for the souple or swingle.

In a Devonshire example the revolving cap of the haft or handle is made of elm, which is attached by leather to a loop of leather on the souple. The Flails in this county are made, as a rule, by the men who use them, the handle being hazel, ash, elm, or any disused pitchfork staff, the souple being generally of holly, though sometimes of sapling oak, the connecting link being of elm. In Devonshire it is called a 'vlail,' which, of course, is only a local, not a real variant, being, in fact, similar to that which gives us 'vlannen' for 'flannel,' 'vust' for 'first,' or 'vound' for 'found.'

Most of the threshing by Flail was carried on in barns, the men ordinarily working in couples opposite each other, with the sheaves of corn between them, each man striking alternately. In the majority of cases the barn had a wooden floor, which gave a resiliency to the blow delivered. When possible the sheaves were laid on the floor with the corn facing one way; in some cases the sheaves were laid head to head. After the threshing, the corn was winnowed in a huge fan, to get rid of the chaff, dust, etc. It is stated that straw obtained by threshing with a flail remained in an unbroken condition, and formed much better material for thatching than does the straw left after threshing by machinery.\*

Before the invention of gunpowder, so familiar an implement as the Flail suggested an obvious modification for use as a weapon of war. The Galloway Flail seems to have been in vogue as a lethal weapon as early as the time of Sir William Wallace, for it is mentioned by Blind Harry the Minstrel, who immortalised the exploits of the Scottish patriot. Though Harry's poem has been discredited as history ('very cavalierly,' as Professor A. F. Murison, in his able *Life of Wallace* asserts), it is extremely unlikely that he would have made a mistake in such detail as this. The Roxburghshire Flail, though used primarily for threshing corn, also figured in Border warfare as a weapon of offence. In hand-to-hand combat it did great execution when wielded by a tall, active, and powerful man.

\*Mr. G. W. Gould, of Chigwell, states that an old Essex farmer informs him that the prices paid for threshing by Flail about 1868 were as follows:—

Wheat	...	...	...	...	3d. per quarter.
Beans	...	...	...	...	8d. " "
Barley	...	...	...	...	2s. 3d. " "
Oats	...	...	...	...	2s. 0d. " "

A heavier Flail was sometimes used by Essex labourers for threshing wheat.

The handstaff was about five feet long, and made of ash wood, the souple was three and a-half or four feet in length, and made of iron, the two being joined with a leather thong. The souple was jointed in three places, so that it could be caused to twine round the body of a man and crush his ribs, after the manner of a python or boa constrictor. One stroke would shatter a sword to pieces.

During the seventeenth century the flail suggested a type of instrument of a much more objectionable character than the battle-flail. One such weapon became known as the Protestant Flail, from the fact that it was carried (and employed) by persons who professed to go in fear of their lives during the Popish plot scare (1678-1681). This weapon was invented by Stephen College, known from his bitterness against the Roman Catholics as the 'Protestant joiner.' He is believed to have been born in London about 1635, and acquired a considerable reputation as a carpenter through his skill in woodwork. His zeal in controversy outrunning his discretion, he was twice tried for seditious words, practices, and treason, and was at last condemned to death at Oxford, where he was hanged on August 31, 1681. The Protestant Flail was a most deadly weapon in the hands of a villain. It was made of *lignum vitæ*, a wood now almost solely reserved for the harmless 'timber' of the bowling-green. Captain Alexander Radcliffe (1682) wrote an epigram about the Protestant Flail, which is worth reproducing:—

'In former days th' Invention was of Wracks,  
To dislocate men's Joints and break their Backs;  
But this Protestant Flail of a severer sort is,  
For *Lignum vitæ* here proves *Lignum mortis*.'

W. J. Bernhard-Smith (*Notes and Queries*, 1879, 5th series, vol. xii., pp. 216-7) says that the Flail was often carried by game-keepers, watchmen, and others, and that he remembered an elderly bank clerk in London 'who always had one hanging behind the counter, ready for his hand in case of need.' It was the more elaborate form of the knuckle-duster, life-preserver, or skull-cracker, as well as the loaded policeman's truncheon. That it was a formidable weapon is evident from a description in *Notes and Queries*, 1879, 5th series, vol. xi., p. 53.

'Let the reader,' says S.P. [presumably a barrister, for he writes from the Temple] 'imagine an ordinary round desk ruler, say eighteen inches long, only

of hard, white boxwood. Each extremity is ring-turned, to give a firm grip, so that either end can form a handle. Conceive this sawn across the middle, and then divided into two equal parts. These parts are then connected with two thongs of narrow leather, about three inches in length, one on each side of each piece, by two rivets, screws, or studs, to each end of the leather, making eight fastenings in all, or four on each side. The thongs extend for about an inch down each piece of wood, from the clean central division, which will give a 'play' of an inch to the loose leather. You get thus a weapon nine inches long, capable of being folded and carried concealed in a moderate-sized pocket, and, except in size, exactly similar to the agricultural implement known as a flail. Of this implement the weapon was, in short, a miniature, and when either end was loaded with lead, a vicious blow would easily fracture a man's skull, or fell him dead.'

In *Anecdotes and History of Cranbourn Chase*, by William Chefn (1818, reprinted by Lieut.-Gen. Pitt Rivers, 1888), there is a vivid account of a fight between keepers and deer-stealers in 1780, shewing the vicious use that was then made of the Flail or 'swindgel':—

'On the night of the 16th December 1780, a very severe battle was fought between the keepers and deer-stealers on Chettle Common, in Bursey-stool Walk, which was attended with very serious circumstances. A gang of these deer-stealers assembled at Pimperne, and were headed by a Serjeant of Dragoons, a native of Pimperne then quartered at Blandford, and whose name was Blandford. They came in the night in disguise, armed with deadly offensive weapons called swindgels, resembling flails to thresh corn. They attacked the keepers, who were nearly equal in number, but had no weapons but sticks and short hangers. The first blow that was struck was by the leader of the gang, which broke a knee cap of the stoutest man in the Chase, who was not only disabled from joining in the combat but has been lame ever since. Another keeper received a blow from a swindgel, which broke three ribs, and was the cause of his death some time after.'

It is, however, in its useful and pacific aspect that the Flail mainly concerns us. Long a prominent feature in rural economy, its survival into the twentieth century links up the age of steam and electricity with those remote days when pilgrims ambled to Canterbury and gossipped as they rode, while its gradual passing into disuse pathetically points a moral, and adorns the fateful tale of English agriculture. The place of the thresher, Flail in hand, in the pastoral scene possessed a charm that has made its appeal alike to J. F. Millet, the artist, and Robert Burns, the poet. So memory loves to dwell on the picture of the happy homestead where—

'An old barn gable end was seen,  
Sprinkled with nature's mossy green,  
Hard on the right, from where the flail  
Of thrasher sounded down the vale.'

## THE MARCH OF THE CAVALIERS FROM BOW TO COLCHESTER.

BY G. H. WARLOW.

THE story of the march of the Cavaliers from Bow to Colchester in 1648 does not appear to have received the attention at the hands of our local historians that one might naturally have expected, considering the abundant material existing.

East London and its suburbs have but few Civil War traditions, doubtless owing to their good fortune in having escaped being made a battle ground of the contending parties. Only on one occasion do we find the war on the point of being brought to the door of the inhabitants of East London, and that was the occasion referred to above.

The first Civil War had practically ended at Naseby in 1645. King Charles, after various changes of fortune, became a prisoner at Hampton Court. Negotiations took place between him and the Parliament, the Scots and the Army, for a settlement, but all to no purpose. 'In the midst of their hopes of an accommodation,' says Green, the historian, 'the Army leaders found, with astonishment, that they had been duped throughout, and that the King had fled.' Revolts broke out in various parts. Risings took place in Kent, Essex, Hertford, and Surrey. Old Parliamentary officers seized Pembroke Castle for the King. The fleet in the Downs revolted, sent their captains ashore, and sailed to Holland to the Prince of Wales. The Scots invaded England. Cromwell was sent to subdue South Wales and deal with the Scots. Lord Fairfax was despatched to put down the Kentish rising. At Maidstone, on the 2nd June 1648, after a hard and stubborn fight, the Royalist party was utterly defeated. The Cavaliers then abandoned Rochester, which was immediately occupied by Fairfax. A large body of the defeated Cavaliers under Goring, Earl of Norwich, fled along the London road to Greenwich, pursued by a party of horse. Fairfax, in his letter to the Speaker of the House of Commons, said 'I sent Colonel Whalley with a party of horse and dragoons after them, upon whose approach they have left Kent, and are fled over the water into Essex by Woolwich and Greenwich. Colonel

Whalley is in pursuit, and I doubt not but he will give a good account of that service.'

It was a part of the original plan of the Cavaliers to form a rendezvous on Blackheath, from whence they were to march sword in hand to the Houses of Parliament, to present their 'Kentish petition.' Their plans, however, were upset by the defeat at Maidstone, and their design of marching to Westminster absolutely frustrated. They were even refused permission to march through the city into Essex. Moreover, the expected assistance from the city was not forthcoming and, being hard pressed by Whalley's troops, they resolved to cross the river into Essex.

News having been brought to the Earl of Norwich 'that about Bow there were 2,000 men in arms and more at Chelmsford,' he decided to go over privately into Essex by himself, 'not carrying one servant with him, intending only to go to Stratford or Bow, where his intelligence assured him a Body was gotten together: to assure himself of the truth of it and return, and in case it proved not true, to steer some other design with the Army. Sir William Compton was left with the charge of the Army. Lord Goring, however, 'finding nothing stirring at Bow or Stratford, he made no stay till he came to Chelmsford.'

In the meantime the army at Greenwich, under Compton, began to be much weakened by desertions. The night coming on, and the General not returned according to expectation, 'some timorous spirits began to steal away.' Many soon began to shift for themselves, and 'procuring the ferry boat wafted over to the Isle of Dogge as they thought, for their absolute security.' Very soon after this, a panic seized the rest of the army, and every man began to shift for himself. We are told that 'the greatest part of the foot and some few of the horse at several places transported themselves over the River of Thames, no man knowing what would be the event of their rashness, nor able almost to give a reason for what they did.'

The Quarter-Master General of the Royalist Army, Mr. Matthew Carter, has left us an account of the history of this period of the great Civil War. Mr. Carter was a gentleman of position and influence in Kent, and played a conspicuous part in the stirring events of the Kentish rising. He was taken prisoner



after the siege of Colchester, and during his long confinement wrote an account of the scenes of which he had been an eye-witness, under the title *A Most True and Exact Relation of That as Honourable as Unfortunate Expedition of Kent, Essex and Colchester, by M.C., a Loyal Actor in that Engagement, 1648.* In addition to Mr. Carter's history we have the 'Civil War Pamphlets' in the British Museum.

One of the pamphlets under date of Sunday, 4th June 1648, thus describes the flight and pursuit of the Cavaliers :—

'It was this day certified that Lord Goring, seeing the van of the Parliament's horse sent in pursuit of him to march up towards him, did fly down to the town of Greenwich. He stayed not at Greenwich, but took water, and with the choicest of his men was ferry'd over into Essex, having heard that the Essex men had begun to rise into a body, and planted two drakes on Bow Bridge, where he heard they appeared to stand in a posture of defence, but interrupted none that passed that way. About one of the clock in the afternoon Colonel Whalley, who, with a considerable party of horse, was sent in pursuit of the Lord Goring, did advance after him into Essex over the river and had his rendezvous on Mile End Green, from whence he had sent many prisoners which he had taken to Guild Hall. The Lord Goring being come into Essex, the Militia of the City sent up two drakes to Aldgate, which were planted for the present safety of the City.'

The same newspaper, 'The Kingdom's Weekly Intelligencer,' on the following day, gives a description of the crossing of the river by the Cavaliers.

'Those who this day came from Greenwich do affirm that in a fair and smooth water they transmitted themselves over the Thames, the men being all in boats, and the horses in the water, who being held by the reins, did swim close by the sides of the boats, and followed the conduct of their masters. And this they say was half-an-hour before any forces of the Parliament came down to Greenwich, who about that time made their approaches, some leading two, some of them three horses which they had taken.'

The Royalists appear to have sustained some loss during the crossing of the river. Many deserted, some were taken prisoners, others were drowned. A Royalist paper, the 'Mercurius Eleucticus,' asserts that the contrary was the case. It says that 'not one man or horse of them all, being drowned or taken, except one only by mischance,' but as we learn from other sources, this is not correct. It was most unlikely that a panic stricken army, hotly pursued, could have transplanted itself wholly and without loss from Kent to Essex. Whitelock in his *Memorials* informs us, 'Goring reaches Blackheath, but finding none of the City come forth to join with them, ferry'd over in Lighters and Boats to the Essex side from

Greenwich. The seamen and watermen that had before joined with them, now set upon them, and took many prisoners and good pillage.' A soldier of the pursuing force wrote 'that a strong party of horse was sent forth under command of Colonel Whalley,' in order to pursue the 'Kentish bumkins, for that's the common term our soldiers give them,' and the Cavaliers commanded by Lord Goring, and 'this morning we fell upon them, and have taken some prisoners which are brought thither, some of the enemy fled into the Thames, and others boated over into Essex, and left their horses behind them, many men drowned for haste to get over.' The passage of the Thames is also described by 'The Parliament Kite,' presumably another Royalist paper. 'The old Lord Goring on Saturday last (June 3rd) was with about 2,000 Foot and 1,000 Horse in Greenwich Park expecting assistance from London and Surrey, but few coming in unto him, he very moderately on Sunday morning ferry'd over his Horse and Foot at Black Wall, and so in grand Equipage marched to Stratford-Lancton and possessed themselves of Bow Bridge.'

'Having thus confusedly as it were,' says Mr. Carter in his little book, 'thrown ourselves over to the other side of the Thames, . . . we had no sooner landed, but supposing ourselves to be in Essex, . . . we unexpectedly understood that we were in Middlesex under the Hamlets of the Tower.' The Cavaliers had hardly got ashore, before they were met by a Regiment of Hamleteers, or the Yellow Regiment of the Tower Hamlets Militia, which had been appointed by the House to intercept their landing. This regiment, says Mr. Carter, was 'drawn up to their arms in several guards ready to receive, and cut off our landing,' so the Cavaliers decided to enter into negotiations with them for a surrender.

Sir William Compton, who was now in charge of the Royalist army (Goring having gone on ahead), treated with the Hamleteers for the whole party, 'before he would permit any man almost to march in amongst them.' The Civil War Pamphlets say nothing whatever about any surrender, for it was of exceedingly short duration as we shall see. Certain 'conditions were drawn up,' we are told by Mr. Carter, between Sir William Compton and the Major of the Hamleteers. It was agreed 'that all our Foot should, upon laying down their

arms, depart to their own homes,' and that 'all Gentlemen and Officers with their horses and arms to march where they pleased also, without any disturbance.'

'But,' says Carter, 'those conditions were soon as almost broke as made.' Some of the gentlemen 'marching through the guards had the horses and arms both taken from them by the Major of the Regiment.' Then the Foot and a greater number of gentlemen came up, 'marching through two or three Guards, no man being permitted to pass any by-way.' 'And considering what a condition an inauspicious fate had reduced us to,' remarks Mr. Carter, 'we began to think of some other way than so lamely disband.' The officers then began to ascertain what were 'the dispositions of the private soldiers.' These expressed themselves as 'resolute to die there in the bed of Honour, than survive such an infamous misfortune.'

So the Cavaliers resolved to make 'a second dispute for conditions,' and to charge right through the Hamleteers. They had not yet delivered up their arms, so they determined to make a dash for freedom.

'And being now in the midst of them every man provided himself accordingly, the foot all lighting their matches, and the gentlemen drawing their pistols, began to alter the constitution of our steering Hamleteers, who left their vanity of jeering; and so we marched on from guard to guard, through the midst of them, as moving to the place of disbanding, where we expected an opposition, and as much resolved to force through it; but that proved the last and utmost guard just at Bow town.'

'But now they are beholding us marching in this resolute manner, and still moulding ourselves into better order were absolutely dashed from a thought of opposition; so we marched on without the least affront, till we came to Bow bridge, where we supposed was the place for our disbanding. At the other end of which bridge was a turnpike, strongly guarded with Musketeers, and having entered upon a bridge, we made a stand to parley with them, but after a very short discourse being asked whether they were friends or foes, we were answered from them, 'Friends'; whereupon we replied, 'If you are friends let your turnpike be opened,' so they opened their turnpike, and, with a very great shout, let us in. And now we were in Essex.'

Mr. Carter does not give us much information regarding old Bow Bridge itself, excepting that on the Essex side of it there was a turnpike. This old bridge was probably the same as that erected by Queen Maud, wife of Henry I., the upkeep of which was vested in the owners of the adjoining monastic lands. We learn from other sources, however, that the original Bow Bridge was only thirteen feet six inches wide, and remained so till 1741,

when it was increased to twenty-one feet. It would appear that the Essex Cavaliers had advanced up to it, if not already taken possession of the bridge. A previous pamphlet, too, has informed us that the Essex men had planted two drakes on Bow Bridge.

Not far from Bow there formerly stood, at Old Ford, a building known as 'King John's Palace,' a description of which has appeared in the *Gentleman's Magazine* for 1793 and 1800. We are told by this magazine that according to tradition 'This palace was first mutilated during the Civil Wars of Charles I.' So it would appear that the damage which was done to this building must have taken place somewhere about the period we have under review. Neither Mr. Carter's account nor the Civil War pamphlets, so far as I can find, allude to the building referred to.

The Cavaliers, as we have seen, marched clear through the Hamleteers, and having recovered themselves after their surrender, charged over Bow Bridge. They carried away into Essex with them as prisoners the Major of the regiment and another officer. These they afterwards released upon parole; they were suffered to go to London, 'but never returned again according to their engagements, by which also you may guess how much honour they had in them.' And so, says Mr. Carter, 'we marched on till we came to Stratford.'

The appearance of the Cavaliers at Bow and Stratford caused some little alarm in the City of London. No one knew what would happen next. General Skippon, the commander of the train-bands, we are told by a Royalist pamphlet, 'drew out as many as he could get of the Hamleteers and other horse and foot (which indeed were not very many, for the trained bands are resolved not one of them to stir) to oppose them.' The Royalists, however, 'came within the time the Essex men expected them,' and shortly after their opponents 'find them alive again at Bow Bridge, where they maintain the pass most gallantly.' In the 'Perfect Weekly Account,' a paper on the other side, it is recorded that 'On Sunday, the 4th June, two drakes were brought up to Aldgate, and there planted, and four at Bishopsgate, the trained bands being in a rendezvous for the defence of Parliament and City.'

On the arrival of the Royalist troops at Stratford, they again met with the General, the Earl of Norwich, who was much

surprised to see them. He was 'again returning back to us expecting to have found us in the same posture he left us in the park at Greenwich.' Norwich immediately gave command 'for the drawing them up into order, and by planting on the green, to procure such refreshment as the place would afford for the present, ere we marched any further.' No doubt the Cavalier forces were drawn up on the spot now occupied by Stratford Church.

While these events were taking place, Colonel Whalley, who had been sent by Fairfax with a considerable party of horse in pursuit of Goring's troops, had also crossed the river and assembled his forces on Mile End Green. To quote the 'Perfect Weekly Account,' 'about this time Colonel Whalley, with a good party of His Excellencies horse, came back out of Kent over into the Essex side of the river Thames, and had his rendezvous on "Miling Green," which is between Bow and London; he sent many prisoners which they had taken to Guild Hall, and the Lord-General is expected to return suddenly.'

Whalley at once set out to follow the Cavaliers. It was now Sunday, the 4th June 1648. A pamphlet published the following day said:

'Colonel Whalley the last night had like to have been engaged with them not far from Bow, having with them a considerable body of horse, beside three troops sent from Lieut.-General Cromwell, and a troop belonging to the city under the command of Captain Cook. But finding the Foot had lined the hedges, and dressed an ambush for him, he did forbear, and was content to return with two or three prisoners taken, and as many slain.'

A further account of this skirmish is given in a pamphlet entitled 'News from Bowe.'

'On Sunday night last, being the fourth of this instant, there was a small skirmish between some of the Lord Goring's forces, which were joined with the Essex men at Bow, and some of the Lord-General's horse which were come back to Mile End, and are commanded by Colonel Whaley. There were about three men killed on both sides, those of the Essex party were forced to retreat again to Bow Bridge, and further action ceased for the present; there are more horses mounting in the City of London, to assist those on that side of the river of Bow, and the Lord-General is coming back, and will be on the other side this night or to-morrow. Summons are given to the contrary party for a fuller appearance of the Essex men, who are much disheartened at the news they hear of success of the Kentishmen.'

A Royalist pamphlet, alluding to this affair, remarked that the Cavalier party

'do hourly firet up the Saints on horseback, and those other of Foot drawn out by Skippon to the very end of White Chappell; having taken and killed divers

of them, which on Monday at night gave such an alarm to the city, that the trained bands were all warned upon pain of death to be in arms, but there was but a slender appearance, and those, too, of boys that had more need to eat than fight. So that if any attempt had been made for entry into the city they should have met but with slender resistance, and so may every day less and less.'

Another paper briefly alludes to the skirmish. 'The Lord Goring, with those at Stratford and Boe, had a dispute with some of ours, where we killed a major and three more, and took six prisoners, with one man slain on our part, and upon assurance of indemnity, the Essex men will be quiet.'

More details of this advance and retreat of Whalley's troops are given by Mr. Carter, who informs us that the Royalist party had no sooner marched over Bow bridge, and hardly drawn up on Stratford Green, when they received 'a very strong alarm by a party of Colonel Whalie's horse who, as it was conceived, came thither purposely upon the intelligence that we were to disband, to make a prey of us when we were naked.' Whalley's Ironsides, we are told,

'marched on a full career (having laid an ambuscade of Dragoons to secure their retreat), as if they would have destroyed us in a minute.'

'But now we were awakened by this alarm, and roused from that drowsy spirit that possessed every man almost, if he but sat down or still on horseback; and drawing out a party of foot to strengthen the guard, rallied a party of horse to the number of thirty, and marching forth the turnpike, gave them such a home charge, that so startled them, as it put them to such a perfect rout in an instant, and killed and wounded many of them; which successful action gave life to our defatigated spirits, and encouraged our party so that they followed the pursuit as far as Mile End Green, but by that means fell into their ambuscade, who fired upon them from the hedges, so they were forced to make as much speed in retreating, though none pursued.'

'In which service,' writes Mr. Carter, 'only one gentleman, a Grecian, being shot by the Dragoons, was left behind about the Green, and in the charge Capt. John Lynne cut over the chin and over the breast, which was all the hurt sustained in it. But although our pursuit continued no further, yet the enemy kept on their flight in that disorder, nobody following them, till they came to White Chappel, which, as I was informed, gave an alarm to the whole city as far as Temple Barre.'

'But now the Hamleteers began again to oppose us, but were soon forced to take sanctuary in Bow Church, where we surrounded them with a party of horse and foot, and put them to treat with us for a quiet returning home to their own houses, engaging themselves never to oppose us again. Thus there was a convertible change of various fortunes in two opposite Parties in less than two hours space.'

These successes were alluded to by 'The Parliament Kite,' which informs us that the Cavaliers 'surprised two companies of the Hamletts, all but those that flung down their arms and

run for it, one of which was said to be that cowardly Gale, alias Ditch (as sordid a villain as needs to be hanged). From Bow on Sunday in the afternoon a party of about 13 horse scouted out as far as Mile End, and gallantly charged some four troops of Fairfax his horse, who like valiant rebels began to run for it, and bid the devil take the hindmost.'

After this the Cavaliers again retired within the turnpike, and strong guards were appointed to command 'all passes and fords about the river, and on all highways and avenues, for hindering the enemy from making incursions upon us ; who were again calling and drawing up a strong guard at Mile End Green, both of horse and dragoons. But after this our party, resting a little, began to take heart again.'

Lord Goring now resolved to bring together the various bodies of the Essex Royalists who were up in arms about Chelmsford, and although, as Carter relates, he had not received almost any rest or sleep for four days and three nights, and notwithstanding his great age Norwich posted away to the place mentioned, 'giving order for the quartering that shattered army in Stratford till further orders from him.'

Mr. Carter at this point relates a personal incident :

'But when Quartermaster-General Carter had sent for the constable and given him orders accordingly,' that local official of Stratford, 'makes no long stay ere he returned again, accompanied by three or four burly gentlemen (as I conceive Justices of the Peace of that part of the country), who made it their business to question the Quartermaster-General of his authority of quartering an Army in that country, intimating that they were all quiet before and at peace among themselves and with the Parliament, and that the Parliament had granted them what they desired, and had sent them an act of indemnity. But we bringing an army into their country should draw down the Parliament's army upon them, and make it a seat of war, and they could not any way condescend that we should fix a quarter there, it being no way for their safety, but like to prove the readiest way to their destruction. Cheerful expressions to men that had run through so many hazards and confused difficulties.'

Mr. Carter replied, 'That for the power he quartered that army was by commission from the General, and that he quartered them in that place by immediate command also from him,' to whom he referred them. Sir William Compton, hearing the dispute, also referred to the General, and declined to discuss the business. So the Cavaliers resolved to quarter at Stratford till they received further orders.

'Here we quartered till Wednesday in the afternoon, it being

Sunday morning when we came thither, still keeping the enemy in some play, who lay with their guards within half-a-mile of us, and their scouts still pekieling with us at Bow Townes end.' It is remarkable that no record of this visit of the Cavaliers to Stratford is to be found in any history of the place. Fry's *History of East and West Ham* does not mention the event, nor does any local historical sketch that I have met with. Among the Civil War Pamphlets is a letter written from 'Bow in Essex, 7th June 1648,' 'concerning the proceeding upon publication of the indemnity':—

'The Commons from Parliament were here and published the indemnity to the inhabitants, and Sir William Hicks and divers others of the gentlemen submitted. And the Lord Goring retreats back from here. But Sir Chas. Lucas, that eminent Cavalier, is come into them, and keeps up the soldiers, making great promises to them. And by his insinuations hath prevailed with the Cavalier party and the soldiers. And they seized on Sir William Hicks and several other gentlemen of the county, and plundered some, which hath much discontented the inhabitants. But divers of those whom they have taken, they permit to pass to London upon their parole, others they have set guards upon. It is said that another party are rising to join with them about Colchester. The Cavaliers themselves bragge that many will come out of Norfolk and Suffolk to assist them. And the officers tell that the king is in the ships upon the coasts of Kent, and that they are possessed of Dover Castle, and divers other castles, and so by lyes and tricks they seduce the people exceedingly. The Commons are (not without great danger) returned back to the Parliament who can give the Houses but an ill-favoured, distracted report of the Cavaliers. Colonel Whaley is ready upon instructions to march to reduce them if the Houses think fit. If the Cavaliers were but gone from amongst us, the inhabitants would be plyable enough to be (now) orderly, and willingly embrace the indemnity, especially seeing the famous city of London so gallantly repulsing their treachery.'

Sir William Hicks, mentioned in this letter, was the owner of Ruckholt House, Leyton. Morant, referring to him, states that 'for his loyalty to King Charles 1st in the Great Rebellion he underwent much trouble and danger.' This letter may, perhaps, explain in some measure Pepys' description of Sir William Hicks's house at Ruckholt, as being 'a good seat . . . but so let run to ruin, both house and everything in it and about it, so ill furnished and miserably looked after, I never did see in all my life.'

While the Cavaliers lay quartered at Stratford the Earl of Norwich continued at Chelmsford engaging the gentlemen of the county to his cause. A party under Sir Charles Lucas joined him. On the other hand, Sir Thomas Honeywood raised horse and foot to oppose the Cavaliers. Norwich now sent orders to



Sir William Compton to march away towards Chelmsford ; ' so we marched away,' writes Mr. Carter, ' from Stratford with our whole party, which by this time was well recruited by many of our men that came up, and divers prentices from London, who came in daily and listed themselves.'

On the Cavaliers marching away from Bow and Stratford, these places were immediately occupied by Whalley's forces, which had been increased and strengthened. Their arrival at Stratford is recorded in the ' State Papers ' under date of the 7 June 1648. ' The rebels that were at Bow have been driven thence by Colonel Whalley, who is now at Stratford Langthorn with orders to pursue them.'

In the meanwhile the Royalists were marching along the Romford Road. Passing through Ilford and Chadwell Heath, they reached Romford about Wednesday night, where they once more met the General. The march was not an uninterrupted one, for, says Carter, ' the enemy marching after us so obstructed our march by alaruming us in the rear, that the whole body could not get up till the next morning, though the enemy durst not adventure in all the march to fall on upon the rear guard.'

There is an account of the arrival of Goring's troops at Romford in Terry's *Memories of Old Romford*. On Wednesday, 7 June 1648, the inhabitants of the town were thrown into consternation by the sudden arrival of a body of horse and foot, who took possession of the place. They had feathers in their turned-up caps or hats, their hair was long, and their apparel was loose and not in the best order, nor their manners or language very circumspect. They were Royalist troops, the remains of the unsuccessful army of the Earl of Norwich, who was, according to Clarendon, more fitted for the convivial table than the stern work of the battlefield. The troops had come from Kent, crossing the Thames the very best way they could, and swimming their horses in order to join the Royalists at Chelmsford. These cavalry and infantry soldiers had been chased from Bow by the troopers of the stern Colonel Whalley, who had only given up the pursuit to wait for General Fairfax. The Royalist soldiers spent in Romford that sleepless night, and it was on this occasion that Marks was attacked by the Royalists, when Carew Hervey Mildmay, who was forewarned of their arrival, only saved himself by escaping from a window of

one of the towers, and crossing the moat, plunged into the forest. It would have been a feather in their caps, if the Royalists had secured the owner of Marks. He was a colonel in the Parliamentary army, and was about joining his regiment which he had raised to fight on the side of the Parliament at Colchester. The next day these troopers joined at Brentwood another body of Royalists under the gallant but ill-fated Sir Charles Lucas, who, with Sir George Lisle, was soon to pay the penalty of his loyalty and bravery in the old Castle yard of Colchester. Scarcely had the Royalist troops left Romford, than in clattered the pursuing forces of the Parliamentary party under General Fairfax, presenting a very different spectacle from those who had come and gone. These were distinguished by their high crowned hats, leathern bands armed with pistols, their long rapiers under a loose cloak, and large leather boots. Their demeanour, unlike that of the Royalists, was staid and brusque, their faces presenting an aspect of sour solemnity, and they sang psalms as they went. These soldiers left traces which are still visible of their presence in Romford. According to popular belief, it was during their brief stay in the town that many of the monumental tokens of loving affection to the dead were despoiled by sanctimonious sacrilege.

Reference is made to the ancient mansion of 'Marks' in the book on *Secret Hiding Places*, by Allan Fea, which informs us that 'The old house, Marks, near Romford, pulled down in 1808, after many years of neglect and decay, proved to have been riddled with hollow walls.'

To return to Mr. Carter's narrative. 'After the Royalist troops had spent the night at Romford, the next day, which was the 8th June, 1648, we marched on towards Burntwood, whither Sir Chas. Lucas was advanced with a party both of horse and foot to join with us. And having intelligence how the enemy followed us with alarums in our rear, commanded forth all the horse that were then in the town to assist us; so we marched up and quartered that night at Brentwood.'

At this place a number of other gentlemen joined the Royalist party. A body of about fifty, who had made a rendezvous at Hyde Park Corner, by marching all night reached Epping. Here, however, there was a party of the enemy to oppose them, and a skirmish took place. 'They (the Cavaliers) marched up, and

being well horsed, charged through them, and the next day came up to us, having lost only one man, and one horse, but the horse was recovered by a countryman, and the gentleman came on afterwards, a party being sent to fetch him.'

The Cavaliers arrived at Chelmsford on the 9th June, their numbers still increasing. A party of Hertfordshire men, under Lord Capel, now joined them. The united forces, numbering some 4,000 men, marched on to Colchester, and after a short struggle with the inhabitants forced their way into the town on the afternoon of June 12th, 1648.

While these events had been happening in Essex, Lord Fairfax, after his victory at Maidstone and occupation of Rochester, marched the main body of his army to Gravesend. Colonel Whalley, as before mentioned, was sent after Goring, and Colonels Rich and Hewson detached to relieve Dover Castle, and recapture the Castles of Sandown, Deal and Walmer. At Gravesend, Fairfax's army crossed over the river to Tilbury, and from thence marched to Billericay, where they quartered the night. On the 11th June Fairfax reached Brentwood. Leaving his army to continue its march he fetched Sir Thomas Honeywood with 2,000 volunteers from Coggeshall, and by the 13th June, less than a day after the Royalists had seized Colchester, the whole of his forces had arrived before its walls. It would appear that Fairfax did not follow the Royalists into Romford, as related by Romford's historian, as he reached the Colchester road *via* Brentwood. No doubt the troops of Colonel Whalley are intended. An attack on Colchester by Fairfax having failed, the place was besieged. The well-known siege of Colchester lasted about twelve weeks, during which time the inhabitants suffered great privations.

---

The frontispiece of this number represents the carved mantel in an oak panelled room of a house recently sold in the village street of Clavering, near Stanstead Mountfitchet. The panelling in a second room and the oak staircase, are of the time of Queen Anne; another apartment contains richly carved lintels and window frames, with hanging bunches of fruit carved in high relief in the style of Grinling Gibbons.

## A COUNTRY DOCTOR IN 1644.

BY MISS CHARLOTTE FELL SMITH.

THE day-book of a country practitioner kept during the Civil War need not necessarily reflect anything of the stir and turmoil of the times. The contests and fightings of these years when King Charles was vainly clinging to his dwindling authority, when the great voice of the people was gaining force and volume, are not to be guessed at from the yellow pages of the doctor's manuscript. The medical man concerns himself only with his medicaments, his pills and his powders, and the wonderful remedies and cures that his more famous brethren in town are able to effect, the rumours of which penetrate even to Dunmow in Essex.

A calf-bound volume\* in the British Museum affords these reflections, together with many others, for its contents are curious, and I am not aware that they have ever been written about or described.† The entries are various; recipes for cures give place for some twenty-seven pages to the record of daily visits to patients within a very large circuit around Dunmow, and herein is much of local interest to us.

The doctor lived at Great Dunmow, and his name, it is presumed, was Swallow (more appropriate, perhaps, for his patients). 'Gulielmus Swallow' is written upon the inside of the cover of the book. Underneath it he appends the appropriate motto for a doctor: 'Ars longa, vita brevis.' His practice extended for many miles around, and the notes of patients' names are full of considerable interest. Lady Jenoure, a Bramston from Skreens, and second wife of Sir Andrew Jenoure, of Great Dunmow, sometimes employed our doctor, but she was also under the care of Dr. Atkinson. There is a prescription for pills for Mrs. Elizabeth Wale; others for 'filia Mr. Woodrooffe,' the Leez chaplain; 'Johannes Creed of Felstead'; Richard Marshall of Linsell; John Milbank of Aythorp Roding; Nicholas Humfrey and Edward Chinnery of Stebbing, where the doctor had many patients, including one 'Materfamilias Levitt,' a true Stebbing name. 'Domina

\*Sloane Collection of MSS., No. 1529.

†My attention was first drawn by Mr. Hastings Worrin to a paragraph in the *Chemist and Druggist* for June 15, 1907, containing reference to the MS., from which an old recipe for laudanum was quoted.

Wiseman, of Great Dunmow,' is another patient ; in one place she is ' Clarissima Domina Wiseman ' ; she was evidently a profitable ' case ' to our doctor, and was probably a widowed dowager of the old family of Wiseman, of Great Canfield Park, a few miles away.

There are some prescriptions ' Pro uxore mea ' ; they seem, however, simple enough, and we will not suspect the doctor of trying experiments at home. The last prescription in the book, written on the cover, is for ' my daughter Frances.' Another relation treated is ' my cozen Pilcher,' and there is one for ' my littel boy ' : was he an only son ? The practice extended over a wide district, as we have already seen. Patients are named at Hatfield (Broad Oak), Good Easter, Great Bardfield (mater-familias Brett), Thaxted, Wimbish, Tilty, Hallingbury, Great Waltham—the patients there are named Archer and Barnard—Great Canfield (Dennis Woods), Beauchamp Roding, Debden, and Broxted. Lady Maynard, of ' Easten Parva Att ye Lodge,' was one who sought the doctor's ministrations, and there are special notes of another patient at Easton Lodge called ' Parnelle Patteridge ' (? Partridge), who suffered from paroxysms of epilepsy. Many visits were paid to this patient in October 1645, viz., on 15th, 16th, 17th, 18th, then again on 23rd (by this time it is ' spuria epilepsia'), 24th, Nov. 15th, and so on. These bedside visits occupy about 27 pages of the book, the rest is closely filled with recipes for the cure or alleviation of every ill that mortal flesh in the years 1644 and 1645 was heir to. No modern valetudinarian will learn with surprise that the diseases diagnosed were but few. The changes are rung merrily on the old-fashioned stock complaints :—Consumption, the flux, fistula, Hystericke, dysenterie, a green wound, fitts, Goute, Ricketts.

The recipes seem to be considered possessed of additional efficacy if they have received the sign manual of royal or noble usage. Thus, ' The Kinge of ffrance his Balsame ' will be a never failing remedy, and my Lady Bannister's faith in ' 4 glysters (blisters), applied by Sir Theodore Mayern's appointment, in the space of a day and night,' is truly pathetic. ' This famous Dr.'s apothecarie telled me that he bled the Earl of Lesters daughter after the small pox were come out, when she had above 40 comed out uppon her face and elsewhere, and he did it, and she did well.' Other distinguished patients were Sir Andrew

Jenoure (a prescription given 'wrought with him very well'), and Mr. James Milburne. One page is devoted almost exclusively to 'Mr. Wales pills that he useth to take in the spring,' written very large that the worthy Doctor may easily find it when necessary.

The notes on cases with which the book ends must have been continued long after the entries of daily visits ceased, for there is an account of 'fitts that Mr. Sowell, bailiffe at my Lord of Warwicks,' had in July 1653.' These attacks were apparently cured by applying pigeons to his feet, plasters to the insides of his arms, and 'glysters' when he was a little better. This remedy was a favourite one, as we find in other instances.

'A younge man of my acquaintance was sicke in London of a feaver and did talke idely and did not rest. 2 doctors, upon consultation, applied 2 broad blistering plasters to his armes between the shoulder and ye Elbow, quite round his Arme, and when they were taken off, melilote plasters were applied. And as many pigeons, at 1s. a pigeon, were applied to his feete, renewing them once in 6 hours, as cost him 40s. This man did well.'

No modern dentist will forbear a smile at the doctor's 'infallible remedy for the toothache,' viz.: 4 peppercorns, rosemarie and oyster shells powdered, mixed with honey and vingar, and applied in a fine ragge.'

To touch for a few lines on some of the other remedies applied; this is after all no new subject, and we are familiar with those weird nostrums to be found in all old recipe books. William Swallow, the Dunmow physician, if he it was who penned this volume, seems to have wrought marvellous cures with very simple means. Oyle of aniseed, balsam, aloes, rhubarb, these are still the stock in trade of every genuine practitioner as well as every quack and bottle washer in the profession of medicine, but 'Snayle Milk,' or to put it more elegantly 'Lac Linacium,' was a choice drug not to be found in the Pharmacopeia. Who could demur to the following cure? 'A gentlewoman that could not digest her meate, and could not drinke wine nor strong beere, was wisht to take a littel Cinamon water in a draught of small beere after her meate or meals, and it did her much good.'

'A gentleman telled me that to swallow once or twice in a day 5 or 6 olive stones is an excellent thinge for ye stone, and

that it cured a friend of his. My thinks if they were beate to powder would be better.'

'I was told that the intrales of a Hare, vide : the heart, yeliver and ye Lunges, dried and beaten to powder, did cure one of convulsion fitts that had laboured a longe time with them, and took divers medecines, but all in vaine.'

Occasionally among these wonders of hearsay we light on a passage of ethics and philosophy that emanates from the *Religio Medici* or the *Pseudodoxia Epidemica* of that great master of minds and eminent physician, Sir Thomas Browne. But the country practitioner has not often time to soar to these heights, and is more interested in boiling 'the blacke tops of crabbs clawes' with white amber and 'the bone that is found in the hearte of a ffarte' (hawk).

Among the professional friends of whom the doctor writes, is Dr. Wright, who successfully treated Sir William Luckin, for fever and 'phlegmon' in his arme, with marsh mallow roots boiled in milk, bran meale, oyle of roses, and wood sorrell. Dr. Laurence Wright, the above-named, was born at Hornchurch, married an Essex wife, Mary Duke, a doctor's daughter, of Colchester. He obtained his medical education at Leyden and Padua, and was head of the College of Physicians for many years before his death in 1657. There is a monument to him and his wife in South Weald Church. He was physician to Oliver Cromwell and the Charter House. Lady Luckin made a wonderful cure of Goodwife ffen, of her own parish of Little Waltham, who had been poisoned by a spider, by applying a plaister of mithridate. Dr. Burnett is another authority. Dr. Francis Glisson, the regius professor of medicine at Cambridge, who passed through the Siege at Colchester, and was sent out thence to make terms, is quoted, and one example ends with :—'thus died Dr. Grinder's wife of Braintree.' Dr. Buttler, and 'Dr. Mathias his Palsie Water' also occur.

Dr. Wedderburne's and Dr. Buckenham's treatments of various persons are cited, also Dr. Ede's. Sir Maurice Williams, 'one of ye College of Physicians'; Sir Theodore Mayerne, son of a French Protestant pastor, and also Fellow of the College, and Queen's Physician, are quoted as considerable authorities.

Thus our Dunmow Doctor in 1645, was obviously in touch

with many of his professional brethren in London, and some who rose to eminence in Medicine.

Dunmow, until the advent of the railway fifty years ago, was as little unchanged as any town in Essex, and even a mid-Victorian practitioner may have had to cover more than twenty miles from end to end of his practice. So we can picture to ourselves easily the worthy Dr. Swallow's daily round; what we are less likely properly to appreciate is the industry with which, in those days of scanty learning and less penmanship, he kept his Diary daily written up.

## ESSEX WOOLLEN MANUFACTURES,

1629.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

A LARGE portion of Dr. Firth's MS. 'Lieutenancy Book for Essex' is devoted to the distress occasioned by stagnation in the wool trade of the county, which became acutely felt in the spring of 1629. Up till then, the Essex Justices testify, the bayes-makers of Bocking and Braintree alone had spent £500 a week in wages to their weavers, and £1,000 a week in purchase of wool. There was prepared at this crisis, *i.e.* in April 1629, a detailed report on the woollen trade in Hinckford hundred, the centre of Essex wool manufacture, undoubtedly for transmission to the Privy Council. This report is here printed. A few clerical errors are corrected in brackets. *A breife declaration concerning the state of the manufacture of wools in the Countie of Essex.*

There are within this countie aboute 12 or 14 townes wherein is exercised the manufactures upon wolls, in all which there are not fewer that receive the [ir] livelyhoode and dependance thereon, by that meanes, then 50 thowsand persons. The principall of the clothinge is Colchester, Cogshall, Witham, Bockinge, Braintree, Dedham, of which townes, upon examination, wee finde the condition at this tyme to bee as followeth:—

[1] *Colchester.* In, and by, this towne of Colchester there are above Twentie thowsand persons mainteyned, and have dependance, by the Manufactures of Wools into Bayes and Sayes.



For the trade of Bayes, itt hath much declyned since the tyme they were prohibited in Spaine, which was aboute two yeares before the breach of the peace.\* At which tyme th[ey] made in that towne 400 peeces of Bayes in a weeke, and as many Sayes, which were then sold for *vili.* per peece. But, since that tyme, they have not made above 100 peeces a weeke, one weeke with another; and the price fallen to little above *iiii*l*i.* And, for this 5 or 6 weekes last past, they have not made above 50 bayes a weeke, of which very few are sold, unlesse by some very poore men, who, of necessitie, have beene enforced to pawne or sell with very greate losse. Soe as there remaines, of that poor quantitie, above 6,000 pounds worth yet unsold.

But the chiefe Manufacture of that towne beinge Sayes, whereof they make aboute 400 peeces a weeke, the rates and prices whereof are divers (from 50*s.* peece to *viii*l*i.* peece), these Sayes, within this 5 or 6 weeks, were bought of [= off] as fast as they could make them; but since that tyme the Marchant buyeth none att all, soe as their remaines upon their hands above 6,000*l.* worth in money unsold. They brought up, this weeke, and the last, above *viii*c.** [= 800], and their warehouses now in towne are now soe full as they are scarce capable of any more.

Their chiefest Vent was wont to bee aboute the springe, unto the Marchant tradinge into France, Lygorne [= Leghorn] and other places. Their course in sale hath not beene to tye themselves to any certaine persons, but to sell indifferently to such Marchants as would give the best price. Their stocks and credits beinge now spent, they are readie generally to give over trade, as many alreadie have done.

[2]. *Coggeshall.* The persons employed in, and by [= beside], this towne by the Manufacture of Bayes are att least 5,000. The proportion which they usually made, for some yeares last past, hath beene a hundred peeces a weeke. But, for this last yeare, they have not made above 80 peeces a weeke. They have remaininge upon their hands above 1,500 peeces, of which they cannot make sale. As this beinge a very poore towne and unruly, [it is] certaine the multitudes of the poorer sort must starve, or use unlawfull meanes to support themselves, if present reliefe bee not afforded.

\*War with Spain, March 1624 to 1630.

[3] *Witham*. In, and by, this towne are above 2 thousand mainteyned aboute Manufactures of Bayes. The weekly proportion which they were wont to make was some 40 or 50 a weeke. But, within this 6 weeks, they have not beene able to make above 10 peeces a weeke. Duringe which tyme they have had noe sale att all, nor can gett the Marchants soe much as to looke upon them, or take them in pawne. Soe, as they professe, they bee afraide to goe home, beinge not able to pay their workmen or to sett them any more att worke.

[4] *Braintree*. In, and by, this towne by the Manufacture of Bayes is mainteyned, and have dependance, betweene 3,000 or 4,000 persons heretofore. The proportion which they were wont to make was aboute 100 peeces a weeke. But, within this 5 or 6 weeks last past, there have not beene made above 40 peeces a weeke, of which few or none can bee sold. Soe as there remains upon their hands 1,500 peeces unsold (or above), whereof above 600 peeces bee in this towne. The rest they doe not bringe up, because they have noe sale for them in towne. The towne havinge many poore, and those of the better sort are not able longe to maynteyne them, it is doubted many of them will forsake their dwellings suddainely and give over their trade.

[5] *Bocking*. In, and by, this towne by the Manufacture of Bayes are sett on worke 7,000 persons. Within this seaven yeares they were wont to make fower hundred peeces a weeke. Since, they fell, by little and little, to Three hundred; and lately they have not beene able to make above One hundred a weeke; and within this five or six weeks, not above fortie a weeke, for, havinge had little or noe sale, a greate number have beene undone and forced to give over their trade quite. Their remaine upon their hands, unsold, above two thowsand peeces, whereof seaven hundred are in this towne; and, their warehouses beeinge full, they forbear to bringe up any more. That towne abound [s] with poore, whereof many are very unrulie; and, havinge noe employment, will make the place verie hazardous for men of better Ranke to live amongst them.

[6.] *Dedham (and Langham)*. This towne subsists by makinge of the clothes called *sulloled* clothes,\* by which they sett a worke above 3,000 people. They havinge now upon their

\* Word written 'sulloled' but hesitatingly. The copyist clearly was not sure of the word in the original and followed the pen-strokes. (? 'Suffolk').

hands above 3,000 clothes, worth att the least 10*li*. a cloth, which amounts to the somme of 30,000*li*. or above. They have not sold above 100 clothes this 18 monethes, for that their usuall sale, and chiefe tyme of sale, is aboute the springe of the yeare, att what tyme they were wont to have their cloth wholie taken of by the Turky and East-Country Marchants. Who now refusinge to buy any, these, [with] many other adioyninge townes in Suffolke who subsist by this kind of clothinge, to the number of above 100,000 persons, are like to bee utterly undone and ruinated, if some speedie course bee not taken therein.

[7.] The state of the townes in Essex besides, which are subsisted by these Manufactures, is as the former, save that only their numbers are farre lesse; but their povertie is exceedinge greate. And lamentable is the beinge of all this Multitude of people which live by these Manufactures; few or none that can subsist unlesse they bee paied their wages once a weeke; and many of them that cannot live, unlesse they bee paied every night; many hundreds of them havinge noe bedds to lye in, nor foode, but from hand to mouth to mainteyne them selves, their wives, and children.

---

The phrase 'to bring up' recalls an obsolete condition of cloth-making; and is, therefore, probably unintelligible to most readers of to-day. There were no factories, or joint workshops. Each weaver, at his own home, had a room in which he owned, and worked at, a hand-loom. He received from his employer the amount of wool equal to the piece he was expected to produce; and, in ordinary course, brought back the finished web to his employer's warehouse, thereupon receiving payment for his work. At this crisis, however, the want of sale so encumbered the warehouses, that the employer preferred that the journeymen-weavers should keep back their finished work, instead of bringing it into the warehouse. I remember very distinctly, in the train on my way from home to St. Andrews University and on the return journey, about 1870, passing (outside Ladybank Station in Fifeshire) a row of one-storey thatched cottages, in the one end of each of which a handloom-weaver was diligently sending his shuttle to and fro. This was about the last of the industry. The weaving there was linen, not wool.

## THE ALMS BOX AT ALL SAINTS CHURCH, EPPING.

BY CHARLES B. SWORDER.

**T**HIS oak box, of which an illustration from a photograph is shown, is nine inches long, with a handle, an extension, as it were, of the bottom of the box,  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inches more. It is 6 inches wide and  $2\frac{1}{2}$  inches deep. The hinges, and the chain which the collector holds when passing it, thus keeping the lid open, are



EPPING ALMS BOX, 1626.

*Photo, by Mr. E. Challoner Courtney.*

all modern, having been restored. The slit near the hinges is the opening for the coins contributed by the congregation, who, on the lid, are bidden to 'Remember the Poore.' The box is painted green and the lettering is gilt. One side of it is plain, but it has evidently borne an inscription, as the front lettering begins 'do Epping,' and on the side shown: 'An<sup>o</sup> D<sup>o</sup>mi 1626.' On the under side,

RESTORED IN 1826.

HENRY L. NEAVE, M.A., VICAR.

THOMAS HART, }  
DANIEL GINGELL, } CHURCHWARDENS.

A former vicar wished to put the box away as useless, but the

churchwarden, of nearly fifty years of office, declined to use any 'new-fangled' bags, and thus the old box has been saved from destruction and continues to gather alms for the poor of the parish of Epping.

It is interesting to note that the vicar of the date on the box was the Revd. Jeremy (Jeremiah) Dyke, son of the Revd. William Dyke, of Coggeshall, Essex, who held office 1609-1639. He is said to have refused to place the Communion Table to the east end of the church (altar-wise) in accordance with the orders of Bishop Laud in 1616. This table and the altar rails are still in the church, although they are not in their original position. The Revd. C. Wright, in *Nonconformity in Epping*, claims that the said J. Dyke was the founder of nonconformity in the parish, and says that he was buried in the chapel ground, but this was not so, as the parish register entry of April 9, 1639, shows that he was buried at the parish church as vicar of Epping.

At this date, 1639, the Church benefited by the will of Lady Katharine Wentworth,\* in which she says :—' I do give to buy twenty pounds a year land of inheritance ffour hundred pounds, [of] which I would have eighteen pounds given every year to the poor of the parish on the day of my death, and fforty shillings to a preacher for a sermon before the money be distributed, that the first care may be had of their soules. And this to begin the first daie twelve months after my death, and so for ever once a year, provided it be all given in the parish where my body shall lye, which I desire may be in the Church where my son, the Lord Gray, and my daughter Gray, intend to be buried in, and to that Church I would have a guilte cupp with a cover given for a Communion cupp, and the daie of my buriall to be given amongst the poore fifteen pounds and ffive pounds to the minister.' This cup has her coat of arms and the following inscription :—

' Sanctae Ecclesiae Parochiali de Epping,  
Nobilissima Domina Katharina Wentworth,  
in sacros eius Heroina Usus donavit 1639.'

\*Lady Katherine Wentworth was daughter of Sir Moyle Finch, Bart., by his wife Elizabeth, daughter and heir of Sir Thomas Heneage, of Copt Hall, who, after his death, was created (1628) Countess of Winchilsea. Lady Katherine married Sir John Wentworth, of Gosfield Hall, one of the earliest baronets created by James I., June 29, 1611 (it will be remembered that 19 baronets of the first batch were created five weeks before, May 22). He died without male issue in October 1631, when the baronetcy became extinct. His widow went to live apparently at Copt Hall with her eldest daughter Cicely, married 1627 to William Lord Grey of Werke, who was chosen by the Parliament Speaker of the House of Lords and Commissioner of the Great Seal. Lady Wentworth was buried at Epping 25th, and her will proved 29th, Sept., 1639, 'her son and daughter Grey' having elected to be there buried: Lady Grey on Feb. 1, 1668; Lord Grey on August 7, 1674.

Underneath the foot the weight of the cup is given as '29 ounces— $\frac{1}{8}$ — $\frac{0}{8}$ .' I conclude that this is the Communion cup



*Photo by Mr. E. J. Challenor Courtney.*

CHURCH PLATE OF EPPING.

*The Wentworth cup, 1639, and Conyers' salver and paten, 1768, which was re-gilt by an order of the vestry in 1770, as hereafter mentioned.*

Mr. Dyke was succeeded by Mr. Edward Rochester, A.M., who as he had already signed the register in 1634, may have been a curate under Dyke.

In 1641 Dr. Thomas Holbeck, S.T.B., was instituted '*per resign. ult. vic.*' The living was sequestrated about 1643, and then comes the following entry in the register :

Mr. Wilkerson	} 'Both in Oliver Cromwell's time.'
Mr. John Harper	

The report of the Committee of Plundered Ministers says of the latter: 'An able Godly-preaching minister.'

Dr. Holbeck was restored in 1666. At his death in 1681, Mr. James Lomax was appointed. It was during his vicariate that four new bells, dated 1707, were hung, at the cost of the trustees of John Baker's Charity. (See my previous note in the *Essex Review*, vol. xiv., p. 40, January 1905.)

Mr. John Lloyd was vicar in 1710 on the presentation of Lord North and Gray, of Winchilsea House. This house was afterwards converted into a posting inn, called Epping Place.

Mr. Stephen Waller, LL.B., M.A., succeeded on the presentation of Edmund Waller, in 1754, and it was during his incumbency that the services at St. John the Baptist Free Chapel in the town, two miles distant from the parish church of All Saints, were discontinued by the vicars of Epping. The Rev. S. Waller was bumped at the beating of the bounds of the parish in 1762. 'The Vicar, according to ancient custom, gave a breakfast at the Cock and Pye.' This house was formerly called the Peacock Pye, but is now the Cock and Magpie. It is situated on the old road from Waltham Abbey to Latton Priory, thence into the Eastern Counties.

Mr. William Lockwood, M.A., succeeded in 1768, and a silver gilt flagon, with the Conyers coat of arms and the following inscription, was presented to the Parish Church, 'Copt Hall Chappel, Essex. The gift of Lady Henrietta, the wife of John Conyers, Esqre., to the Church of Epping in Essex, May 1st, 1768.' A silver paten with the same arms on the foot, also a salver with the same inscription, stamped FS in a shield, which is the date-mark of 1740; the second shield has the initials of the maker. These came from a private chapel at Copped Hall when it was mainly pulled down, though a part remains in the present garden at Copped Hall. In a minute of a vestry held

in 1768 it is stated, 'Lady Henrietta Conyers gave a flagon, patin and salver of gilt plate, together with the books and furniture for the communion table and pulpit.' At the vestry, Oct. 17th, 1770, 'it is ordered that the old communion cup be disposed of and the moneys arising by the sale thereof be applied in regilding the communion cup now in use.'

The Rev. Edward Conyers, A.M., was presented in 1780 by Mr. John Conyers. Edward was vicar of Walthamstow, from whence the Conyers family came to Epping, having purchased the Copped Hall estate, about 1734, of Lord North.

The Rev. Henry L. Neave, A.M., was presented by Mr. Henry John Conyers or Mrs. Ashley in 1822.

The Rev. Forbes E. Winslow, A.M., by Mr. George Wythes in 1873, he being succeeded by the Rev. Edward Buckmaster in 1878, during whose incumbency and by whose unselfish liberality the two churches were again united, and the church of St. John the Baptist, in the town, was by Act of Parliament in 1888 made the parish church. A new church, on the site of the old chapel of St. John the Baptist, was then commenced to build, and is at the present time being completed.

The church in the Uplands is now a chapel of ease, and here the old wooden alms box still does duty, as it has done during the incumbency of fifteen vicars and ministers of Epping.

---

## AN OLD ESSEX MANOR HOUSE.

A REMINISCENCE BY MRS. HUBERT BOURKE.

**I**N the article which appeared in the *Essex Review* of last April on the Althams of Mark Hall in the 17th Century, mention is made of a very old and interesting house long since disappeared, Otes Manor House, High Laver.\*

At this day it is difficult to trace the foundations of a building fraught with so much historical interest. The old moat, the well, part of the orchard wall, and even a few very old apple trees remain to tell their tale of utter ruin and desolation; but above all these still stand, with magnificent and pathetic interest, the two splendid beech trees under which John Locke, the

\*See an illustrated article on John Locke, by Stewart Gow, in *E.R.* xiv. p. 21.—EDS



eminent philosopher, writer, politician, and conversationalist, penned in his latter days many of those famous essays which were devoured by Voltaire, and appear to have had a far-reaching influence on his writings.

After a life of strenuous work and exile, John Locke had come to live his last days, and die, under the roof of his old friend, Sir Francis Masham. Persecuted and hunted from England, owing to his sympathy with the cause of Monmouth, which had embittered him with James, he had to remain concealed for a long time in Amsterdam, until the Revolution of 1688, when he was brought back in the fleet which conveyed over the Princess of Orange.

When the hospitable doors of the old home were opened to him he fell into kind and sympathetic hands, for the good Damaris Lady Masham was a daughter of an old friend and fellow writer, Dr. Cudworth. The tablet setting forth her simple virtues can still be read on the walls of the church at High Laver. It must have been a typical gabled Essex manor house, probably built of wood, lath, and plaster, after the fashion of the houses of that date which still exist in the neighbourhood. It had low latticed windows and a projecting gabled porch, but the great feature was the tall square upstanding block of red brick, which dated unmistakably from Queen Anne, and which can be distinctly recognised in the prints of the house. The gardens must have been extensive, and ran down to a lake, which is still beautiful. An avenue of trees, long since disappeared, was on either side of the road, now a mere muddy cart track, and in some places almost impassable; but the splendid beech trees still remain, and we should be thankful, for under their leafy shade were penned Locke's published *Letters to his Friends*, *The Essay on the Human Understanding*, his work on *Education*, and his *Reasonableness of Christianity*. Here, tended by the gentle Damaris to the end, he faded away in 1704. His square brick tomb, enclosed with iron railings, stands on the south side of the Church wall, with a Latin inscription, and coat of arms above. His faithful friends lie near him.

Three years after his death the old place must have been turned inside out, for Samuel Masham, the son of the house, brought home a merry bride, Abigail Hill, the favourite of Queen

Anne, and cousin of the celebrated Sarah Jennings, the future Duchess of Marlborough.

The peaceful country life of the old house must indeed have undergone considerable change when these brilliant and witty ladies fluttered down in their state coaches along the muddy, marshy Essex lanes, with their train of attendant Harleys, to discuss the burning state questions of the day, and also to whisper treasonable secrets in favour of the exiled House of Stuart. The square block addition to the house probably dated from this period. These intrigues came to an end when Queen Anne died, and after her death—the deluge. The fickle Harley, become Lord Oxford, was thrown into the Tower. Let us hope that the now forlorn Lady Masham came to rest and spend the last years of her turbulent life under Locke's beeches. She lived until 1734, and history draws a veil over the last years of that old house. After the death of her grandson Samuel, the second Baron Masham, in 1776 without heirs, the house passed through various vicissitudes, until in 1822 some miscreant owner razed it to the ground, and the only vestiges remaining are a few curiously carved beams which still support the roof of an adjacent barn.

---

## PURVEYANCE IN ESSEX.

BY REV. ANDREW CLARK, LL.D.

**P**URVEYANCE and cart-taking (*E.R.* xvii., 166) meant archaic rights of the Crown to impound provisions, fodder, fuel, etc., and to impress workmen, horses, carts, and utensils, for the service of the royal household, at rates far below those of the ordinary markets. The attitude of the counties towards these imposts passed through three stages: first, no action was taken, and individuals had to suffer by the purveyors seizing on their cattle and goods; second, the counties levied a rate, out of which contractors (then called 'undertakers') were paid to deliver, in manner and time required, the provisions claimed; and third, out of the county rate, direct money payment was made to the Crown officials. Our constitutional historians, Hallam, Stubbs, and the others, have many notices of this oppressive system, of popular outcries against it,

and of Statutes and Orders in Council which sought to remove particular abuses of it. So far as I know, however, exact figures as to these charges are nowhere given, and, consequently, the following returns for the county of Essex are not only of local interest, but contribute something towards the practical explanation of what was for some centuries a particularly burning question in national politics. The returns are condensed from Professor Firth's MS. (*E.R.* xvii., 157), pp. 543, 580; and are purposely confined to a statement of the actual charges legally imposed on the county. A future paper may perhaps exhibit the odious ways in which the officials misused their powers in order to rob the county and its inhabitants.

On March 26, 1593, the County Commissioners (Sir Thomas Mildmay and Sir John Petre, knights) came to terms with the Queen's Commissioners as to a partial revision of the old agreement as to purveyance.

Essex was to continue providing 500 quarters of wheat yearly. The wheat was to be sweet, dry, and free from smut. The price paid by the Crown was to be only 6s. 8d. a quarter, and, even at that rate, the Crown purveyor of wheat was, by old custom, to be allowed to defer payment for a year. It follows that, in June 1595, when wheat was 42s. 8d. a quarter, the county had to face a heavy charge in making good the difference between 'the queen's price' and the market price.

'At the Court gate,' *i.e.*, wherever the queen was resident at the given date, the county had to deliver as follows:—10 oxen on Good Friday and 10 on the Friday before Whitsunday; 150 muttons (*i.e.*, sheep) on May 1, and 150 on Oct. 31; 50 porks (*i.e.*, pigs) on Nov. 1, and 50 on Nov. 15; 6 boars on Dec. 6 (in readiness to be boiled down for Christmas brawn); and 30 fitches of bacon (with the hind gammon) on the Tuesday before Easter.

In weekly droves, according to notice to be given, Essex was to deliver at Grays, between Dec. 10 and May 10, 1,200 lambs; and at Romford, between Oct. 12 and May 1, 300 veals (*i.e.*, calves).

It is specified that the boars shall be good and large, and of two years old; and that the other beasts shall be good and fat. Each ox is to weigh at least 6 cwt.; and each sheep at least 46lb.; and each calf is to be 6 weeks old or over.

At the queen's poultry-store in London, Essex is to deliver yearly, in batches as required, 5 dozen geese, 10 dozen capons, 12 dozen hens, 40 dozen pullets, 150 dozen chickens. Also, at the same place, 400lb. of good and sweet butter every Monday, and 400lb. every Friday, throughout the year.

For these supplies the Crown officers were enjoined to pay ready money, at the following rates:—An ox, £4; a boar, 13s. 4d.; a sheep, calf, or pig, 6s. 8d.; a flitch of bacon, 2s.; a lamb, 1s.; a dozen geese or capons, 4s.; a dozen hens or chickens, 2s.; a dozen pullets, 1s. 6d. Butter was to be paid for at 3½d. a lb., between Apr. and Sept., and at 4d. a lb. between October and March.

The cattle and poultry were to be delivered alive, and their keep, after one day's grace from the day appointed for delivery, was to be charged to the Crown. But the Crown officials might reject cattle or fowls, on the ground of unfitness for the use of the royal household. In all such cases, the contractor was to pay, in ready money, for each beast rejected, £7 for an ox; £2 for a boar; 15s. for a sheep, calf, or pig; 7s. for a flitch of bacon; and 5s. for a lamb; and for poultry rejected, at the London market rate. A wide door for speculation was thus opened. The board of arbiters, which was to judge between contractor and official, was never appointed. Honest contractors found sound beasts rejected, unless accompanied by a bribe; dishonest contractors, remitting a bribe, passed in inferior animals.

Taking these forfeit-prices as representing the market price of 1593, it follows that, *on cattle alone*, the county had to add £607 3s. 4d. to the queen's price to meet the purveyance-charge.

Further, special provision was made for any 'progress' (*i.e.*, journey) taken by the Queen through any part of Essex. In this case, in addition to the provisions specified in the above agreement, the purveyors were empowered 'to provide all manner of provisions and victualls.' It is true that these were directed to be paid for in ready money, and 'according to the prices then in the market.' But these prices were fixed by a Crown official, the Clerk of the Market, presiding over a jury afraid to contradict any word of his. 'Howsoever hee doe yt by a jury, yet by choosing weake and insufficient jurors, and by his directions, and some tynes threates to them, he procureth all

sorts of provisions to bee much underprezed to the greate prejudice of the countie' (Essex Petition, April 1631).

In 1622 Crown Commissioners went on circuit throughout England endeavouring to get the counties to buy off the purveyance-services by fixed money-payments. Negotiations with Essex were opened at Chelmsford, 17 Sept. 1622, but speedily fell through, partly because the Crown Commissioners would not assent to the County demand for full publicity of the proceedings, partly because the Crown terms were judged excessive.

The Crown for each ox asked £3, the county offered £3. Similarly, the other demands and offers were:—Boar, £2 6s. 8d. (£2); sheep or pig, 13s. 4d. (8s. 4d.); calf, 13s. 4d. (10s.); lamb, 6s. (5s.); dozen geese or capons, 16s. (12s.); dozen hens, 12s. (10s.); dozen chickens, 4s. (2s.); lb. of butter 2d. (1d.). The only items in which demand and offer coincided were, bacon-flich 5s., and dozen of pullets 8s. 6d. These sums, it is to be understood, are in each case additional to 'the King's price.'

To commute the wheat-levy the Crown asked 30s. a quarter, the county offered 20s., to be added to 6s. 8d., a quarter, the King's price. Here the County offer appears really inadequate. In Oxford market the quarter of wheat sold at, in May 1619, 32s.; Nov. 1619, 29s. 6d.; March 1621, 22s. 6d.; in Aug. 1623, 36s. 6d.; in July 1625, 52s.

We now learn the extent, and the cost, of the other purveyance charges. Essex was required to furnish yearly 132½ loads of hay, 1,425 quarters of oats, 70 loads of straw for stable-litter, 760 loads of firewood, and 200 loads of charcoal (the favourite fuel for kitchen use). The King's prices were:—Load of hay, 8s.; quarter of oats, 4s.; load straw, 4s.; load wood, 3s.; load charcoal, 13s. 9d. The Commissioners demanded, and the county offered, load hay, 16s. (8s.); quarter oats, 6s. 8d. (4s.); load straw, 6s. (2s.); load wood, 4s. (2s.); load charcoal, 20s. (6s. 7d.) *i.e.* in addition to 'the King's price.'

For cart-taking for his Majesty's removes, and for his Majesty's household and stable, the Commissioners demanded £500 a year; the county offered only £400.

Taking both purveyance and cart-taking together, the Crown Commissioners asked a yearly composition of £3,566; the county offered only £2,303.

The county, therefore, continued to discharge its purveyance-service by means of contractors. We are able, in certain items, to compare the amounts of composition asked by the Crown Commissioners, and offered by the county, in 1622, with the amounts actually paid by the county in 1625—a startling increase, by which it would appear that the county lost by not commuting in 1622.

Amount asked in 1622.				County offer in 1622.			Payments in 1625.		
	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.	£	s.	d.
Cattle, pigs, and bacon ..	948	3	4	696	3	4	1,080	13	4
Poultry .. .. .	66	4	0	47	0	0	115	0	0
Butter .. .. .	346	13	4	173	6	8	300	0	0
	£1,361 0 8			£916 10 0			£1495 13 4		

In 1625 the prices of cattle seem to have been:—Ox, £10 10s. ; boar, £2 13s. 4d. ; pig, 23s. ; calf, 22s. ; sheep, 19s. 8d. ; lamb, 8s. The bacon-flitch stood at 10s.

## NOTES OF THE QUARTER.

### Church Restorations.

MALDON.—A new window in All Saints' Church was dedicated on June 29. It has been contributed to by the children of All Saints' and St. Peter's parishes, and is placed near the font at the west end of the church. The subject is Christ as the Good Shepherd.

GREAT YELDHAM.—The peal of six bells in the parish church, which have been repaired and restored, were dedicated at a special service on August 25, when the Rev. A. F. Evans, rural dean, of Great Maplestead, preached an appropriate sermon. Four of the six bells have been re-cast. The belfry floor has been renewed, and the bells re-hung upon an iron frame. A chiming apparatus has been added. Ringers from the neighbouring parishes assisted at the bell-ringing which took place during the afternoon and evening.

### Stebbing.

A CARVED oak font cover and a brass ewer on oak pedestal have been presented by Mrs. Bingham Wright to the church, in memory of the late vicar. On the cover of the font is a brass plate bearing the following inscription:—

To the Glory of God, and in memory of the Rev. A. R. Bingham Wright, 34 years vicar of this parish, died June 12th, 1903, and Mary Sophia Cecily Bingham, his daughter, who died November 26th, 1905.

A dedication service was held on 15th September.

**Obituaries.** Sir MATTHEW WOOD, fourth baronet, son of Sir Francis Wood, of Hatherley House, Gloucester, and grandson of Sir John Page Wood, of Rivenhall Place, died on July 12, in London, aged 50. He was buried at Cressing Church on the 16th. He succeeded to the title when nine years old, and his heir and the present baronet is his brother, Lieut. Colonel Sir John Page Wood, commanding the 2nd Battalion Border Regiment.

Mr. ROBERT COOK, known throughout the County for his close connection with its sports, died very suddenly at his residence, White House Farm, Baddow, on 7th August, at the age of 50. Mr. Cook had long contributed to our pages, and his annual survey of the season's cricket was regularly looked for. The zeal which he threw into every sport was the same which enabled him, as Secretary for 23 years, to render the Essex Football Association one of the best organised County Associations in the kingdom. He founded the Annual County Sports Meeting in 1885, and only in July last described its progress in the *Review*. In many other counties he will be missed in sport, for he was very widely known. He had acted as starter of the National Cyclists' Union championships for twenty years. Mr. Cook brought a high and healthy ideal into all games, his coolness, his judgment, and his inexhaustible energy and humour were truly invaluable. He was a man of leisure, unmarried, and possessed of a moderate competence, which he has devised largely to County athletics. His popularity was shown by his election to the Chelmsford Town Council in 1906 by a huge majority. The demonstration of interest at his funeral on August 11th was a remarkable one.

Colonel Sir FREDERICK BRIDGES MAJOR HENNIKER, son of Sir Bridges Powell Henniker, late of Newton Hall, Dunmow, died at sea on August 19, on his way home from India. He was born in 1862, and succeeded his father in 1906.

Doctor JOHN TAYLOR, of Earls Colne, died on September 4th in his ninetieth year. He qualified as a member of the Royal College of Surgeons in 1842, and settled soon after to help his father, Dr. John Polley Taylor, of Earls Colne. For fifty years he had been medical officer of a district of Halstead Union, and

connected with Halstead Rural Council. He was a strong supporter of many medical benevolent societies, a Governor of Earls Colne Grammar School, a thorough all-round sportsman, and one of the most popular inhabitants of the district where he had so long lived, He was unmarried.

---

## NOTES AND QUERIES.

**Small Holdings.\***—Let me at once disarm criticism by saying that I am not going to discuss the subject as a modern measure. I am no politician—as we use the word—and I have nothing to say here on its present aspect. I only want to throw a little antiquarian light upon it; for it is no invention of modern politicians. In getting up my little Church Society Lectures, I have come across some interesting details of small holdings in Norman times. In the Domesday record, made in the year 1086, a good many instances in this neighbourhood are noted. (I take as a small holding anything of 60 acres and under.) On our High Easter Manor there were no small freeholders. There were 54 villeins and 46 bordars (cottage tenants), but they were not free, as will be seen. The villeins held, as a rule, 30 acres, or less, and the bordars about half as much, but they held their land on conditions which we should not put up with now. They had to do burdensome service for the lord of the manor. Each villein had to plough in spring four acres; to supply two oxen for the lord's teams; to work for him three days a week, and to pay him yearly 2s. 1½d. (which represents about £2 10s. of our money) and a hen and fifteen eggs. Neither might he have his land as and where he pleased, or grow what he pleased. He had it in separate strips at the lord's will, and was bound to crop it according to rule. And of course he had to turn out and fight, if the lord wanted soldiers. The bordars, a lower class, had also to do service, but they had not to provide oxen. In some neighbouring parishes there were a good number of small freeholders. For instance, in the Chignals there were seven holdings ranging from ten to forty-five acres. One holder had three bordars to help him; the rest apparently had no help except from their families. Two had a

\*The following was written for the Parish Magazine. Mr. Gepp kindly allows us to reprint it.—Ed.



plough each (a plough implies eight oxen), and I suppose their neighbours who had none borrowed these. Each had a bit of meadow, two to seven acres; and that is all; no woodland for swine, and no animals, except perhaps poultry. Their rent was remarkably low, the highest 10s. for forty-five acres, the lowest 3s. for thirty acres, but it must be remembered that money was worth then about twenty-four times as much as it is now; and no doubt the tenants had to do service to some lord, though less than the villeins and bordars. In Mashbury, Abess and White Rodings, Shellow, and Willingale Doe, were similar holdings, three of which had a bit of woodland. Otherwise they were as poorly furnished as the Chignal holdings. How these small holders made a living it is hard to see. They must have been content with little, and a rough hard life. There were no markets about here then. Chelmsford and Dunmow were not yet towns. Chelmsford had no market till the end of the twelfth century, and Dunmow none till the beginning of the thirteenth. It is said that Chelmsford was then less important than Writtle, where the London to Colchester road then crossed the river. Apparently Chelmsford had no bridge till 1100, and certainly the manor of Writtle was far more important than the Chelmsford manors. In contrast to these poor small holdings there were in Dunmow parish three thriving ones, one remarkably so. It was of thirty-seven acres only, but the holder had three bordars, a serf (slave), a plough (eight oxen) woodland for thirty-seven swine, five acres of meadow, five cows, eight swine, thirteen sheep, seven goats, and a mill. His rent was £1.

Such are examples of small holdings over 800 years ago; and the system was an old one then, having long existed, and under better administration, in English villages before the coming of the Normans. Now the cry is 'back to the land,' back to small holdings, only in happier circumstances, free from such burdensome service to the landlord. Whether it will succeed here and now we shall soon see. But I am not going to discuss it in the Magazine.—EDWARD GEPP, High Easter.

**Croppenbergh Family.**—I should be much obliged for any information as to the marriage of George Sherard and Ann Croppenbergh, which took place prior to 1652. Mary

Croppenbergh (mother of Ann) in her Will (proved 1652) describes herself as a widow. The family tradition is that the father of Ann Croppenbergh was a London merchant, and was one of those who carried out the drainage of the Fens.

PIERCE G. MAHONY, *Cork Herald of Arms, Office of Arms, Dublin Castle.*

[Sir Henry Appleton and other owners of Canvey lands agreed by deed, dated 9th April 1622, to give one third of the lands in fee simple to Joas Croppenbergh, in consideration of his sufficiently 'inning' and recovering the islands. In this he was successful, and is referred to p. 148 ante. South Benfleet marriage register runs from 1583 (*cf. E.R.*, vii., 181), Leigh from 1691 (*cf. E.R.*, viii., 210), Canvey only from June, 1861 (*cf. E.R.*, viii., 13). The former looks hopeful.—EDS.]

It has been ascertained that George Sherard was married to Ann Croppenbergh on the 31st of July, 1651, at St. James'. Mary Croppenbergh mentions in her will her son-in-law, Joseph Alston, husband of her daughter Mary, and her brother John Vermuden, as well as her son-in-law George Sherard and his son William Sherard.

**Beacons in Essex.**—Beacons, at fixed points on the coast and on conspicuous heights inland, were long maintained as part of the defences of the country. \* Dr. C. H. Firth's *Essex Lieutenancy Book* (MS.) gives us some precise information about beacons in Essex. In April 1619 it was certified that there were no beacons in Donmowe, Freshwell, Claveringe, Vttleford, and Harlow hundreds; but that Rochford hundred had 5 beacons (Foulnes, Canuden, Shoberry, Milton, Rayley); Waltham half-hundred, 1 (Eppinge); Lexden hundred, 1 (Stanway); Barstable hundred, 2 (places not stated); Ongar hundred, 1 (Navestocke); Tenderinge hundred, 3 (St. Osith, Walton, Harwich-and-Dover-Cort); and Chelmsford hundred, 1 (Danbury). A return in 1625 adds Thurstable hundred, 1 (Totham); and Dengie hundred, 3 (Norton, Sudmister, St. Lawrance). The same MS. shows how the beacons were kept up. Feb. 11, 1618-9, the Privy Council ordered the Lord Lieutenant of Essex to have the trained bands in readiness to march on 10 days' notice, and to cause the beacons 'to be amended, and furnished with materials for fyinge, and duly watched.' The Lord Lieutenant (Robert Ratcliffe, 5th Earl of Sussex), then

lying ill at his house in Bracknell, Berkshire, transmitted the orders to the Deputy Lieutenants, and they, by letters sent out 25 February, directed 'the Justices of Peace in everie division to cause all the beacons to be speedily repaired, furnished with materials for fyreinge, and speedilie watched.' On 28 April 1619 the Privy Council told the Lord Lieutenant that the cost of special watch at the beacons need no longer be incurred. Accordingly, on 30 April 1619 the Deputy Lieutenants instructed the Justices of Peace to discontinue any special watch at the beacons, and continue only such watches 'as were formerly found requisite to be held'; also, to levy 'within such severall partes of the division as in tymes past have beene accustomedly charged with this service' a sufficient rate to repay the persons who had laid out the money necessary for repairs, fuel, and watching. I have found no indication of what districts were subjected to this special tax.—ANDREW CLARK.

---

## REVIEWS OF BOOKS.

*Lincoln College, Oxford*, by Stephen A. Warner, B.A. London : Arnold Fairbairns and Co., Ltd. ; with 37 pen-and-ink drawings, 37 collotype plates, etc. ; 120 pp., 6s. ; edition de luxe, 100 copies only, 15s.

MR. WARNER is already known to Essex readers as joint author, with Miss Cunnington, of a delightful monograph on *Braintree and Bocking* (*E.R.* xvi., 51-5). In the present volume he has applied his talents as historian and artist to celebrate the College of his education and his affection. No more delightful volume could be conceived. The illustrations are charming, and include delineations of buildings, portraits of Lincoln men, figures of College plate, College seals, the scourge formerly used for College discipline, chests of three kings, and other quaint antiquities. The letterpress is equally delightful. In an introduction of 21 pp. the foundation and fortunes of the College are described in the deftest and daintiest manner. Other chapters give, with no less incisiveness and wit, accounts of College estates, buildings, customs. Lincoln College is rapidly approaching its 500th centenary. It has therefore waited long for its artist-historian, but has at last found him. Essex readers

will note with interest that three of the finest pieces of silver plate are gifts by Essex men, former members of the College : (a) a lovely filigree cake-basket, given about 1763 by Nicholas Corsellis, of Wivenhoe (p. 72); a tankard, 40 oz. 8 dwt., of date 1702, given by said Nicholas' father (p. 74); and a porringer, of date 1679, given by Sir Henry Wright, of Dagenham.

*A Book of Simples.* Demy 8vo., pp. viii., 226. London : Sampson Low, Marston and Co. Price 14s.

THE collector's passion for old china, chairs, prints, snuff-boxes, and all the trifles used by our great grandmothers has spread of late to such an extent that there is nothing decently old that does not now command respect and a price. To be old-fashioned, a score of years ago or more, was to be condemned and thrust into the lumber room or kitchen; nowadays, on the contrary, age is universally recognised to impart a nameless charm to everything except a woman or a glove. With the taste for old furniture has come also a love and admiration for old-time customs, for herbals, manuals of housewifery, books of recipes, nostrums and cures. In what exactly this charm resides it is difficult to say. The value is not a practical one, for the last thing that the admirer would dream of undertaking would be to carry out literally any one of the recipes so elaborately compiled years ago. The purely sentimental admiration that one feels comes, like a waft of spices and perfumes, a flavour of richness and extravagance and of taking pains, down the centuries and makes us sigh for the lavender-scented store rooms and old walled herb gardens that seem so far away from the hurtle of modern times.

The book of simples before us differs little from any of the many other recipe books that have passed through many editions, and set the busy hands of five or six centuries of Englishwomen to work. But it comes straight from the hand of some neat and skilful copyist, and had lain hidden for many years in some careful press or cupboard. Mr. H. W. Lewer did well to give us a chance to peruse these fragrant and epicurean delights, and both he and the publishers deserve the hearty thanks of everyone for preserving and issuing them in such tasteful guise. The manuscript volume, which was found among the treasures of Mr. Chalkley Gould's library, has

been closely adhered to in the printed copy. The rich green morocco cover, tooled in gold, has been copied as nearly as possible in a stiff binding, and type and paper are eminently creditable to the Chiswick Press. The retention of the long 's' is quite appropriate. In the Introduction Mr. Lewer brings us at once into relation with the conditions of life when such books were the adjunct of every household. 'The isolation of the country in those days is almost inconceivable; the difficulties of travel were immense and a survival of feudal legislation tied the labourer to the soil. Thus, we may look upon the manor or farmhouse with its retainers as a detached social unit and in a sparsely populated country almost a state in itself.' It was well to include a bibliography of herbals and cookery books prior to 1800, but the very popular works of Mrs. Hannah Woolley (b. 1620), the schoolmaster's wife, of Newport, Essex, are omitted.\* The glossary is a welcome addition, but it should have included Mumme, Ebulum, Organy, Gennaye, which are all 'hard words' in the Index. As for the contents, we have already had a summary of them in the *Review* (vol. xvii., p. 66). One of the most remarkable recipes is that 'To Boyle Sugar to a Manus Christi:—Boyle it till it be almost sugar again and the last drop of your spoon there will a hair drop from it as fine as the hair of your head.' One would be glad to know the connection with its title. Quite the most useful would be the ointment and the powder which are to cure defective memories by anointing the 'hinder part of the head, your poule and temple especially.' Perhaps the least appetising is the short cure for wind: 'Take 9 bees pound them and put them to a quarter of a pint of ale stir well together and strain it sweeten it with honey give it the afflicted persons to drink they must till it has work'd.'

In *The Romance of George Villiers First Duke of Buckingham*, by Philip Gibbs (Methuen, 1908), there are one or two additional facts to add to the story of New Hall recently told in our pages. It was Buckingham, it seems, who laid out the grounds of New Hall, where he sought at times retirement from the glare of Court life and favouritism. His wife, the beautiful and devoted Kate, spent much time there, and his mother was also a frequent visitor. In February 1623, the old King's two 'sweete

\*See *E.R.*, ix., p. 142.

